



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 09

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 801 - Void Triangular Domain

“Congratulations Father, for advancing to Sixth Grade Minor Saint.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at his father-in-law. Dan King had become much stronger after advancing to sixth grade.

“It’s thanks to your Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. If it wasn’t for that pill, my bottleneck would not be broken through so quickly.”

Dan King said with a grateful tone.

“Father, did you come here for something?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile. Although his current strength had already surpassed Dan King’s, he still had a lot of respect for him. He knew that his father-in-law was a trustworthy man. Dan King had provided plenty of help to Wu Ningzhu. Aside from that, he also allowed Jiang Chen to extract the wood essence from the Mulberry Divine Tree and helped out in the war against Nan Bei Chao. Jiang Chen also felt grateful for what his father-in-law had done.

“Chen Er, now that the matters in Mysterious Domain have been resolved. Fundamentally, the four large domains are in Nebula Sect’s control. I assumed that your next destination would be the Pure Land?”

Dan King said. Although he had not talked with Jiang Chen for a while, he understood a rare genius like Jiang Chen. He knew that this young man wouldn't be satisfied by the dull and boring routines of the daily life. He must be searching for a greater environment like the Pure Land. Besides, Wu Ningzhu was also there, so it made sense that he wanted to go there.

“That's right. I plan to head there tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Chen Er, your foundation is very strong. You will need a vast amount of energy every time you advance. With your current advancement, I believed that Heaven Rank Restoration pills would not be effective to you anymore. At that time, you would certainly need Saint Rank Restoration pills. However, you should also know that this pill is very precious and rare. It is not easy to get an adequate amount of this pill. I assume that you don't want to waste too much of your time in concocting pills. Have you thought about this problem before?”

Dan King said.

Jiang Chen frowned. The thing Dan King was worried about was similar to Jiang Chen's concern. The technique that he cultivated was the dragon transformation art. It was a technique that combined the elements of nature. It was a matchless technique but there was also a major drawback for this technique, the energy required for every advancement was just too great. There were

four ranks of pills across Divine Continent, they were Human Rank Restoration pill, Earth Rank Restoration pill, Heaven Rank Restoration pill and the Saint Rank Restoration pill.

Human Rank and Earth Rank Restoration pills were already useless to Jiang Chen a long time ago. When he reached the higher level of the Minor Saint realm, he might get rid of the Heaven Rank Restoration pills. The only pill left would be Saint Rank Restoration pill. The requirement would only get higher as his cultivation increases. After the Minor Saint realm, there are still nine more grades to go in the Great Saint realm. The consumption of energy would be unimaginable even to Jiang Chen himself.

It was somehow terrifying just thinking about it. Then, Jiang Chen shifted his eyes to Dan King. Dan King wouldn't come here just to tell Jiang Chen about this problem, there had to be something more than this.

“Father, you are right. This is also one of the things which has been bothering me. Saint Rank Restoration pill is too valuable. We might not be able to come across it in such a short amount of time, but this problem would certainly haunt me when I step into the Great Saint realm. Could it be that Father has a solution to this problem?”

Jiang Chen asked. He didn't want to be stuck in the Great Saint realm just because he had insufficient Saint Rank Restoration pills. He knew that he had left a treasure in Pure Land in his previous life. There was a vast amount of Saint Rank Restoration pills in it but it was separated by a layer of heavenly shield when he tried to get it last time. So it would be impossible to retrieve them in such a

short period of time. And, even if the treasure was obtained, the amount of Saint Rank Restoration pills in it might not be enough to support his consumption.

Although Jiang Chen was the Greatest Saint before, the difference between the consumption of energy of the Xuan Yuan skill and the dragon transformation art was incomparable.

“Chen Er, have you heard of the Void Triangular Domain before?”

Dan King asked.

“Void Triangular Domain?”

Jiang Chen was stunned and then started to recall it from his memory but found no information related to it.

“Father, I don’t think there is a place called Void Triangular Domain in the Divine Continent.”

Jiang Chen had dominated the entire Divine Continent in his past life. If a popular place like this really existed, he would’ve heard of it even if he hadn’t been there before.

“It is normal that you have never heard or come across about this domain before. It isn’t situated in the Divine Continent. It is a special domain located in the void, in an independent space.”

Dan King said.

“Not situated in the Divine Continent?”

Jiang Chen was shocked but was also interested in this domain. Dan King wouldn't just come here to tell him about the existence of this domain.

“That's right. If you thoroughly dig its background, you would need to go back a hundred years ago. Back then, the Saint Origin World was a locked world. All the void and space were sealed. The Great Saint realm was the final destination of the cultivation path. These Great Saints who were at their pinnacle would have to face the fact of being turned into a yellow soil, flushed away by the yellow river. There was a rare genius a hundred years ago, he was at the peak of the world but wasn't satisfied. So he stood above the Saint Cliff, using his sword to slash open the gates of Immortal World, creating a new path for Great Saints of the Divine Continent. He was the world's Greatest Saint. If I am not mistaken, his name was also Jiang Chen. Unfortunately, he was taken down after opening the gates of the Immortal World.”

Dan King said, describing some history of the Greatest Saint.

Jiang Chen was smiling bitterly in his heart, while listening to the other person describing his heroic act in the past. It was a feeling which no one else could feel aside from himself. After hearing this, he understood that the existence of the Void Triangular Domain was related to his actions of slashing open the

gates of the Immortal World.

“The achievement of the world’s Greatest Saint wasn’t a secret. Naturally, I am informed about this, but I still don’t see the link between the two.”

Jiang Chen asked.

“That year, when the Greatest Saint opened the gates of the Immortal World, the entire Saint Origin World underwent a tremendous change. A lot of small voids started to appear like mushrooms, causing some foreign races to appear in our land, the same thing happened to the Void Triangular Domain. When the gates of the Immortal World opened, it shove off the layer of the barrier of Saint Origin World, creating a link to the Void Triangular Domain. Besides the Saint Origin World, two more links were created. One was linked to Boundless World and the other was linked to Black Yellow World.”

Dan King said.

After hearing Dan King’s introduction, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but feel shocked even if he is a very composed person. As a matter of fact, he already knew that there were a lot of other unforeseen or unknown places in Saint Origin World. Due to the barrier and the boundary of the world, it was hard to connect one plane to another plane. As such, it was incredibly hard for one to move from one world to another.

As for this Void Triangular Domain, it was without a doubt a

central point that connected three worlds together. However, Jiang Chen thought why were there no other cultivators from Boundless and Black Yellow World that had set foot on Saint Origin World for the past hundred years?

“You must be thinking why the situation hasn’t changed in Saint Origin World after the emergence of the Void Triangular Domain. The reason lies mainly on this virtual domain. For example, when a cultivator wants to travel from Boundless World to Saint Origin World, he must go to the Void Triangular Domain first and use the portal to reach Saint Origin World. Although this virtual domain is an independent world, its barrier is thin and weak. It couldn’t stand the Qi of the Great Saints in our world. Furthermore, once a Great Saint went to the Void Triangular Domain, the Great Saint will be attacked by the Source of World Energy. So, no Great Saint have ever entered the virtual domain and no one has also ever thought of going to the other worlds through there.”

Dan King explained.

“So that is it.”

Jiang Chen felt enlightened. When a Great Saint couldn’t even enter this Triangular Domain, no other cultivators below Great Saint could or would be willing to unless the person was an idiot. It had very strict conditions. For instance, if a Minor Saint wanted to pay a visit to Saint Origin World from Boundless World, the Minor Saint would be viewed as an outsider and if his existence annoyed the major power there, he would simply be crushed to death. That would certainly be tragic.

“What is the relation and meaning of this virtual domain? How is this related to the consumption of my energy in advancement?”

Jiang Chen asked. If the Void Triangular Domain was merely an independent world, he was surely uninterested in it.

“The relation is huge. The existence of the Triangular Domain also acts as a trade center for all three worlds. One has to know that the different worlds have different treasures and items, which would make the trade very valuable. More importantly, there is a type of ore produced in the domain. Its name is True Meta Stone. This stone contains pure and luminous power. It can be absorbed and converted into energy. The energy of a True Meta Stone of the highest quality is even greater than a Saint Rank Restoration pill.”

Dan King smiled mildly. Sure enough when he looked at Jiang Chen, he saw that Jiang Chen’s eyes shone with interest after hearing about the True Meta Stone.

“How do we enter the Void Triangular Domain?”

Jiang Chen went straight to the point. This True Meta Stone was too important for him. It would certainly become one of the necessary items for his advancement in the future when he step into Great Saint realm.

...

Chapter 802 - Dark Generation

“Chen Er, don’t be hasty. I know the importance of the True Meta Stone to you, otherwise I won’t come down here in person. Let me brief you about the situation of the Void Triangular Domain.”

Dan King said. One should know the situation of the place first before entering it so that one would know what one was dealing with.

“The Void Triangular Domain is an independent world, which means it is only a small world. It is no bigger than any domain in the Divine Continent. It is supported by its own source. It is a world formed by two special elements, the dark and light element. In this world, there are men who can absorb the dark element for their cultivation and enhance their physique. They are called the Dark Generation.”

After a moment of pause, he continued. “In the Void Triangular Domain, the dark energy provides support to the Dark Generation in their cultivation. As for the True Meta Stone, it is derived from the light energy. Fundamentally, it is useless in Dark cultivation. So, they are using the massive amount of True Meta Stones to trade with the other cultivators of different worlds. Furthermore due to the restriction of conditions and physique, there is no alchemist, blacksmith and beasts in the Dark Generation.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. “So, the Dark Generation is the ruler of the Void Triangular Domain. They have been using those useless True Meta Stones to exchange for pills, combat weapons and even

the demon and devil souls with the people of the other worlds to strengthen themselves.”

“That’s right. This domain has become a unique trading centre and it is the largest, and because it is the linking point of the other worlds, it allowed cultivators to come and trade. In this domain, not only can you trade for a vast amount of True Meta Stones, you can also trade with the cultivators of the Boundless World and Black Yellow World for their treasures.”

Dan King said.

“Such large a trading centre sure is astonishing.”

Jiang Chen let out a sigh. All of these happened because of his slash in his previous life.

“The Void Triangular Domain would be opened once every three years. This will act as a defensive measure of Dark Generation against the cultivators from the other three worlds. The things that they would get from the trade would be sufficient enough for them to use in the next three years. Half a month later this virtual world will open again.”

Dan King said.

“How do we enter the passageway to the Void Triangular Domain?”

Jiang Chen asked quickly. This was the thing that he was most concerned about. His interest in this virtual domain has just increased after Dan King's explanation.

“In Divine Continent, there are eight spatial passageway that are linked to the Void Triangular Domain. They are located where the eight largest families of Pure Land resides. In addition, the Dark Generation has given plenty of spatial talisman to the visitors. Most of the receivers were alchemists. This showed how much they value us. Coincidentally, Father has one of those spatial talismans. It will allow you to enter the passageway, will also act as your passport there. Of course, you can also bring along people with you using this passport.”

Dan King said. He took out a talisman that released a dark energy. It looked divine and contained an intense spatial force.

“This talisman isn't the same as an ordinary messenger talisman. It can help us locate the precise location of the entrance to the Void Triangular Domain. As to how we are going to enter, we need to create our own spatial passageway. So, this talisman isn't a one-time-use item, you can use it whenever you want but of course, only when the virtual world is open.”

Dan King said.

Jiang Chen nodded. It would be a piece of cake for a Great Saint to create a spatial passageway. The only thing that concerned them was getting the right coordinates.

“Once every three years. This is a grand occasion and I believe that plenty of people would certainly take part in it.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Of course, the True Meta Stone has always been useless to the Dark Generation but it is very useful to the cultivators of Saint Origin World. Comparing it to a Saint Rank Restoration pill, it is way purer and more concentrated. More importantly, it is a natural ore unlike any restoration pill, it does not require any effort to refine or concoct it. This was also why the Saint Rank Restoration pills are rare. There would certainly be people from the eight large families heading to the Void Triangular Domain. I have been there once, this time will be the second.”

Dan King said.

“The eight families of Pure Land? It would be a good chance to meet them in the virtual world.”

Jiang Chen smirked when he knew that he was going to get in touch with the eight families. He turned to Dan King. “When do we leave?”

“We will leave tomorrow. All the preparations should be done by tomorrow. Although there is still half a month left from the actual opening of the domain, it is a very long journey when we are in the passageway. I’m afraid that we will need at least half a month to reach our destination. After reaching there, the trading event would only begin half a month later and will be held by the

imperial kinsmen of the Dark Generation. The remaining time before the trading event is for the cultivators of the different worlds to visit the cities in the domain freely.”

Dan King said.

“In that case, we will begin our journey tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen nodded. This was a matter that he couldn't afford to miss as staying in the Nebula Sect would only be a waste of time. Besides, his priority was to go to Pure Land. Dan King's arrival only added another priority to him. He should go to the Void Triangular Domain. He would absolutely gain some benefits there. After his strength was improved, he would be more confident to go to the Pure Land. Anyway, he was going to meet with the people from the Pure Land and even some cultivators outside of his world.

The next day, early in the morning, Jiang Chen, Dan King, Yan Chenyu and Tyrant, the four of them left Nebula Sect. Nangong Wentian and Han Yan had gone into seclusion to break through to the Minor Saint realm. As such, they were not called to tag along.

Not to mention, most of the cultivators in the Void Triangular Domain were powerful experts, any one below Minor Saint realm was not recommended to go there.

When they arrived above a stretch of desolate mountains, Dan King took out the spatial talisman. He instilled his divine sense into it. After a while, it exploded, turning into a black light spot that vibrated continuously. It could easily enter the void and was a

navigator to their destination.

Any ordinary person would never notice this black light spot if the sun was not up. As Jiang Chen and the rest weren't ordinary people, they had no problem seeing a fly thousands of miles away, let alone a tiny spot.

Jiang Chen lunged his palm and clawed at the void, tearing it. An opening was created with a 'Chi La' sound. Four people quickly entered into the void and travelled from there.

Inside the void. The four of them were extremely focused on the black light spot that was moving forward. None of them dared to slow down.

“Senior Dan King, you mentioned that the Void Triangular Domain couldn't bear the aura of a Great Saint? I assumed that there isn't a single Great Saint in the Dark Generation?”

Tyrant asked curiously.

“That's right. In the entire Void Triangular Domain, the highest grade of cultivation that they have is peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint. The source of this world doesn't permit the existence of a Great Saint.”

Dan King said.

“Does the Ninth Grade Minor Saints of the Dark Generation want

to get to Great Saint realm? In my opinion, once a cultivator of the Dark Generation reaches the peak of the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, he would probably get an agreement with any of the three worlds to enter any of them. In that way, he can pursue the higher realm. I think that they are not willing to be stuck in that bottleneck until they die, are they?”

Tyrant asked.

“As a matter of fact, these people’s cultivation would become extremely difficult to increase once they get out of their domain. Take our world for example. Our world consists Yin and Yang, and many other elements, however it only contained a miniscule amount of dark energy. Hence, there are only two options for the people of the Dark Generation. One, to stay in the domain until they reached the peak of the Ninth Grade Minor Saint and die. Second, is to venture out into the turbulent space in search for worlds that have thicker dark elements and energy, but the probability of finding such world is miniscule.”

Dan King explained.

“These aren’t our concern. Our main priority here is to get the True Meta Stone, a vast amount of them. As for the life and death of the Dark Generation, it is unrelated to me.”

Jiang Chen said. He was only interested in the True Meta Stone. The Dark Generation was a group of ‘aliens’ to him. They depended on the dark energy to cultivate, basically they weren’t any different from monsters. When a person absorbed the dark energy for a long time, his behaviour and actions would become

more and more similar to the people of the devil religion. As such, Jiang Chen wouldn't be interested in them.

“Chen Er is right. We do not need to take these into consideration. The journey to the Void Triangular Domain is still a long way and we can't waste anytime talking about other people's matters. We should use this time to concoct as much pills as possible for the trading event later.”

Dan King reminded.

“Dark Generation wants pills. Pills like the Human Rank Restoration pills?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“You can say that. We usually use numerous amounts of herbs in concocting these pills. What they need isn't only one type of pill but a variety of pills from us.”

Dan King explained.

...

Chapter 803 - Taunting to See Who is Stronger

Presently, Jiang Chen had gained the fundamental understanding about this Void Triangular Domain and the Dark Generation. This was also what Jiang Chen was trying to find out, he needed to understand the place where he was heading to, especially if he was going to a mysterious place like this domain; taking part in the trading center with different kinds of people from different kinds of worlds would certainly create some confusion.

It would certainly be the largest trading event that Jiang Chen had ever been to. Experts from three different worlds, namely experts from the Pure Land of Saint Origin World, the Boundless World and the Black Yellow World would also attend this trading activity, and also the aborigines – Dark Generation. With so many different people getting together, it would be virtually impossible that no conflicts would arise.

Of course, that wasn't Jiang Chen's concern. He would prefer a rowdy than a peaceful environment because this would stir up his emotions. He was a person who wouldn't do something dull. Furthermore, his current cultivation grade was enough for him to gain a foothold in that place.

After he transformed into a dragon, killing a Seventh Grade was just as easy as killing a chicken. He would have enough strength to fight an Eighth Grade Minor Saint as well. In this trip, he might be able to meet some good luck that could advance his grade. At that time, he wouldn't need to worry about any cultivators below the

Great Saint realm.

In the remaining half a month's time, Yan Chenyu and Tyrant took the task of following the direction of the navigator – the black light spot. Jiang Chen and Dan King were concocting different kinds of pills. Dan King had brought many herbs with him from Dan King County. The herbs were enough for a year of concoction of pills. This time, he was considered well-prepared before reaching the virtual domain.

Jiang Chen also had plenty of resources. They were all seized from his enemies after the series of battles. The amount of herbs he had wasn't any lesser than Dan King.

Hu Hu...

In the silent void, a gale was howling. Jiang Chen and Dan King had casted their flames while concocting the pills. Anyone could clearly see the skills of Dan King and Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was better in either speed of concoction or the technique of production. For instance Dan King took thirty minutes to finish concocting ten pills while Jiang Chen only needed five minutes to finish concocting twenty pills. It wasn't just a small gap but a significant one.

While Yan Chenyu and Tyrant watched their activities, they couldn't help but sigh. The both of them were totally incomparable with this freak. Dan King called himself the king of pills because of his profound knowledge and skill in alchemy. However, the dignified Dan King was surpassed by Jiang Chen. It was without a doubt a heavy blow to him.

“Ai!”

Dan King sighed with a bitter smile. This was the first time that he felt that he was totally defeated, but when he imagined how great Jiang Chen would be, it calmed his emotions down.

‘Chen Er is really a rare genius. Not only is his combat strength terrifying, but also his concoction skills. I’m afraid that his concoction technique is ranked number one or two amongst the Dan Family, which is one of the eight families of the Pure Land. The flames that he is using is the combination of the legendary True Thunderfire and the True Dragon Fire. It is very rare for these two fire to be combined together. I’m afraid only Chen Er has such ‘abnormal’ flames. I don’t think that these fires exist in the Flames Family of the Pure Land. Furthermore, his Soul Power is also terrifyingly powerful. It has to be at least ten times above mine. There is no way that I could compare mine with him.’

Dan King couldn’t help but praise Jiang Chen. In fact, it was hard to praise such a talent when you met one.

Half a month’s time passed by unknowingly while these four people had been flying in the void. The lead of the spatial talisman had already brought them to the linking point of the Void Triangular Domain, which was very far away from the Divine Continent.

Jiang Chen and Dan King had already kept their flames. They must have prepared sufficiently in this half a month’s time. Given

Jiang Chen's ability, he could simply seize what he wanted if he couldn't get it using words.

Upon arrival, they could clearly see a spatial linking point up ahead. It was like a huge gateway that was roughly 300 meters in area. It was still closed for the time being.

Presently, a lot of people had already stood outside in different positions. Most of them had high cultivation and possibly had high statuses in the Divine Continent. Judging from their Qi, they weren't from the eight families of the Pure Land.

“These are the people who obtained the spatial talisman from the Dark Generation. Most of them have the same profession as me – alchemist. They are here to shop around in the Void Triangular Domain.”

Dan King said.

There were at least 200 of them in total. As the Saint Origin World was big, besides the eight large domains, there were some other strange place that has strange beings, like Dan Yuan City which was an independent city.

“These are the only people? It seems like the people from the eight families aren't here yet.”

Tyrant looked at the crowd. As a genius, he needed to witness the demeanour of the geniuses of the eight families.

“The people of the eight families have honourable identity. They won’t arrive this early because the gateway isn’t opened yet. Besides, they have a special spatial passageway that could directly lead them here way faster than us. As for these people here, they were the famous alchemists that brought their own people – trusted followers or allies. None of them are from the Pure Land.”

Dan King explained. There were eight families guarding the Pure Land. Due to the vast expanse of area of Pure Land, there were quite a number of other powers outside the eight families. However, these external powers were required to follow the commands of the eight families.

“Brother Dan King, you are real jacked-up for coming here when the gateway is still closed.”

At this time, a voice was heard somewhere from the left side. Jiang Chen looked over to that side and saw seven to eight men standing in a group. The first man looked around 50 plus years old and brilliant. He was wearing a dan robe. One could clearly see that he wasn’t an ordinary alchemist with just a single look. His cultivation wasn’t ordinary either. He was already a Sixth Grade Minor Saint, same as Dan King who was a newly-advanced Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

“Isn’t brother Stephen a step earlier than us? I heard that your son has joined the Dan Family? You are to be congratulated.”

Dan King looked at that man and said in a flat tone. Judging from

his tone, he didn't seem to like this fellow alchemist very much.

“Haha! Nothing much in his talent, except the skills and knowledge that he learnt from me. I am very elated when he became a disciple of Dan Family. By the way, I heard that the daughter that Dan King adopted is actually a member of Gu Family. She was forcefully taken back to the family, causing a mess to the day of your son-in-law's marriage. Also, I heard that your son-in-law is a great genius as well.”

That alchemist's face was full of pride. He purposely brought up the matter of the selection of Dan King's son-in-law to sneer at it in front of Dan King. First he bragged about his son becoming a disciple of the Dan Family and second he mocked Dan King for having no kids after her adopted daughter was taken away. The underlying meaning was that Dan King was finding himself trouble for adopting a member of the Gu Family.

“This is detestable.”

Tyrant said.

“His name is Stephen Zhong. An alchemist. We don't quite get along. Now that his son, Stephen Hao, has been acknowledged as a disciple of Dan Family, he became more boastful than ever. Naturally, he won't miss this chance to insult me.”

Dan King said coldly.

“Brother Dan King, why is your son-in-law not coming with you? I would like to meet such a genius. Also, if I am not mistaken, I think your son-in-law is only a Combat Emperor, right? I understand your reason of not bringing him now. It would only be a disgrace to bring a Combat Emperor around in the virtual domain.”

Stephen Zhong continued to send a rhythmic sneer to Dan King.

Dan King wanted to say something but was stopped by Jiang Chen. He stepped forth and said, “I am the son-in-law of Dan King. Unfortunately, I am also an alchemist. Presumably, your son isn’t a master yet in alchemy. I knew that he is already a Second Grade Minor Saint but the foundation of his cultivation is weak for he has been advancing using pills. I wonder when did Dan Family’s eyesight became so poor, how could they accept a dog as their disciple?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes fell upon the young man who was full of proud aura beside Stephen Zhong. It was really rare for someone as young as him to reach the Second Grade Minor Saint. It’s a pity that his cultivation was pushed by the effects of pills. His cultivation lacked a strong foundation. A cultivator like him wouldn’t go very far in their journey.

“What did you say? You dare to call me a dog and insulted Dan Family? You are just a trash that came from nowhere. Your insulting remark would only bring you to the road of hell.”

Stephen Hao was infuriated. A young alchemist like him clearly had the right to be arrogant given that he had a strong backer like

Dan Family. The people from the external powers of Pure Land would also need pay their respects to him whenever they saw him. He was frustrated that a brat that came from nowhere insulted him on their first meeting. This was truly unacceptable.

“Dan King, I never imagine that your son-in-law has poor manners.”

Stephen Zhong’s face turned cold. His gaze became murderous. This wasn’t only because of Jiang Chen’s rudeness but because Jiang Chen had also uncovered the truth of his son’s cultivation. An advancement by merely using pills wasn’t something to be proud of.

...

Chapter 804 - One Punch to Explode

“Brother Stephen, my son-in-law doesn’t have a good temper. I think that you should use a politer tone to speak with him. I am just giving you a friendly reminder.”

Dan King said with a smile. Stephen Hao was indeed a one in a thousand genius in alchemy, but compared to Jiang Chen, the difference was just too big. To put it bluntly, it didn’t matter if it was in the aspect of alchemy or cultivation, if Stephen Hao tried to act superior in front of Jiang Chen, his pride would only be trampled.

Dong

Before Stephen Zhong could finish his words, Stephen Hao made the first move. He took a step forward, making a stamp on the void, producing a crackling sound and causing lines of cracks to appear. The Qi of a Second Grade Minor Saint was fully unleashed. He acted arrogantly, as if Jiang Chen was just a puny living thing.

Of course, this was because he couldn’t see Jiang Chen’s cultivation properly.

“Kid, you dare to scold me and insult the Dan Family? A simple move is enough to let you die without a burial. I, Stephen Hao would kill you today. Tell me, what’s your name. I won’t kill a person without knowing his name first.”

Stephen Hao’s murderous intent soared to the sky. He was

determined to kill Jiang Chen.

“Stephen Hao is indeed scary. He’s already a Second Grade Minor Saint at this young age. His father, Stephen Zhong is a renowned alchemist in the Pure Land. Now that Stephen Hao has already become a disciple of the Dan Family, it is only natural that he would act arrogantly, but I don’t understand why Dan King who came out of nowhere offended both father and son? Isn’t this called courting death?”

“That’s right. Stephen Zhong wasn’t like this before. Not only has his cultivation grade reached the Sixth Grade Minor Saint, he had also established a good connection with the Dan Family as well. He has already become a person that no ordinary person could offend. That son-in-law of Dan King really doesn’t know what death is.”

“He is a hot-blooded young man, but the problem started from his tongue. He dared to call Stephen Hao a cat or a dog. Naturally, he won’t be happy about it. I think the show started just at the right time as the gateway isn’t opened yet. It’s good to have a show to watch.”

The people around were commenting on the incident. Most of them were famous people in the alchemy society. Although they were from different domains, they knew how popular Stephen Zhong was, in the alchemy society.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen blurted out his name in a flat tone, as if it was a waste of effort to pay attention to someone like Stephen Hao. If his adversary didn't take the initiative to offend him, he would've simply ignored him, but the current scenario showed otherwise. Since Stephen Zhong didn't get along with Dan King as well, Jiang Chen would show no quarter. When Stephen Zhong wanted to act superior in front of Dan King by mocking him, Jiang Chen would use his fist to crush his sense of superiority, and recover Dan King's face.

“Jiang Chen? This name is rather familiar.”

“I remember it! He is the heaven defying monster that overthrew the overlords of the four large domains. Is he really that Jiang Chen?”

“How could it be so coincidental? What's the relation between Jiang Chen and Dan King by the way? If that is true, I'm afraid that this Stephen Hao isn't going to be his opponent.”

A lot of people let out a sigh. The event in the four large domains was too chaotic. Even people who were very far away from the four large domains had heard of Jiang Chen's name. They started to connect this heaven defying Jiang Chen to the Jiang Chen in front of them to see whether it matched.

Of course, there were some people who didn't know about it. These father and son duo were amongst them. Hence, Stephen Hao didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes, even if he had already said his name.

“Brat, if you kneel down and kowtow before me, admitting your faults, maybe you will have a chance to live, otherwise, you would have to die today. Your father-in-law won’t be able to save you.”

Stephen Zhong pointed at Jiang Chen and said in a very proud tone.

Tyrant and Dan King exchanged a glance. They couldn’t help but sigh, looking at their adversary pitifully. It wasn’t for Jiang Chen but for the father and son duo.

“You two should take this chance while I am still in a good mood and kowtow before me. Maybe I would consider letting the two of you live.”

Jiang Chen said it in an equally arrogant tone. He had decided that if these two really had the intention to kill him, he wouldn’t hesitate to kill them.

“Courting death.”

Stephen Hao was infuriated. He had an honourable status and had never been insulted by anyone. He was the one who insulted other people. This brat in white really wanted to die. In that case, he should just fulfil his death wish.

Stephen Hao attacked. His hand clawed at Jiang Chen. The air around the hand was condensed and turned into a brilliant palm,

slapping towards Jiang Chen.

One should know how horrifying the attack of a Second Grade Minor Saint was, but it wasn't a threat to Jiang Chen at all. He acted like he didn't see the palm coming and simply stretched out a finger that crushed the palm attack instantly.

“What?”

Stephen Hao was in shock. He had never thought that his opponent would be so powerful, but it was already too late when Jiang Chen's Qi was released.

The thing that flew back to Stephen Hao, was Jiang Chen's attack. Jiang Chen didn't even move from his initial position, as he sent a punch to Stephen Hao through the air. The palm travelled like a wind and hit Stephen Hao's body with such speed, it didn't even give him the chance to dodge.

“Argh...”

Stephen Hao let out a bloodcurdling wail. He exploded after receiving the hit and turned into a mist of blood that dissipated in the air.

“Hao Er!”

Stephen Zhong's eyes instantly turned red when he saw that his son exploded and died on the spot after receiving the strike. He let

out a violent bellow. That was his own son. He had spent a large amount of fortune and effort, nurturing his own son. His son was his biggest pride. His son's future would've been unimaginable, after joining the Dan Family. Now, every hope that he had on his son suddenly evaporated. His precious son was killed by a brat that came out of nowhere. He was a Sixth Grade Minor Saint, but he could only watch his son die in front of him, not even having the chance to save his son.

This was an extremely tragic and distressed incident. His hatred towards the brat skyrocketed.

Stephen Zhong was as furious as a lion. His eyes were like the eyes of a poisonous snake. With a swoosh, he locked Jiang Chen's position.

"This is amazing. That Stephen Hao may be just a Second Grade Minor Saint, but he was killed by a single simple punch. Does anyone know how powerful that young man in white is?"

"That's right, he must be that Jiang Chen who caused a chaotic event in the four large domains. That is the only logical explanation for his extraordinary strength. Have you all noticed his Qi? He is a Third Grade Minor Saint. That Stephen Hao is only a Second Grade Minor Saint, he was seeking his own death when he provoked Jiang Chen."

"But this Jiang Chen is too ferocious. He had already killed someone the moment he arrived. He did not even put Stephen Zhong in his eyes. That was his most precious son. He was supposed to have a bright future after joining the Dan Family, but

it was all gone now.”

“Jiang Chen is overly audacious. He may not be scared of Stephen Zhong, but is he not scared of the Dan Family? Stephen Hao is a disciple of the Dan Family after all. I have no idea how tough his nerves is that decided to kill a disciple of the Dan Family.”

.....

Everyone was startled and casual discussions arose from the crowd. They couldn't believe what they saw. Stephen Hao had a special identity. Besides being an alchemist, he was a member of the Dan Family. Although he was only an ordinary outer disciple of the family, his name was already in the disciple list of the Dan Family. In other words, he was recognized as a very talented person. Killing the people of the Dan Family was no different than challenging them directly. Who else would have such an audacity to offend Dan Family across the Divine Continent?

“Brat! You will die! No, I won't let you die so easily. I want you to experience one hundred types of horrendous sufferings before I kill you to avenge my son.”

Stephen Zhong bellowed at Jiang Chen. The Qi of the Sixth Grade Minor Saint was fully unleashed. That Qi was boosted by his fury as it circled above the sky. The furious Stephen Zhong swore that he would certainly avenge his son.

“Stephen Zhong, I have already reminded you earlier. My son-in-

law isn't a person that you would want as an enemy but you still refused to listen. It was your own stubbornness that caused your son's death. Anyway, I would like to suggest you to calm down, unless you want to be reunited with your son. I believe that this isn't an impossible wish."

Dan King crossed his arms. He seemed to be in a defensive mode. The current Dan King had become more disdainful than before. 'You wanted to show off your son in front of me? Now that your son is killed, what else can you show off?'

Dan King had regained his face. He suddenly felt that bringing Jiang Chen along was a very good decision. It was too satisfying to crush Stephen Zhong's pride on the spot. If Jiang Chen wasn't here, he would probably be nursing this grudge the entire trip.

Ao (A loud clamour)

How could Stephen Zhong listen to Dan King's words? Not only could he not remain his calmness, he had gone berserk instead. He struck out a large brilliant light that looked like a sea of Yuan Force, covering the sky and pressing down against Jiang Chen.

"You would die as well."

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. His True Dragon Palm struck out. A scary blood-red dragon claw that carried an intense murderous intent collided with Stephen King's magical attack. That big piece of sea of energy was as fragile as a paper, it was pulverized completely.

He was a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. Jiang Chen only needed to exert a tiny bit of effort to get rid of him even without using dragon transformation.

Dong

Jiang Chen was interested in Stephen Zhong's startled expression. He made a step forth. It was the Azure Dragon's Five Steps. A large pit was created by the first step. Afterward, Jiang Chen made the second and the third step. The moment he made the third step, he was already above Stephen Zhong's head.

...

Chapter 805 - The Gateway is Open

Stephen Zhong's face changed instantly. No one would ever know how scary Jiang Chen was if one haven't fought with him personally. The same thing happened at this current moment, when Jiang Chen crushed Stephen Zhong's magical attack with a single strike. It hit Stephen Zhong's head so hard that he regained consciousness. He felt that the strength that Jiang Chen carried was like the strength of an ancient beast. His strength could even send shivers to a Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

Before he could get out of his shock, another attack was sent. It was like a violent storm. The pressure of every step that landed on Stephen Zhong was as heavy as a mountain. If that pressure was a sea, Stephen Zhong would be a tiny drifting small boat that would be destroyed at any time.

Bang

When the third step landed, he used all his effort to defend himself but still couldn't withstand this terrifying true dragon combat skill. The weight was as heavy as a mountain, it felt like the entire sky had fallen along with it. Stephen Zhong could feel his body being ripped apart slowly.

“Argh...”

Finally, Stephen Zhong let out a wail of pain. Half of his body was already crushed by the third step. If he wasn't quick enough, his entire body would've exploded just like his son, resulting in him

dying on the spot.

Stephen Zhong retreated to a distance and supported himself using the strength of the uninjured half of his body. He was full of blood. Presently, how could he still act as arrogantly as before? He was currently enduring an intense amount of pain, he stared at the young man in white with widened eyes, as if he had seen a ghost.

“Not possible. This is impossible. Who are you? How could a Third Grade Minor Saint have such a powerful combat strength? Not even those outstanding geniuses of the eight families could do it.”

Stephen Zhong couldn't help himself from shaking his head. He was a Sixth Grade Minor Saint, this injury that he had wasn't a major problem.

“Chen Er is growing too quickly. He had reached the point where he could kill a Sixth Grade Minor Saint with ease. If he transforms into the dragon form, killing a Seventh Grade Minor Saint would be as easy as killing a Sixth. Today, Stephen Zhong could only blame himself for hitting a steel wall.”

Dan King couldn't help but sighed. If he knew that Jiang Chen had gone to the Western Domain to annihilate the Heavenly Sect and killed two of their Seventh Grade Minor Saints, he would even be more astounded than today's incident.

The reason that the father and son duo ended like this was because they had made a huge mistake. They thought that Dan

King was the leader of the group and neglected Jiang Chen's existence. Even though Dan King was the one leading the team, Jiang Chen was the true backbone of the team, the true leader. He had the most authority amongst the four of them.

Moreover, Dan King had a great understanding of Jiang Chen. He was a lawless and rare genius. There were very few people who dared to provoke him. It was useless to use the Dan Family to threaten him because he wouldn't hesitate once he decided to kill his target.

The likelihood of Jiang Chen not putting these two people in his eyes were high, but when Stephen Hao claimed that he would kill Jiang Chen, it had ignited Jiang Chen's killing intent. As such, no one could deny that this was really a tragedy.

Nevertheless, different types of tragedy were happening every day. Today, this tragedy had befallen on the father and son duo. After they died, they would disappear from this world and be forgotten.

“My god! What kind of monster is this Jiang Chen? A Third Grade Minor Saint could easily kill a Sixth Grade Minor Saint? Isn't this overly absurd?”

“That's right. Not even the top ten geniuses of the Sky Ranking in the Pure Land have the ability to do this. Only by seeing it in person can you believe this fact.”

“This father and son duo suffered such tragic event. The son is

killed and now the father is beaten up so badly. I have no idea if Jiang Chen would really kill him now. If he really does kill him, he would surely offend the Dan Family. Given the temper of the eight families, they would certainly seek Jiang Chen for revenge.”

.....

Everyone around was startled. They initially thought that they were here to watch a show, but who would have thought that the show had turned into a real time slaughter? A young man who appeared all of a sudden had killed and attacked the father and son duo using the most cruel method.

Several people who came along with Stephen Zhong were First Grade and Second Grade Minor Saints. Most of them were over fifty. Of the entire group, there were only two young men who were Ninth Grade Combat Emperors. Even if they were from the Pure Land, they weren't much of a threat to Jiang Chen.

At this moment, panic was evident on all of their faces. Their initial thoughts were the same as Stephen Hao, they didn't put this white-clothed young man in their eyes, but now, it seemed like that was a terrible mistake.

Jiang Chen's Qi didn't drop. He walked towards Stephen Zhong one step at a time. His domineering and imposing manner was enough to scare Stephen Zhong off. He regretted his act of folly. He should have waited there quietly instead of provoking this disastrous being.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to kill me?”

Stephen Zhong shouted in a weakened tone. He was considered half a member of the Dan Family. As such, he didn't believe that the name of Dan Family couldn't stop a young man.

Jiang Chen only replied with action. He sent him a slap that carried a horrifying energy wave. If the slap was condensed into a palm, Stephen Zhong would die instantly.

Stephen Zhong was already very much frightened, he immediately took out his Combat Weapon. It was a shining sword. It stabbed forward at Jiang Chen's palm but his current strength could never deflect Jiang Chen's attack even if he was at his top form.

Jiang Chen's palm changed. It slipped through the sword and turned into cold light that severed Stephen Zhong's palm with a 'Chi La' sound. The sword dropped from his detached hand. This wasn't a Minor Saint weapon of inferior quality. It was considered a rare treasure. It could probably be traded with quite a lot of True Meta Stones.

“Argh...”

Stephen Zhong let out another wail of pain. He retreated again and shouted. “Jiang Chen, you wretch! My son is a disciple of the Dan Family and I am also considered half a member of the family. They would surely haunt you until you are dead.”

Unfortunately, the threat didn't affect Jiang Chen at all. Jiang Chen held his long sword and cut off Stephen Zhong's head in a flash. It must be the most ironic thing to happen, to die under one's own Combat Weapon.

“Humph!”

It was as smooth as writing. Jiang Chen made a cold humph before keeping the sword and slowly returned to Dan King's side. From the beginning of the battle until now, he was very relaxed, as if he was a cloud drifting across the sky. The event that happened was no different than killing chickens. It made it very hard for other people to believe that these things were committed by this good-looking young man.

Those people who were with the father and son duo were petrified. They have just witnessed the father and son duo being killed in front of them, but they couldn't do a thing.

“Jiang Chen, you have offended the Dan Family. You would surely suffer the consequences.”

A Second Grade Minor Saint shouted boldly.

Jiang Chen darted a glare at the old man. It was merely a glance but it shivered the old man so much, it stupefied him completely. He could also feel that if Jiang Chen really wanted to kill a person, that glance was enough to do that. He had never seen such a scary and ruthless person before.

Jiang Chen was contemptuous of the Dan Family. In his previous life, the people of the Dan Family would always start to shake whenever they heard his name.

The eight families on the Pure Land were the Desolate Family, Fire Family, Dan Family, Bin Family, Gu Family, Demon Race, Stone Family and Narang Family. Every family had their own strength and bloodline. Ranking the overall combat strength of the eight families, Dan Family could only be ranked last.

Although alchemists were valued by many people, most of the alchemists only focused their efforts on alchemy, neglecting their combat strength. Of course, there were some elites who were powerful in both alchemy and combat strength. Jiang Chen was one of them and he was the elite of the elites.

The name of the eight families would induce fear to anyone but not Jiang Chen. In his previous life, he was able to move across the Pure Land unhindered. He would do the same in this life.

In fact, he had already sentenced Stephen Zhong to death after killing his son, Stephen Hao. In his opinion, the threat would only disappear once the enemy was killed.

The atmosphere was lingered with a mild bloody stench which made everyone nervous. Everyone was silently waiting for the gateway to open. None of them dared to start a commotion. Groups of people were keeping their distance from Jiang Chen's group. Firstly, they didn't want to stay together with a disastrous being as it may cause their lives to be in jeopardy. Secondly, Jiang Chen and his friends had offended the Dan Family. None of them

dared to go near them, fearing that the Dan Family would attack them as well. None of them wanted to joke around with their lives.

“Chen Er, isn’t this crossing the line? Stephen Hao is a disciple of the Dan Family after all.”

Dan King said in low tone.

“Father, you should know that some people are like dogs. If you don’t get rid of them, they would not let go of their mouth and would keep on biting you. It is obvious from the incident just now. They were the ones who wanted me to kill them in the first place. If they weren’t gotten rid of, they would continuously create troubles for you. As for the Dan Family, I have a piece of advice for them, ‘it’s better if they don’t offend me’.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. Tyrant nodded in agreement after listening. He didn’t feel that Jiang Chen was joking. He had already witnessed Jiang Chen’s strength back in Liang Province. At that time, Jiang Chen’s opponents were overpowering, but they all ended up in Jiang Chen’s hands miserably.

Ka Ka

At this time, the gateway was letting out a ‘Ka Ka’ sound. Two doors were pulled to one side. The line in between gradually became bigger. Countless of brilliant light shot out from the opening. Those light carried the Qi of the other world.

“Quickly, look. The time is up. The gateway to the Void Triangular Domain is opening.”

Someone exclaimed. The virtual domain would only open once every three years and it had finally opened.

...

Chapter 806 - Dark Mulberry City

Ka Ka

The illusory gate was pulled open by a shapeless spatial force. The light behind the door poured out like silk and landed on everyone. Jiang Chen could feel a strong Qi from it.

“This is a very pure Qi. The element of light is very useful to me. This Qi belongs to the Void Triangular Domain. This trip will definitely be worthwhile this time. I can strengthen myself any time if I cultivate here. I can already imagine how much benefits the True Meta Stone will give me.”

Tyrant was in full surprise. The aura of the light was purer than what he had expected. It aligned naturally with the cultivation law of Buddha Sect. In other words, as long as he cultivated here, he would certainly improve much faster, given his innate talent.

“The sky of Void Triangular Domain is controlled by two types of energy. What you are feeling now is the Qi of the light energy. It indicates that the domain is in day time. If it is night time, the dark energy will be prevalent and all the light energy will be blanketed.”

Dan King explained. He had been here before, so his understanding about this domain was better than any of them.

It took only a while for the three hundred meters large virtual door to fully open. All the people entered the gateway in a single file towards the Void Triangular Domain.

Jiang Chen and Dan King didn't delay in their response. When they went through the gateway, it wasn't just a domain that they saw but numerous passageways that led them to different cities.

Void Fragmentation Domain was an independent world populated by Dark Generation. They were akin to humans in the Saint Origin World. Naturally, their numbers were plenty and different territories had been created due to different forces.

Dan King was leading them. They went into one of the passageways. As for the others, they all chose a different passageway, as if they were trying to avoid Jiang Chen and his friends. Jiang Chen didn't mind this at all. He could save his time and effort if no one was trying to provoke him

With a flash, Jiang Chen and the others came out of the passageway and entered a bright world. Below them were mountains, but they couldn't see a single plant on it at all. All they could see were mountains with tall summits.

“This is just the same as our world. There is day and night but it is all controlled by the dark and light element. There is neither sun nor moon, nor stars. So the environment isn't suitable for any plants to survive, even lesser chance to plant an herb. This is the reason that there isn't a single alchemist in the Dark Generation. Even if they hired an alchemist from the other worlds, the alchemist can't do a thing here. Of course, Dark Generation has stored the necessary amount of different kinds of herbs and treasures during their interaction with the three worlds. True Meta Stone has been used to trade for these things. Besides that,

the major cities of the Dark Generation would be able to earn a large sum during the trade. They would charge a hefty sum for the trade to happen amongst the cultivators of the three different worlds.”

Dan King explained.

“This is capitalism.”

Tyrant smiled. He had to admit that the Dark Generation was good at doing business and using the fortune that they earned to expand their influences.

“That is for sure. Void Triangular Domain is ruled by Dark Generation. Even the people of the eight families would have to obey the rules while trading here.”

Dan King said. Jiang Chen too agreed with this point. This is an independent world controlled by a single race, the Dark Generation. The limit for the cultivation grade is peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint, no Great Saint is allowed to enter here. Despite the exceptional influence that the eight families had in the Saint Origin World, once they reached this domain, their influences were deemed useless. They would only suffer a one-sided loss if they go against the Dark Generation,

“Father, you have come to this place before?”

Jiang Chen swept across the mountains below. The sky was clear

and bright but there were no clouds.

“I haven’t been here before but since the passageway has brought us here, that means there is a city nearby. Let’s go over there and find out.”

Dan King said. The four of them flew towards the same direction.

“Father, you said that there will be a major trading event here. I wonder where the venue will be.”

Jiang Chen asked. Usually there would be an auction during a major trading event. At that time, different kinds of treasure would appear, but Jiang Chen’s interest was only in the major trading event.

“The major trading event would be held in the King City of the Void Triangular Domain. That is the place where the imperial kinsmen of the Dark Generation resided. It isn’t like any ordinary city. Dark Generation is divided into two groups, the rich and the poor. The imperial kinsmen are the highest ruler. During normal times, an ordinary person of Dark Generation could never enter the King City. However during the major trading event, it would be open to all, including us. I was fortunate enough to join the event but I was just a spectator last time. There will be a major auction on that day as well. The treasures of three different worlds will be auctioned. Any priceless or rare treasure that we have not seen or known before would appear. The value of the treasure will induce temporary blindness on you. The people who will attend are the major powers of Boundless World, Black Yellow World, Saint Origin World and the imperial kinsmen of Dark Generation.

It is hard to imagine how grand it would be with so many high grade experts around. Putting aside the fact that we will be treated as privileged guests, someone as ordinary as us will already be grateful if we can find a place to sit.”

Dan King recalled the scene of the major auction that he had attended last time. His eyes couldn't help but glow.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant exchanged a glance. They saw excitement from each other's eyes. They couldn't wait to see such a grand scene and those priceless items. This time, they must ensure that they can acquire everything that they needed. They absolutely couldn't return empty handed.

Very quickly, a city became visible in front of them, but it didn't look large. Its size was only a hundred miles wide. In the aspect of its scale, it was way smaller than the super large cities that were thousands of miles large back in Saint Origin World.

The entire city was built by a rare rock. A radiance reflected from it as the light shone from the sky, making the city look dignified and honourable.

“We will go forth and take a look at the city. There is an expert guarding in every city of the domain. There are numerous trading spots in one city. We could now go and trade for some True Meta Stones. If we see any cultivators from the Boundless World and Black Yellow World, we could also trade for their treasures and weapons.”

Dan King said.

Dark Mulberry City.

This was the name of the city—Dark Mulberry City. Every city that was located in this virtual domain would have its name begin with the word ‘dark’. It represented the Dark Generation and there was no exception to this. Even King City had the word ‘dark’ in it. The full name of King City is Dark King City.

The four of them strode through the gateway of the city; it was similar to the city in Saint Origin World. There were guards in black armour standing on both sides of the gateway. They were all Fourth Grade Combat Emperors. The leader of the guards was a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor.

“Brother Chen, this sure is an ordinary city. These guards are only Fourth Grade Combat Emperors”

Yan Chenyu said with surprise.

“Xiao Yu, this is not strange. When the person of Dark Generation is born, their unique body will start to absorb the dark energy from this world, increasing their speed of advancement. In the usual case, a twenty year old youth would have no problem breaking through to the Combat Emperor but after that, their advancement would slow down gradually. As such, these guards are only Fourth Grade Combat Emperors.”

Dan King explained.

“They sure have heaven defying bodies.”

Tyrant had to admit that the Dark Generation was indeed a strange kind, Jiang Chen too admitted and nodded. The advantage that the Dark Generation made them envious.

“Hold your step.”

A guard shouted at Jiang Chen before coming forward to them.

“Which world do you all come from?”

The guard’s tone was arrogant. Despite the fact that he was facing experts of Minor Saints, he didn’t show the slightest sign of respect. In their hearts, these humans were just outsiders. They claimed that their bloodline were higher. Any outsider would have to keep their aggressiveness once they entered Void Fragmentation Domain. None of them would dare to provoke any of the aborigines here.

“Saint Origin World.”

Dan King spoke with the same arrogant tone, but the guards didn’t care about it. Dan King had a privileged status back in the Saint Origin World, naturally, he wouldn’t put a Combat Emperor guard in his eyes. Plus, his identity as an alchemist here was a privileged status as well.

Jiang Chen's eyes were glowing. He could see through the pretence that the guard put up, he had cultivated the Great Soul Derivation Technique. There was an intense current of dark energy inside his body that could potentially ignite his violent and ruthless temper any time. Although they all looked the same as humans, their nature wasn't far away from a monster.

“So the humans of Saint Origin World have arrived. It seems like the gateway of our domain has opened. In order to enter the city, you all will need to provide something beneficial, it will act as an entrance fee to the city.”

The guard spoke.

“Charges? Void Triangular Domain has been opened to the three worlds for so many years but no charges have been imposed to anyone before entering a city.”

Dan King sounded a little angry. In fact, he didn't care about the charges. Given his assets, he could simply provide a few ordinary pills for them. However, he felt frustrated about this.

“A new law has established. Any visitor who wished to enter the Dark Mulberry City has to provide something for them to be allowed entry.”

The guard said with an annoying smile.

“Son of a b*tch!”

At this time, a loud yell was heard from behind. The Fifth Grade Combat Emperor guard walked forward and sent two slaps to the smiling guard, causing his mind to circle.

“Leader.”

Although he was beaten up, he still greeted his leader respectfully. It showed how much the Dark Generation valued power.

The leader gave a glance to Yan Chenyu and was stunned for a while. He then held his fists at Dan King and said with a smile, “My subordinate doesn’t know the rules here. I hope senior won’t keep this in heart. You all can proceed to the city now without any charges.”

...

Chapter 807 - The Lascivious Prince

The leader seemed like a courteous and experienced guy but the glance he gave to Yan Chenyu made Jiang Chen uncomfortable and disgusted. However, there was no lasciviousness that could be detected from his glance, only amazement. Even if a Fifth Grade Combat Emperor was bold and had high rank, he wouldn't dare to have any obscene thoughts to a powerful Minor Saint girl.

There was one thing Jiang Chen was sure of. The main reason that the leader decided not to impose charges on them was because he saw the pretty face of Yan Chenyu.

Jiang Chen gave a cold glance at the leader and strode right into the city. Since they had just arrived in this domain, they wouldn't cause any troubles.

After the four people had reached a far distance from the guards, the guard who was slapped said, "Leader, these are all Minor Saint experts and they must be wealthy. Why did you let them in without gaining a sum from them?"

"How much do you understand about this? Don't jeopardise the prince's chance because of some small fortune."

The leader widened his eyes.

"The prince's chance? I don't think that the prince knew any of them."

The guard was confused.

“That’s why you are stupid. Don’t you know of our prince’s hobby? He likes to have fun with those beauties that comes from the three worlds. As soon as our domain open, that is the time when our prince is most excited. The girl in white just now was a perfect beauty, she was incomparable to all the girls that the prince had played before. I have already secretly send the information to the prince. He will absolutely not miss this prey. Once he gets his prey, it means that we have made a great contribution and we would be handsomely rewarded.”

The leader had an experienced and astute expression.

“Leader sure is brilliant. When the prince is already satisfied, he would definitely give us some treasures. It will be invaluable treasures. Haha!”

Both of the guard’s eyes were glittering, as if they had already foreseen a desirable future, but his laugh stopped a second later. A layer of ice suddenly appeared on the surface of the guards bodies. They were frozen. The final expressions they showed remained on their faces. They had become icemen. If you observed them carefully, the life force of the two had already disappeared completely. They were dead.

The other two guards quickly ran forth to check it out.

“Leader. Leader, what happen to you? Not good, Leader is dead!”

A guard exclaimed.

“Someone has assassinated the leader. It had to be those few humans’ doing because our generation doesn’t have this kind of technique. Quickly inform the general.”

Another guard cried out in alarm.

Yan Chenyu had entered the deeper region of the city. Her face and eyes were cold and dark. She was no longer the weak and soft miss like before. Whoever had ill intention towards her would be guaranteed to suffer an unbearable repercussions.

“The prince they mentioned should be the son of the city lord. There is only one lord in every city. Their position is honourable and has a lot of power. According to what I know, there are a lot of people amongst the rich who liked the girls of the three worlds. Every time the Void Triangular Domain is opened, plenty of girls who came here would vanish for no reason. Today, we have encountered such incident.”

Dan King smiled bitterly. Although they had gone far away, they could still clearly hear the conversation of the guards.

“Our main purpose for coming here is to obtain True Meta Stone. Since that so-called prince wants to create trouble for us, why don’t we pay him a visit?”

Jiang Chen said. He knew that guard just now had already

contacted the so-called prince. Thus the trouble would find them sooner or later. Besides, it would be impossible to avoid such a trouble in this city. So, Why not find the trouble first before it finds them? Jiang Chen wanted to obtain a vast amount of True Meta Stone; he was absolutely sure that the compound of the city lord would certainly contain a vast amount of them.

Hong Long

Sure enough, not long after their walk, a thunder-like sound erupted from the sky. Ten men in black armour appeared. They immediately surrounded the four of them without saying a word.

“Was it you all that killed our guards?”

A tall and muscular man said. He had the strongest Qi. There was a dark mark in between his brows. His cultivation was high—Third Grade Minor Saint. There were a few other Minor Saint experts with him as well.

Jiang Chen couldn't help himself but frown. The unique physique of the people of Dark Generation allowed them to send an information very quickly. They were already found just a few minutes after the incident happened.

At this moment, those two guards who were guarding the gate flew over. When they saw Jiang Chen and his friends, one shouted, “Third General, it is them. They come from the Saint Origin World. Our leader died when they entered our city. It must be them who committed such a crime.”

These two guards were pointing towards Jiang Chen and the rest.

“Humph! Outsiders dared to use violence in Dark Mulberry City? You all are truly lacking the knowledge of what death is. I suggest you all not to make any meaningless resistance.”

The Third General made a cold humph but he didn't attack, he knew that they weren't a group of weaklings, especially that middle-aged man who was way stronger than him. If a battle was started, they wouldn't gain any advantages. However, the pride of Dark Generation made them very arrogant. Anyone who came from the three worlds should obediently perform the trading activities without causing any troubles or provoke any person of the Dark Generation, including those Minor Saints.

“Get lost.”

Jiang Chen said it coldly. He didn't want to cause any trouble but he wasn't afraid of causing it.

“Brat! I think you are seriously courting death!”

The Third General bellowed. He launched a black light pillar to Jiang Chen. This light pillar consisted of a powerful dark energy and destructive force.

Jiang Chen wasn't even surprised facing such an attack. He simply struck out his palm and the black light pillar was

pulverised. His palm then clawed forth, restraining the Third General and yanked him closer. An ocean-like pressure acted against the body of the Third General. His face changed drastically. He was staring at this young man in white in disbelief. He started to feel a thick murderous intent.

“You...you dare to kill me?”

The Third General sounded afraid.

Jiang Chen responded with his action. The Third General was crushed to death by the huge force. There was no mercy. Jiang Chen had always been a person who would return the favour when the other person provoked him. As such, he just returned the favour with his power.

If you decided not to kill, then don't do it, but once you decided to do it, do it aggressively and completely. Retribution had already been created the moment Yan Chenyu killed the two guards. Since they have already killed two, it didn't matter if they killed more.

At this second, a fist size dark bead flew out of the dead Third General's body. Jiang Chen was stunned for a while before he gained his senses. He grabbed it in his hand.

“The people of Dark Generation is without a doubt similar to monsters, but this dark spirit is very beneficial to me. Thanks.”

Jiang Chen's face revealed a delighted surprise. This black bead

was similar to a demon and devil soul. However, the energy contained in this dark spirit was greater. This was the dark spirit of a Third Grade Minor Saint. It could be worth more than a city and most importantly, Jiang Chen's dragon transformation art could refine the essence of the dark energy into pure energy for absorption.

Fundamentally, Dark Generation was no different than the devil religion to Jiang Chen. However, the Dark Generation was a lot stronger than the devil region because of the unique environment here. At the end of the day, either it was a devil soul or dark spirit, all of them were high quality supplements to him.

Jiang Chen was naturally delighted about this. Now, when he kill a person of Dark Generation, he would gain a benefit.

“Not good. They have killed the Third General. Dammit! I can't believe that there are outsiders here that can kill the general of Dark Generation. Such an incident have never happened before.”

“Quickly, inform the First General and Second General. These few crazed outsiders must be taken care of.”

.....

The remaining guards' faces turned ugly after seeing their Third General being killed. Nothing like this had ever happened before in Void Triangular Domain. In this world, Dark Generation is the absolute slaughterer. No one from the outside world would dare to oppose them. However, their people were killed today on the

street. This was truly an unforgivable event.

“All of you stay put.”

At this time, another yell was heard causing the crowd to keep quiet. They saw a man in purple clothes coming from the sky. He was moving on the sky with confidence, every step he made was graceful. He seemed twenty five or six years old. He had an attractive look. His brows were as sharp as blade. His thin lips gave people an unpleasant feeling. His thick and dark hair hung down loosely but it didn't get messy in the air. This was a man who was prettier than a woman. He made a sway and landed amongst the group of guards. His elegant and graceful demeanor would certainly fascinate plenty of young girls.

“Prince.”

Those guards greeted with their fists. Their tone was very respectful.

That prince scanned Jiang Chen, then his eyes immediately shifted to Yan Chenyu. When he saw her unique face, he was immediately stupefied, given his experience in reading female faces. He couldn't take his eyes away from her. He couldn't believe that there was actually such a beautiful female from the other worlds. He was afraid that not even the legendary celestial beauties could be compared to her.

To any lascivious devil, Yan Chenyu's attractiveness was lethal.

Chapter 808 - Dark Liuyun

This prince had extraordinary demeanor as well as cultivation. He was already a Fifth Grade Minor Saint at such a young age. The physique of the Dark Generations is indeed unique. A genius like him could rarely be seen even amongst the eight families of the Pure Land.

“If you don’t take your eyes off from her, I promise you that you would be blind for the rest of your life.”

Jiang Chen looked at the prince and said in a cold tone. In his heart, Yan Chenyu was holy and saint-like. No one would dare to disrespect her in front of him. It was already considered a miracle for the prince to stand there unharmed.

“Bastard, you lowly humans dare to speak rudely to our Prince? Courting death!”

A Minor Saint guard yelled at Jiang Chen. Despite of his low cultivation, his tone sounded lofty. His tone indicated how much they look down on humans. In their beliefs, they weren’t humans but a very dignified race that was gifted and unique.

As a matter of fact, majority of the people of Dark Generation had limited knowledge. In their opinion, a peak Minor Saint was already the ceiling in their cultivation path. They had never seen a Great Saint, and had never known how powerful a Great Saint was. Despite their domain being opened once every three years, no Great Saint could come. So, they naturally thought that the three

worlds were similar to them. Due to this fact, their point of view were limited. They had no idea how big the other worlds were, except for those imperial kinsmen of Ninth Grade Minor Saint; they knew that Minor Saint was in fact nothing compared to the higher realm cultivators.

Hence, most of the Dark Generation looked down on these outsiders. They thought that these outsiders' only purpose of coming here was for their useless True Meta Stone. They were all born with natural dignity. For them, humans were puny beings within the food chain. If it wasn't for the rare treasures, herbs and pills that these humans have, they wouldn't waste their effort to patronize them.

The obvious discrimination had infuriated Dan King. But he strongly suppressed it. In fact, the imperial kinsmen of Dark Generation were even prouder. They even look the eight families of Divine Continent down despite knowing the existence of a Great Saint in those families. They would never hide the pride of their own bloodline. They thought that the only reason they couldn't reach the Great Saint realm was mainly because of the restriction of the law of nature in their world, otherwise, it would be a piece of cake for them to advance to the Great Saint realm.

Of course, while facing the eight families, the first class major powers of Boundless World and Black Yellow World, the imperial kinsmen would treat them with a warm welcome. After all, they still needed the continuous flow of resources from them.

As soon as the guard's voice faded, a slap landed on his face with a bang. The palm belonged to that purple-clothed prince.

“Prince, this man is the one who killed Third General.”

The guard was confused. He had no idea why his prince slapped him all of a sudden. Why would he stand on an outsider's side? Although he was also a Minor Saint, his respect and fear for the purple-clothed prince was profound.

“Shut up. Have your eyes become blind? Is this how you treat my honored guests? Get out of my sight now!”

The purple-clothed prince yelled at the guard, as if losing a Third Grade Minor Saint general wasn't a big deal.

“Yes, Prince.”

The guard didn't dare show any signs of disrespect, he immediately left the scene. Many eyes were following the pitiful guard who was just slapped. They pitied him for not understanding the prince's temper and hobby. The others knew why the prince acted like this—it's because there was a heavenly beauty among them.

The purple-clothed prince held his fists at Dan King and the others politely, and said, “My name is Dark Liuyun, the prince of this prefecture. I heard that you all are visitors from afar world. I apologize for the impolite welcome of my subordinates. I would

appreciate it if you all could forgive their mistakes.”

“Humph!”

Dan King made a cold humph but didn't say a word. He would have accepted the feigned apology of Dark Liuyun if he had not heard the conversation of the two guards at the gates just now. He might feel that this was a decent young man. But, now that he had known Dark Liuyun's ulterior motive, which was to get his hands on Yan Chenyu, his good impression of him instantly crumbled. Naturally, he wouldn't give him face.

“It seems like my honored guests is still harboring a grudge against the previous incidents. Our city has always been very respectful towards alchemist. If you all don't mind, I would like to invite you all to my prefecture to have a drink. What do you all think?”

Dark Liuyun was behaving courteously. No one knew how many cultivators had been captivated by this pretense.

Dan King didn't respond but darted a glance at Jiang Chen. This minor gesture had told Dark Liuyun that the decision-maker among the four wasn't this powerful alchemist, it was this Third Grade Minor Saint man in white.

“Since Prince Dark Liuyun invited us personally, we would naturally accept your invitation.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He would go to the prefecture regardless of what ulterior motives this Dark Liuyun had.

“Great! This brother is truly forthright! I, Dark Liuyun, always likes to make friend with someone like you. How may I address you?”

Dark Liuyun said pleasantly.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone.

“How about this beautiful young miss?”

Dark Liuyun’s eyes fell upon Yan Chenyu’s body. Although he had tried hard to mask his lascivious eyes, it was still visible in his eyes.

“Humph!”

Yan Chenyu made a cold humph and turned her head away from Dark Liuyun. In truth, she was holding herself not to attack. She didn’t need to put a Fifth Grade Minor Saint in her eyes given her current strength. If it wasn’t for keeping Jiang Chen’s plan intact, Dark Liuyun would become an ice pop, like the two guards at the gate.

“Uh...”

Dark Liuyun was stunned. This was the first time that he encountered such a scenario. Given his gentle demeanor and looks, no woman had ever rejected him. He had never imagine that he could meet such a bizarre character that didn't even bother to look at him. This had without a doubt hurt his self-esteem. How could a prince accept such a response? His eyes turned sinister but it was well concealed by his overall expression.

“My honored guests, this way please.”

Dark Liuyin made a gesture and showed them the way. He turned and led the way back to the prefecture. Immediately, his smiling face instantly turned cold and his eyes turned violent as a poisonous reptile.

“What a good Jiang Chen! A lowly human! Dared to be rude in front of me and killed my men? I will grant you an unburied death soon. And that bi*tch! Trying to act snobbish in front of me? There is no woman that I couldn't handle in this world.”

Dark Liuyun was carrying a vicious smile. Once they entered the prefecture, they would be under his full control.

“Brother Chen, this man is disgusting.”

Yan Chenyu told Jiang Chen via divine sense.

“Every disgusting man won’t have pleasant ending.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“Little Chen, when we reach the prefecture, are we going to step right into his trap? Do you have any plans?”

Tyrant asked.

“There are no plans, we will act according to the situation.”

Jiang Chen said with a shrug.

“Chen Er, I am sure that there are high grade experts in the prefecture. In my opinion, we should leave as soon as we finish the trade for the True Meta Stone.”

Dan King said.

“Father, I’m afraid that this Dark Liuyun would never let us go even if we want to. Initially, I was thinking of making a trade for the True Meta Stone but I have changed my mind. We must obtain the True Meta Stone without the trade.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. His initial intention was to perform a courteous transaction with the other party but since Dark Liuyun planned to hunt them, politeness was no longer necessary. Plus, after knowing the similarities between Dark Generation and the

devil religion, he viewed them as prey of the same kind.

Dan King shook his head and sighed. He had to say that his son-in-law was truly audacious. There was virtually nothing that he wouldn't dare to do. This Dark Liuyun wouldn't face any good repercussion once he offended Jiang Chen. Furthermore, he could already predict how lively this domain would become with Jiang Chen's presence.

The City Lord's Prefecture looked impressive and luxurious. Either it was the outer building or the scenery, they all represented grandeur. Similarly, there were four guards in black armor outside the entrance. Their cultivation were stronger than the guards guarding the city gate. The strongest among them was an Eighth Grade Combat Emperor.

They quickly bowed to greet Dark Liuyun as soon as they saw him. "Prince."

"En."

Dark Liuyun simply nodded and strode through the entrance to the prefecture. Jiang Chen and his friends followed behind him attentively. Those four guards focused on Yan Chenyu and smiled as if they already understood something.

"Did you see that? The prey has knocked on the prince's door."

"The prey this time is really a high quality one. Her cultivation is

higher than the girls before. I'm afraid that Prince would certainly enjoy this pretty girl."

"That girl is an absolute beauty. Last time, when the domain was opened, Prince had captured eight beauties and put them in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. They had become his pleasure toys for three years. I assume that he has already gotten bored with them. This time, he would certainly begin his hunt again."

"These few men are seriously unlucky to fall under Prince's grip. It isn't hard to imagine their ends. They would certainly die for sure."

They were all commenting about the new visitors and had already concluded their fates. Apparently, this wasn't the first time that something like this happened. As for the hobby of the prince, they were well aware of it. Any prey that was targeted by Dark Liuyun could never escape, even if the prey could grow wings.

...

Chapter 809 - Immune to Poison

They had reached a quiet and peaceful garden. Due to the absence of the sun and moon, the survival of plants were very minimal. There were only some exotic flowers and rare herbs. Jiang Chen nodded because these were all very precious plants that could grow independently in strange environments.

At the centre of the garden, there was a square table made entirely from a type of special rock that seemed transparent. The fluctuation of pure energy could be sensed from within even at a distance. It gave them a refreshing feeling.

“The rock element is a valuable treasure.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled.

Dan King beside him widened his eyes. “This is the True Meta Stone, a high quality True Meta Stone. This dude used such a valuable stone to create a table. By the looks of it, this table is made out of nearly a thousand high quality True Meta Stones. The fact is that one True Meta Stone is equivalent to one Saint Rank Restoration pill.”

Dan King told them via divine sense. Jiang Chen and Tyrant almost spurted out blood. This was the exact example of a spoiled brat who had wasted a thousand Saint Rank Restoration pills just to make a table.

Anyway, Jiang Chen felt even more excited because of this.

Despite the small size of this city, the amount of True Meta Stone was inestimable; the people of Dark Generation had used these ores to craft exterior decorations and furnitures. It would be a huge fortune if he could acquire all the True Meta Stone that existed in Dark Mulberry City.

“My honoured guests must have travelled a long distance just to come in my domain. It’s my fault for not welcoming you personally, allowing a misunderstanding to happen between you and my guards. My father always welcomed alchemists. When you arrive in my city, it is my responsibility to provide the best hospitality to you. This way, please.”

Dark Liuyun made a polite gesture.

“We appreciate your hospitality, Prince Liuyun.”

Jiang Chen held his fists and smiled. He sat down on one of the seats followed by Dan King and the others.

“Please come out here.”

Dark Liuyun ordered in low tone. Two very young girls in revealing clothes walked out from the garden. They seemed to be only twelve or thirteen years old. They hadn’t even reached puberty yet but had already become the female servants of Dark Liuyun.

“Prince.”

The girls bowed and greeted Dark Liuyun respectfully. Fear was evident in their eyes.

“My honoured guests have come to visit my prefecture, bring the best Sequoia Dragon tea here.”

Dark Liuyun said.

“Yes, Prince.”

The girls responded. They came back in the quickest speed with two trays. A teapot and a few cups that were exquisitely made of True Meta Stone was sitting on top of the trays. The tea cups were placed in front of them before the tea was poured into their cups.

The tea wasn't warm or hot, it's like a dragon's blood rolling in the cup and gradually exuded a fragrance that freshened one's mind.

“This is a good tea.”

Dan King couldn't help but praise.

“Cheers, everyone.”

Dark Liuyun led everyone to drink. He raised his tea cup and gulped down his tea and let out a comfortable sound of relief.

Jiang Chen's eyes stared at the tea and gave a smirk before gulping the whole cup of tea down his throat.

“Good tea.”

Jiang Chen praised.

Dark Liuyun sneered deep in his eyes when he saw that Jiang Chen finished his cup of tea. Then, he waved to Dan King and the others and said, “This is no ordinary tea. Get a few more cups if you don't mind.”

Dan King saw Jiang Chen had emptied his cup as well, but as they were about to taste the tea with their tongue, Jiang Chen voice simultaneously echoed in their minds. “There is poison in the tea.”

The three of them were stunned for a while. Tyrant and Yan Chenyu didn't doubt Jiang Chen's warning. Since Jiang Chen had determined that the tea was poisoned, the tea certainly has poison in it. The only thing that baffled them was why did Jiang Chen drank it.

Dan King on the other hand was dubious of Jiang Chen's warning and actions. He was an experienced and renowned alchemist. It wouldn't be easy for anyone to poison him. With his eyesight and knowledge, he could confirm that this was a genuine Sequoia Dragon tea, not a poisoned one.

Despite that, he still chose to heed Jiang Chen's warning. The three of them were smart enough not to release their temper, they didn't have any evidence aside from Jiang Chen's warning.

The three of them imitated Jiang Chen's action and gulped their cup of tea.

Dark Liuyun became excited, especially when he saw Yan Chenyu drinking her cup of tea. He could already imagine the moment when Yan Chenyu had fallen under his grasp.

"Senior Dan King, my father would surely be delighted when he sees an alchemist visiting our prefecture, but he is not at home today. He would mostly be back tomorrow. If you don't mind, you can stay overnight in my place so that my father could meet you as soon as he returns."

Dark Liuyun said.

"We are honored to. Thank you, Prince."

Jiang Chen smiled.

"This is my responsibility as a Prince, Brother Jiang. Everyone, I have already arranged your accommodations."

As soon as Dark Liuyun finished his sentence, the two young girls appeared again. Then, they brought the four of them to their accommodation. Not long after they left, a dark silhouette

emerged. This was an old man with a thin body. His cultivation was terrifyingly high—peak Sixth Grade Minor Saint— only a step away from Seventh Grade Minor Saint.

“Congratulations Prince for succeeding in your plan.”

The old man let out a sinister smile.

“Humph! That damn Jiang Chen! He dares to be rude in front of me and killed my people. His actions are unforgivable. Now that all of them have been poisoned, I could simply decide their fates.”

Dark Liuyun made a cold humph.

“Why did Prince didn’t finish them straightaway? There is no one that Prince couldn’t handle in Dark Mulberry City. As for the alchemist, I can kill him for you.”

The voice of the old man was gruesome, it sounded very unpleasant.

“There is no need for you to get into a fight. They have already consumed the poison of the Sequoia Dragon and Dark Orchid. It would start to affect them six hours later. After that, they would temporarily lose their combat powers. At that time, they would be as fragile as an ant. The one that I hated the most among them is that Jiang Chen. He disrespected me and killed my men. Most importantly, he has an astonishing beauty with him. What right does he have to possess such a woman? That woman should be

mine. I want to let him know the consequences of offending me. He is merely a lowly human that is more worthless than a servant. I would naturally kill him but before he dies, I would let him suffer so much that he would rather die.”

A vicious smile was plastered on Dark Liuyun’s face, a total opposite to his previous demeanour.

“Hehe, prince always collects the ‘goods’ every time the domain is opened. Judging by the day, six hours later will be midnight, which is also their time of death.”

The old man chuckled coldly. Apparently, he had already collaborated with Dark Liuyun a number of times before.

Jiang Chen and the other three walked into a courtyard. Their accommodation was luxurious. There were exactly four rooms. The environment was definitely a deluxe package. If one judged Dark Liuyun based on this arrangement, one couldn’t deny his fine hospitality.

“Honoured guests, please.”

The girls showed an inviting gesture.

“En. Thank Prince Liuyun on my behalf. You two can go now. You are not allowed to come closer to this place without my order.”

Jiang Chen said to the two girls.

“Yes.”

The girls responded and left. Jiang Chen could see the pitying eyes from the two girls before they left.

Pu Pu *Pu*

After they left, except Jiang Chen, the three of them spurted out a mouthful of water, it was the Sequoia Dragon tea that they drank earlier. As for Yan Chenyu, the mouthful of water that she spurted out became ice cubes.

“Chen Er, the Sequoia Dragon tea is made using the powder of sequoia dragon tree with some other herbs. It is absolutely free from any poisons. It is beneficial to our health. Why did you say that the tea is poisoned?”

Dan King asked impatiently. This thing had been bugging him until now. Given his experienced eyesight, he would certainly be able to detect it if the tea was poisoned.

“Father, the tea itself has no problem, but have you noticed a few Dark Orchids hidden in the deeper part of the garden? The pollen of the Dark Orchids were drifting in the air. It was colourless and odourless, even a powerful expert could not easily notice it. When the Sequoia Dragon tea is mixed with the pollen of the Dark Orchids, it would become an inconspicuous poison. Any cultivator

who absorb it won't feel anything in a short period of time. The poison would only take effect after six hours. After that, your combat power would be temporarily gone and would only start to recover after three days. To us, three days' time is already enough for us to die ten thousand times."

Jiang Chen explained. In this cultivation world that was full of deceit, once you lose your combat power, anyone could finish you effortlessly.

"What?!"

Dan King exclaimed. Jiang Chen was right, he really didn't notice the Dark Orchids in the garden. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen's sharp observation, the consequences would be unimaginable.

"This garbage prick is more cunning than me. We almost fell into his trap. Luckily, we have you Little Chen."

Tyrant didn't know much about medicine or herbs, but following Jiang Chen allowed him to ease his worries. If there were people who wanted to plot against Jiang Chen, they would only face one conclusion, they would fall into Jiang Chen's plot instead.

"This Dark Liuyun sure is sinister. I have no idea how many times he used this method to deal with the other cultivators. It just made me detest him even more. But Chen Er, I saw that you have drunk the entire cup of tea. Why is that so?"

Dan King expressed his grudge against Dark Liuyun. Suddenly, he recalled that Jiang Chen drank a cup of tea down to his stomach. This didn't seem like a wise action.

“I am immune to any poison.”

Jiang Chen shrugged.

...

Chapter 810 - Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion

The three of them were dumbfounded. They couldn't help but shake their heads. In fact, they shouldn't be overly surprised when mysterious things happened on Jiang Chen. As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen had absorbed the lethal poison of a Green Hellish Python into his body. It proved that his body could refine any kinds of poison, let alone the insignificant Dark Orchid.

“Brother Chen, that Dark Liu Yun already thought that he had poisoned us. He would certainly attack us six hours later. What should we do when that happens?”

Yan Chenyu said worriedly. After all, this was the prefecture of Dark Mulberry City. If they began a fight here, it would certainly draw plenty of attention outside.

“It would be midnight six hours later. If Dark Liuyun really comes, we will make sure that he doesn't have the chance to return.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile at the corner of his mouth and turned to Tyrant. “Tyrant, I would need your help this time.”

“What do you need me for?”

Tyrant's eyes widened.

“I am not really interested in ‘using’ you. I won't be needing your

help if Big Yellow is here but unfortunately he is not. Summon that divine stone monument of yours to assist my formation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“I understand now. You intend to set an invisible grand formation here, covering the entire courtyard, and making Dark Liuyun stuck in here. At that time, no one would be alerted outside even if a big battle occurred here.”

Tyrant wasn't a fool. He already understood Jiang Chen quite well after following him for so long. However, Tyrant didn't know that this was not the first time that Jiang Chen would be doing this. Last time, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow used this method to attack the stronghold of the Dark Shadow—Moon Pavilion—and successfully annihilated the entire place.

If they talked about setting a formation, Jiang Chen alone was already enough but this was the prefecture of the city. There might be some powerful experts hiding somewhere in this area. Furthermore, Jiang Chen was merely a Third Grade Minor Saint. In order to prevent any mistake from happening, he needed Tyrant's stone monument to help build a grand formation that would stay undetected even before the eyes of an Eighth Grade Minor Saint.

If Big Yellow was around, Jiang Chen could set such a formation perfectly without needing Tyrant's help. After all, Big Yellow was the master of the Holy Book of Formation.

“Brother Chen, do you think that Big Yellow would also come to Void Triangular Domain this time?”

Yan Chenyu asked when Jiang Chen mentioned Big Yellow’s name.

“That is hard to say. If the people of the Demon Race is coming, Big Yellow would probably come due to his disposition.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“I don’t think so, he should have informed you and brought you along if he is really going.”

Tyrant shook his head.

“Well, we have started our journey earlier than the others. Besides, the Demon Race has their own private passageway. They would usually arrive later than the usual time.”

Dan King said.

Tyrant nodded. In that case, they weren’t really sure if Big Yellow would come to this virtual domain. The day when Jiang Chen and his friends arrived back at Mysterious Domain, they were instantly briefed by Dan King and had started their journey the next day. They were afraid that at the time, Big Yellow had just reached the Demon Race. If Jiang Chen and the rest waited for Big Yellow’s news, they wouldn’t be able to get here on time.

“Let’s put Big Yellow aside for now. If he is coming, we will still be able to meet him in King City. Our top priority now is to get rid of this Dark Liuyun and obtain all the high grade True Meta Stones in this city.”

Jiang Chen’s pupils sparkled. He had already seen a furniture made of True Meta Stone in the garden just now. He confirmed that the stone was just like what Dan King had described, rare. He would need a lot of these stones in his path as a Great Saint in the future. When he saw the table that was made of high grade True Meta Stone, he knew that there were plenty of stones here in this city.

In this trip to Void Triangular Domain, Jiang Chen had to make sure that he would get a vast amount of True Meta Stone, it would relieve his worry of needing Saint Rank Restoration pills in his path towards the Great Saint realm. For a consumption king like Jiang Chen, it was hard to imagine how much energy he would need to consume from the First Grade Great Saint to Ninth Grade Great Saint. It would surely be an astronomical figure. That was why he needed True Meta Stones to substitute Saint Rank Restoration pills, otherwise, his advancement would be impossible.

Tyrant’s eyes glittered when he heard what Jiang Chen said. They were going to accomplish a major mission. Dan King couldn’t help but shake his head. He knew that there wouldn’t be peace in this trip to Void Triangular Domain; Dark Mulberry City was just the beginning.

Afterwards, Tyrant summoned his blood-red stone monument and placed it at a corner in the compound. Jiang Chen borrowed the power of the stone monument and started to set the grand formation. He struck out shapeless dharma seals into the void that covered the whole compound. Then, he casted the five elemental soul. This formation wasn't the same as the one he and Big Yellow used in Nebula Sect to defend against Nan Bei Chao's army—Five Elemental Tisura Formation. This formation didn't have any name. It would function as a barrier and turn the entire compound into an illusory world. Once the formation was complete, anything that would happen inside the formation would be undetectable.

Dan King saw countless of afterimages of Jiang Chen when he was continuously waving his palms to sent out palm seals. Dan King let out a sigh once more. "Chen Er is indeed an unrivalled monstrous genius. There is nothing that could stop him. It's hard to imagine that someone had mastered a lot of things."

"There are some things or people in this world that couldn't be judged using common sense. Little Chen is one of them and he is a miracle."

Tyrant smiled. He had grown accustomed to Jiang Chen's miraculous actions and skills. Jiang Chen was a person with tyrannical combat strength, immune to all kinds of poison, and mastered the field of alchemy and formations. He was a person who could virtually do anything, a polymath.

Yan Chenyu smiled after hearing that her man was praised. It made her feel happier as if she was the one being praised.

Not long after that, the grand formation was fully set. Looking from the outside, nothing could be seen. Dan King felt the same way. If he didn't see the making of the formation with his own eyes, he would not notice the barrier of the grand formation. Dark Liuyun would certainly not notice it.

“Haha! Now we just have to wait for the prey to fall into the trap. Dark Liuyun would have never thought that the hole he dug earlier was for himself.”

Tyrant laughed.

Four hours had already passed in a blink. The sky was already dark. The Qi of the entire Void Triangular Domain had changed dramatically. The entire world was encompassed by the dark energy and the light was entirely blocked by it. There was no moonlight or starlight. The entire world was engulfed by pure darkness.

“There are two more hours left. Dark Liuyun will certainly arrive on time. You all wait here. I will go out for a while.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Brother Chen, where are you going?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

“I'm going to gather some information regarding this

prefecture.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Chen Er, be careful.”

Dan King reminded worriedly. Every time the Void Triangular Domain was opened to the public, the cities in the domain would raise their guard. Moreover, this was the prefecture of a city, Jiang Chen would easily be noticed by the experts in the prefecture if he went out at this hour.

Jiang Chen made a sway and vanished in the darkness. Given his ability to hide, he would go anywhere unnoticed even before the eyes of a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. He didn't believe that there was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint in this city. The limit in this domain was a peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint. All the Ninth Grade Minor Saints should be staying in King City. Any other city that was guarded by a Ninth Grade Minor Saint must be a neighbouring city of King City. Dark Mulberry City was only a distant city. As such, Jiang Chen could loosen his alertness while being in this city.

A silhouette was moving back and forth in front the guards like a spectre in the spacious prefecture but they could only sense a mild wind.

The silhouette was Jiang Chen. When he came to an empty land, he frowned.

‘How could there be an empty land in the prefecture? It doesn’t go along with the architecture of these buildings. This piece of land was large enough to build a garden. Something must be hidden behind this wasteland.’

Jiang Chen said to himself. His old residence was also a prefecture in the Fragrant Sky City. The prefecture was the most important and respected building in a city. Thus, the quality and style of the architecture was a crucial element. If a wasteland was left in a prefecture, it would certainly affect the artistic and dignified impression of it.

Jiang Chen felt something strange. He immediately circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique. His five elemental soul power had covered the entire area. Suddenly, Jiang Chen found out that there was actually a spatial zone below this land, or maybe it wasn’t an empty space but a building.

“There is an underground secret chamber.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. Sure enough, there was something hidden in this land. However, he found no entrance to it. The entrance to this hidden building must be hidden somewhere in this area.

However, it didn’t matter much to Jiang Chen. With the help of the earth soul, he could penetrate into the ground easily without drawing any attention.

Swoosh

He casted his earth soul and vanished with a swoosh, going underground.

After a few blinks, he appeared right in front of a rocky door. There was a plate etched with three words above the door—Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion.

He knitted his brows. His initial thought was that this was a place for storing treasures. Now, it seemed otherwise. A storage for treasures was named 'Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion'? There wasn't a single guard here or any signs of a formation. Who would leave a treasure vault unguarded?

He turned backwards and saw a long and black corridor. It must be the exit and the entrance to this secret chamber. He was interested with the passageway of the pavilion. With a sway, he came inside the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion.

...

Chapter 811 - Heartless and Inhuman

Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion was an underground secret pavilion. Since Jiang Chen had detected this secret building, he might as well find out what was behind it. When he went in, his fury was immediately ignited and his face changed instantly when he saw the scene inside the building.

The scene was in complete disorder. There were eight cages made from unknown materials. Inside every cage was a living organism. They were precisely girls.

Eight girls were contained in every cage. These girls weren't wearing much clothing. Some of them were even completely bare. Their bodies were full of wounds and bruises. They didn't seem like women at all. Some of them even had the looks of a fourteen or fifteen year old teenager.

What infuriated him more was when he saw several corpses lying at the corner of the room. Most of them had dried off. They were all undressed. No one had even bothered to bury them after they died. Their bodies were similar to the girls in the cages. Despite having died for a period of time, their bruises were deep and obvious. There was even a female corpse which her bosoms had been cut off.

This was an act of a heartless and inhuman fanatic.

Jiang Chen was trying hard to control his anger which was about to explode, he walked slowly towards those imprisoned girls.

Maybe it was because of the sound of the footsteps, these girls who were lying in their cages woke up with confused and frightened faces. Their eyes were full of fear, the fear was already ingrained in them after suffering for so many times.

“Kill me. Please kill me!”

“Filthy monster! I would certainly haunt you after I become a ghost.”

“I beg you...kill me now...”

These girls' responses were intense the moment they saw Jiang Chen. Some were wailing and some were cursing, but despair was evident in their eyes. It was an indescribable frustration. Now, they only wanted nothing more than death.

“All of you, don't be afraid. I am here to rescue you all. I am a human like you, I am from Saint Origin World.”

Jiang Chen quickly spoke and declared his identity. He could tell that these girls' bodies were flowing with human blood. They weren't people of Dark Generation because there wasn't a single dark element within them. It goes without saying that these were the doings of the lascivious prince.

These girls were stupefied after hearing Jiang Chen's declaration. Then, they scanned him. They felt nothing more than

the Qi of humans. More importantly, this man didn't sexually assault them the moment he arrived. This was enough to differentiate him from the people of Dark Generation.

Sniff

The eight girls started to cry bitterly. They had lost count of the number of times that they had cried over these past three years. They didn't even have the right to die. They were living in constant humiliation and nightmare. All of their hopes had been destroyed.

“Young mister, I am sincerely begging you to kill me. Once you kill me, Ying Er would promise to be your servant in my next life to repay your kindness.”

A girl of roughly fourteen years of age who was lying on the ground and was wearing almost nothing pleaded. She had been shamed excessively and the only thing that she wanted now was death.

Jiang Chen was shocked by their behaviour. What kind of torture had they suffered that they wanted to die so badly?

Jiang Chen could naturally see it with his eyes. These girls were the same as him—a cultivator. They were once powerful cultivators but now their bodies were controlled by the dark energy, making them a living corpse. That was why they couldn't commit suicide.

“How did you all end up here?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“We are cultivators from Saint Origin World, Boundless World and Black Yellow World. We had attended the trading event three years ago but were plotted against by that filthy Dark Liuyun. That lascivious monster had imprisoned us in these cages and sealed our cultivation. He had made us his toys for pleasure and for expressing his anger. In his eyes, we are no more than a servant.”

A girl said. Her body shuddered when she recalled the incidents that happened over the past three years.

It had already been three years. Their willpower had already been extinguished. Some of them were even from notable families but after suffering for the past three years, their bodies already become numbed. They wouldn't even feel ashamed even if a man stared at their bare bodies. After suffering for so long, death was the only thing that they looked forward to.

“Three years... we have not only been ‘played’ by the filthy bastard, but also by his friends. Those girls died not because of suicide, they were ‘played’ to death. Anyone who resisted would be beaten up harshly. There was even a girl whose breast had been dissected from her body. They are a group of sexual maniacs that would always seek pleasure from us.”

“Young master, I am begging you to kill us all. Free us from this constant torture.”

.....

The girls recounted their past experiences from this building. In fact, the present scene alone could already tell how they were treated in these past three years.

Hong

An intense fury rushed out of Jiang Chen's body. He could no longer stand his anger. He turned to the girl called Ying Er and asked, "How old are you this year?"

"Ying Er would be fourteen years old this year."

Ying Er answered honestly.

Ka *Ka*

Jiang Chen's fist produced a cracking sound. His fury was on the verge of exploding. A fourteen-year-old girl...That f*cking bastard! She was only eleven years old three years ago. This monster didn't even show mercy to an eleven-year-old girl. She had the same age as Zuo Ling Er. It was hard to imagine how they passed their daily lives over these past three years. He suddenly knew why they wanted death so badly. It was a form of release, a true release.

Ripping Dark Liuyun into millions of pieces wasn't even enough

to pay for the suffering of these girls. Humans were called humans because of conscience. A being without conscience was even worse than a monster.

They were evil, lascivious, heartless...It wasn't just Dark Liuyun alone but also the friends that he had brought along to 'play' with the girls. In their eyes, female humans were merely toys, a tool for them to 'play' and enjoy. Jiang Chen had a sudden thought that not only Dark Liuyun should die, the entire Dark Generation as well.

“I will save you all out.”

Jiang Chen said.

“No young master. We are not leaving. We are begging you to grant us death, a release.”

“How could we continue to live with our current condition? We have become incomplete and crippled. We just want to die.”

“Young master. Kill us please. We would be a hundred times happier if we died under your hands than being played to death by those monsters.”

“Come on young master, do it now. Send us to a new journey and you will become our greatest benefactor.”

.....

Jiang Chen closed his eyes slowly, after seeing those helpless eyes and listening to their constant pleading. He must admit that he is really a ruthless man for he had already killed so many people, staining his hands with countless drops of blood. The world of cultivation was a dog eat dog world. It was something that would normally happen anywhere any time. However, there was a bottom line in Jiang Chen's heart. He is human, a male human with uprightness.

He wouldn't be this angry if Dark Liuyun had killed these girls. What Dark Liuyun did had crossed the bottom line. He had never felt this angry before.

“I will fulfill your wishes. I can also do one more thing for you all after that, which is to seek vengeance to those who made you become like this.”

Jiang Chen said in a plain tone.

The girls were satisfied after hearing Jiang Chen's promise. Ying Er was so excited that she cried. “Young master, are you really going to seek vengeance on those filthy monsters on behalf of us? Can you really kill that evil monster?”

“I promise you. I will kill him.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Ying Er. He then raised his hand. This was the first time he felt his hand shaking.

“Young master, do it now. You are really our saviour.”

Someone said.

“It’s enough.”

Jiang Chen didn’t want to listen to their pleading anymore. He struck a palm. Countless of golden lights shot out like sharp blades, impaling the girls. Their bodies slowly fell down as they died on the spot. Their eyes were closed, which meant that there was no unwillingness in their death. Their faces were full of satisfaction. It was the dream that they had longed for.

Jiang Chen looked at the corpses and incinerated them with his flames. “Your bodies are holy and pure. I will use the strongest flames to incinerate you all. Leave your vengeance on my shoulder.”

Then, a strong wave of energy rushed out of Jiang Chen’s body. The entire underground pavilion was destroyed completely. The existing corridor of Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion would lead to the room where Dark Liuyun stayed. The destructive force didn’t have a single impact on the prefecture above, but Dark Liuyun could sense it very clearly, especially the death of the eight girls.

Swoosh

The next moment, Dark Liuyun vanished and appeared in the

underground corridor. His face instantly turned green when he saw the ruined Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. A fury erupted from his body. Who dared to destroy his underground pavilion? This had to be a joke. He couldn't imagine how much boldness this person had to do such a thing.

“Dammit! All of my efforts for building the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion are wasted. My toys are all gone.”

Dark Liuyun gritted his teeth. He used divine sense to look for the destroyer but found nothing. The person must have left this place without leaving a single trace, not even his Qi.

He suddenly thought of a person, the young man in white.

“Jiang Chen, it has to be you. I would make you pay a hefty price for what you did. You would certainly suffer a fate worse than death.”

Dark Liuyun's eyes glinted with ruthlessness.

...

Chapter 812 - Like A Tortoise in A Jar

The thought just naturally came to Dark Liuyun, he guessed that it was Jiang Chen's doing. His Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion had been fine for so long but was destroyed as soon as Jiang Chen arrived. He wouldn't believe that this was done by the people of Dark Generation. No one in Dark Mulberry City would dare to commit such an act. Coincidentally, Jiang Chen and his friends were the first group of people that arrived in their city when the domain opened today.

In the courtyard, Jiang Chen was pacing back and forth. His body was full of murderous intent and his face was filled with coldness. Even though he had destroyed the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion, Jiang Chen still had a lot of fury contained inside of him that was ready to erupt at any given moment. He would never forget the pitiful conditions of those girls, especially the pathetic and despairing eyes of the little girl – Ying Er. These scenarios were like steel needles that had pricked his heart. The only way to express his anger was to kill Dark Liuyun on behalf of the eight girls.

“Brother Chen, what happened to you?”

“Little Chen, your face looks very unpleasant.”

“Chen Er, did you find something bad?”

The three of them could clearly see Jiang Chen's strange behaviour. It was totally different from the time he went out. They could feel a volcano-like thing about to explode inside of him.

“Such a heartless and evil man... Dark Liuyun must die. Anyone who entered the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion, the entire Dark Generation must die.”

Jiang Chen said in a very cold tone. The green veins on his fists were twitching. His willpower was as strong as steel for he had already been in numerous battles and had watched countless of people die. Usually, he would be able to maintain his composure regardless of anything that he faced. However, today's incident had really ignited his fury to the extent that he couldn't control it anymore. The heaven should know how Jiang Chen felt when he killed those girls.

“Brother Chen, what had actually happened?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

Jiang Chen took a deep breath to calm his racing emotions. If his mind was born without rationality, he would have annihilated the entire prefecture.

Then, Jiang Chen told them everything that he had encountered just now. Their faces instantly changed, especially Yan Chenyu's. The cold air that she released could freeze a barbaric ancient beast to death. Tyrant and Dan King were angered despite having not seen those scenes in person. They could already imagine that Dark Liuyun would certainly do the same thing to Yan Chenyu. The consequences would certainly be dire if he succeeded. Of course, he wouldn't.

“Amitabha.”

Tyrant held both of his palm together. His face looked sad before he opened his mouth and cursed. “Motherf*cker! He is worse than a monster. The punishment below the 18 layers of hell won’t be enough for him. This is truly infuriating!”

“Ai, many young princes of Dark Generations have a hobby like this. I wouldn’t even know that they treated human girls like toys for pleasure if it wasn’t for Chen Er. They are overly violent.”

Dan King sighed. Anyone could imagine how much it would hurt the families and friends of those girls once they found out the truth.

“Brother Chen, we must not let that Dark Liuyun go.”

Yan Chenyu said coldly.

“Not just Dark Liuyun.”

Jiang Chen showed a cold smirk. Everyone here knew about Dark Liuyun’s ‘good’ deeds, be it the guards of the city or the guards of the prefecture. They treated their prince’s deed as a normal thing in their daily lives. Jiang Chen wanted to take revenge on behalf of those eight girls including those girls who were already dead. He wanted those people to accompany the girls’ death.

“The time is almost up. Less than an hour to go. That dude will be here very soon.”

Tyrant said.

“I have destroyed his Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. He won’t have any problems guessing that it was my doing. I am sure that he is overwhelmed by fury now. He would be the first one to reach here as soon as the time is up.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly.

“Oh ya, little Chen. Perhaps we can do this the easy way.”

Tyrant smiled. “The dark element is prevalent in the physique of the Dark Generation. That means the edifying light might work on them. If they can be edified, it would save us a lot of effort.”

“I haven’t thought of that, but the attribute of this world is different from the Saint Origin Realm. There are only light and dark element here, and the Dark Generation are the only living creatures here. I’m afraid that the edifying light won’t work on them because the environment of this world required them to be evil.”

Jiang Chen said.

“We’ll know after trying.”

Tyrant smiled.

An hour passed by very quickly. The four of them were sitting in the courtyard, waiting for the arrival of Dark Liuyun. Sure enough, Dark Liuyun was punctual.

“My guests, how is your stay going?”

Dark Liuyun’s voice had already reached them even before he arrived, his tone wasn’t as polite as it was during the day. Perhaps, he didn’t have to hide it anymore. Politeness was completely unnecessary to those people who are about to die. To him, they are no different than insects.

Behind Dark Liuyun was an old man with a peak Sixth Grade Minor Saint realm cultivation. The both of them carried a ferocious smile. Maybe it was because of the night sky, they looked exactly like a devil in the gloom.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen struck his spell as soon as they appeared. He casted the edifying light. It went straight through Dark Liuyun’s body with a swoosh. Dark Liuyun’s eyes frowned, he checked his body and found no injuries. In his opinion, Jiang Chen tried a sneak-attack on him but didn’t know that he had already lost his combat strength. As such, Jiang Chen’s attack didn’t do anything to him.

Jiang Chen kept the edifying light. He shook his head to Tyrant. The result was just as he predicted. The edifying light wouldn't work in a strange world like the one they were in. This world is not the same as the Devil World. The devils in the world would succumb to the edifying light. Although the Devil World was also an independent spatial zone, it needed the support of the Saint Origin World to exist. In other words, the lands of the Devil World was connected to the land of the Saint Origin World, as well as the natural elements of the world. Void Triangular Domain was not connected to any other worlds. The natural disaster in this world was affected by the source of the world. As such, the people of Dark Generation wouldn't succumb to the edifying light.

Jiang Chen really didn't plan to use the edifying light. The best way to deal an animal like Dark Liuyun was to use a direct force to pulverize him.

“Prince Liuyun does have a lot of free time to make a visit in our compound in the middle of the night.”

The four of them were sitting on their seats, showing no signs of standing up to greet them.

“Jiang Chen, let me ask you one thing. Was it you who destroyed my Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion?”

Dark Liuyun asked straightforwardly.

“That's right. It was I did that. I have also promised to avenged them.”

Jiang Chen's body was full of murderous intent, he was holding himself back from lunging forward to rip Dark Liuyun into pieces.

“Son of a b*tch! These lowly humans. You just wasted my hospitality. You have killed my guards and general but I didn't account that for your debts. I continued to greet you warmly. It is really hateful that you returned my kindness with ingratitude.”

Dark Liuyun's expression darkened, thinking of his Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion that had been destroyed by this bastard.

“Haha! I have seen many shameless people but they were not as shameless as you. Your degree of shamelessness has reached an unreachable level. Did you really think that putting poison in tea means showing your warm hospitality to us?”

Tyrant cursed.

“It seems that you have already known about it, but all of you have already temporarily lost your cultivation. You are as weak as insects in front of me. I could easily kill all of you with a single breath from my mouth, but I would never let all of you die so easily. You will be tortured boundlessly to death, aside from this beautiful lady. It is totally worth it to exchange the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion for such beauty.”

Dark Liuyun had finally revealed his true self. Since his opponents had already lost all their cultivation, he could just do whatever he wanted.

He walked towards Jiang Chen and raised his palm to send a slap. He must control his strength, otherwise the fun would be over if Jiang Chen died.

Pa

A loud noise resounded throughout the courtyard. But, the one who received the slap wasn't Jiang Chen, it was Dark Liuyun. He was sent flying away by Jiang Chen's slap, hitting a rock at one side. The impact had smashed the rock into pieces.

Wah

Dark Liuyun spurted out a mouthful of blood with a 'Wah' sound. His face was full of surprise.

"You still have your cultivation."

Dark Liuyun's eyes were in disbelief. The thing that he was amazed the most was Jiang Chen's strength. He was a powerful Fifth Grade Minor Saint whereas Jiang Chen was only a Third Grade Minor Saint. How could he possibly be sent flying by someone who was two grades lower than him? As a matter of fact, his strength was enough to defeat an ordinary Sixth Grade Minor Saint. He had a feeling that Jiang Chen didn't use his full force in his slap, otherwise he might already be dead.

"Don't worry about it. My thoughts are aligned with yours. I

won't let you die so easily as well or else it would be very unfair to those you have tortured and harmed.”

Jiang Chen's tone suddenly turned very cold. The moment Dark Liuyun came to the courtyard, he had already become the tortoise trapped in a jar, awaiting to be slaughtered.

“Impossible. I saw you drank the whole cup of Sequoia Dragon Tea earlier.”

Dark Liuyun couldn't believe the facts that was right in front of him because he clearly saw Jiang Chen gulping down the tea earlier. He was sure that Jiang Chen wasn't pretending back then.

“There are still a lot of other impossible things to discover and this is just the beginning.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly.

...

Chapter 813 - A Hard Torture

The image of the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion was replayed in his head. It was as if he was looking those girls' pitiful expression again. He must certainly settle this score. He wanted Dark Liuyun and the people of Dark Mulberry City to pay a hefty price for what they had done.

“Courting death? Just a mere Third Grade Minor Saint...you think that you can still live after being poisoned? This must be a joke. You have even attacked my prince, a truly heinous crime.”

That old man flashed past, appearing before Jiang Chen. The Qi of a peak Sixth Grade Minor Saint was emanated, but it didn't even intimidate Jiang Chen at all. There was no need for Jiang Chen to transform while facing a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. As such, a peak Sixth Grade Minor Saint would still meet the same fate.

Pa

As soon as the old man's voice faded, Jiang Chen's slapped, akin to a flash. There was no time for the old man to respond.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Jiang Chen's slap made him stagger a few steps backwards. Half of his face was swollen red. Two of his front teeth were spat out. He looked at Jiang Chen, terrified. The fear that he felt was greater than what Dark Liuyun did. He could not understand how Jiang Chen was this strong. This wasn't expected. If the fact that Jiang

Chen caught Dark Liuyun off guard, sending him flying away with a slap was mere luck, it shouldn't happen again. The only explanation for that was that Jiang Chen was insanely strong.

Dark Liuyun and the old man was in shock. They had never seen such an 'abnormal', they too have many geniuses in the Dark Generation, but none was this strong.

“Punk, you have really infuriated me!”

The old man raged. His body produced a cracking sound. A dark image suddenly appeared behind him, visualising a ferocious monster. The dark energy that he emanated could give anyone the feeling that they had met the devil of the hell.

“Dark Generation is a cruel monster, as I have expected. Your kind doesn't need to exist anymore.”

Jiang Chen said coldly.

Hong Long

An ear-splitting sound was heard from the power that the old man unleashed. A huge black hand materialized and lunged towards Jiang Chen.

Hong

Jiang Chen also sent out his attack – True Dragon Palm. His dragon claw was encompassed with the purest Yang flames. While his flaming palms were lunging at his opponent, the old man's dark energy suddenly shuddered, as though it had met its nemesis, causing the his Qi to shrank by half.

Jiang Chen felt pleased upon seeing this. It seemed like his flames weren't the same as the edifying light. The edifying light originated from the Buddha Sect, its natural attribute was based on the Buddha. In this Void Fragmentation Domain, there were only two types of elements, the dark and light element. They coexisted in this world, and they were in harmony. In addition to the limit of the source of the world, it made the edifying light here useless. For Jiang Chen's flames on the other hand, it is without a doubt the greatest bane of the Dark Generation.

In this scenario, the old man wouldn't be able to use all of his strength given the fact that he was suppressed, let alone defeat Jiang Chen.

Bang

The True Dragon Palm seal collided with the old man's black palm. The old man's palm was instantly pulverised, he was pushed away from the scene. His arm was torn off from his shoulder. He let out a shriek of pain when the flames touched his skin. It was like a bone ulcer that couldn't be simply gotten rid off by a few simple swings.

Jiang Chen moved forward. He stretched his dragon claw, grabbed the old man's neck and lifted him up. The old man

struggled like a chick that had fallen into Jiang Chen's fetter.

Dark Liuyun who was trying to get to his feet had his face turned ugly. He couldn't believe what he had just seen. He knew too well how powerful the old man was for he had already been with him for a long time. Other than his father and another Seventh Grade Minor Saint elder, this old man was certainly ranked third in Dark Mulberry City. Despite his powerful strength, his attack couldn't do any harm to Jiang Chen and was controlled by his enemy instead.

“Stop! Jiang Chen, don't forget where you are. This is our prefecture. My father would certainly sense the combat waves and movements here. You will be finished!”

Dark Liuyun sounded grim.

“*Jie* *Jie* (chuckling) I have already placed an inescapable net in this compound. No one outside would be able to sense anything here even if I used a world-shaking attack. The moment you step into the door of this courtyard, you have already become a tortoise in a jar. No, I should not use the word “tortoise” to describe you because that would be an insult to the tortoise. I should describe you as a dog that is going to be beaten up so badly behind closed door. But it doesn't seem right either. Big Yellow would certainly bite me to death if I use the word dog to describe you. Ai... what a pity. I can't find a suitable living thing to describe a prick like you.”

Tyrant shook his head and sighed while spitting out an unceasing flow of words, but he still couldn't find the right word to describe

his character. Anyway, he felt contented knowing that this prick would be punished in no time.

“What did you just say?”

Dark Liuyun exclaimed. Tyrant’s sarcastic words didn’t enter his ears. He only heard “inescapable net” these two words. In fact, he was helpless in the formation field. Even him and the old man didn’t notice that there was a formation being set outside of this compound.

Dark Liuyun had a good reason to believe Tyrant’s words despite his doubts. The impact that Jiang Chen and the old man created just now was enough to shake not only their prefecture but the entire Dark Mulberry City. It would certainly alert the powerful experts to come over, but the present situation was as calm as usual. The powerful experts were nowhere to be seen.

“Release me! You lowly human! You dared to kill our people in our prefecture. You would all die for sure!”

The old man didn’t forget to threaten Jiang Chen while he was struggling . He hadn’t realised that he had just made a terrible mistake.

“Continue on your struggle. You will die slowly from this suffering.”

Jiang Chen’s voice was cold. His gaze was just like the gaze of a

devil king from the hell. He placed the old man in his power sphere and released his True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire. Both of these flames attacked like a blades, drilling into the old man's body. In an instant, the old man turned into a sea of fire.

“Argh... Argh... Argh...”

The people of Dark Generation was supposed to be immune to fire because they had an overpowering dark energy, but the old man finally knew that it was not entirely true. There were still flames that could burn them to a crisp. The old man was struggling intensely in the fire, he would let out wails of pain that could make people's hair stand on its end from time to time.

His voice was non-stop. He was suffering an endless torture in the sea of fire and was moving closer and closer to death. This was an entirely different experience from being killed straightaway. He was destined to suffer an endless pain until Jiang Chen give him a quick death.

...

Chapter 814 - Not Letting Go Anyone

A powerful Sixth Grade Minor Saint was howling crazily in the sea of fire but was still very much alive. Dark Liuyun who was watching it from the very start could already feel his soul being trapped in the hell.

The howl lasted for another ten minutes or so before dying off. He was burned to death. All but his ashes forever vanished from the world.

“Jiang Chen, you are merely a lowly and despicable human and you dare to plot against me?!”

Dark Liuyun shouted at Jiang Chen.

“Haha! You are seriously making me laugh. You still have the courage to say that I’m despicable? You wouldn’t face such an ending if you didn’t have any evil intentions towards us. Do you know what this is called in Buddha’s teachings? It is karma. When you do bad things, it would eventually turn around and smite you. Today, we are using the cycle of karma to teach you a lesson. If you die today, it is because of the evil seeds that you have planted.”

Tyrant laughed for a second before he switched his tone, as if he was the principal and Dark Liuyun was a bad kid. However, Tyrant’s remarks were frowned upon by Jiang Chen and Dan King. ‘When you do bad things, it would eventually turn around and smite you?’ They wondered if this was really the sayings of Buddha or just Tyrant’s own remark.

“Jiang Chen, for plotting against me in my prefecture, you are finished!.”

Dark Liuyun gave his last threat before turning into a black shadow to escape.

Jiang Chen would need to facepalm if Dark Liuyun could escape under such a situation. His five elemental sphere was faster. It caught Dark Liuyun and pulled him back.

Dong

Dark Liuyun’s body fell to the ground heavily, creating a large pit on the ground. This was because Jiang Chen exerted too much force. It caused Dark Liuyun’s head to spin and spurt blood.

“You won’t have a chance to escape in front of me. You are just an insect. What’s there to be proud of being an insect?”

Jiang Chen’s heartless comment had insulted Dark Liuyun’s pride. Before, he was the one who scolded people and uttered this sentences. Today, he was the one being scolded instead. Before, he was the one who plotted against other people. Once he had locked on a girl, she could never escape his fingertips. If he wanted someone dead, whether it was the people of Dark Generation or any human, they would all die. This kind of situation didn’t even occur in his dreams.

Dark Liuyun wasn't a fool. As a matter of fact, he had already sensed Jiang Chen's extraordinary power. He knew it when the Sixth Grade Minor Saint alchemist asked for his opinion. But that wasn't enough to tell that Jiang Chen, a mere Third Grade Minor Saint would have such an astonishing power.

He perceived the difference between him and Jiang Chen to be the distance between heaven and earth. The situation was really disadvantageous to him. He would meet the same result as the old man if he continued to resist. He could never run away as the entire compound was sealed by a formation. As he didn't want to die yet, the only thing he could do right now was to beg for mercy.

“Jiang Chen, you can't kill me. You won't obtain any benefits from killing me. My father would never forgive if you do that. I know that it was all my fault. I would apologize to you now. In fact, you have already gained more than what you expected by killing so many of my men and destroying my Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. If you spared my life, I promise to handsomely reward you. I know that you humans need True Meta Stones. I have a great amount of high grade True Meta Stone here. You can take as much as you like.”

Dark Liuyun chose a compromise. As long as Jiang Chen wasn't a fool, he would understand his underlying meaning. Jiang Chen should know the consequences of killing him because this was the Void Triangular Domain after all. He was sure that Jiang Chen would take the deal if his offer was attractive enough.

“Take out the True Meta Stones that you have first, to show your sincerity.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Jiang Chen, you should know that I would not carry those useless things given my prestigious identity. There is a vault created for the True Meta Stone in the prefecture. I could go in there whenever I want with my identity.”

Dark Liuyun said.

Jiang Chen nodded. Dark Liuyun wasn't lying. It was true that True Meta Stone was useless towards their kind. Naturally, a prince would never carry such an item with him unless he wanted to work out.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen moved all of a sudden. He appeared before Dark Liuyun with a sway and struck out a palm seal that sealed his cultivation. Now, Dark Liuyun was under Jiang Chen's full control.

“Jiang Chen, what are you doing? You just sealed my cultivation.”

Dark Liuyun's face changed.

“I have many ways to obtain the True Meta Stones. You must die

but before that, I still need you to do something for me.”

Jiang Chen said coldly.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

Pa

Before Dark Liuyun could finish his word, Jiang Chen’s palm was sent over, slapping half of his face, mutilating it. Some of his teeth flew out of his mouth.

“From now on, I suggest you to not speak without my permission. Don’t ever make a single sound, remember that I have thousands of ways to make you suffer.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. His eyes were like the eyes of a soul reaper. The coldness in his eye gave Dark Liuyun the feeling that he had fallen into a cave of ice. His soul was shivering. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t joking around so he decided to keep his mouth shut this time. He still had some hope that he would escape Jiang Chen’s grip as long as he was still alive, they were still in the prefecture after all.

“Brother Chen, why don’t we kill him now?”

Yan Chenyu sounded colder than Jiang Chen.

“He is still useful to me. I have promised those girls that I would seek vengeance on their offenders. I want to eliminate those who were involved in torturing them over the three years to fulfill the girls’ wishes.”

Jiang Chen replied in a flat tone.

The three of them understood the reason behind Jiang Chen’s action. It seemed like Dark Liuyun wasn’t the only one who sexually assaulted them, his filthy friends were also involved. They too had to die for their heartless actions. Dark Liuyun was the only one who knew where to find them.

“Father, Xiao Yu and Tyrant, the three of you should leave Dark Mulberry City first. You can head to any location. I would refine a messenger talisman to contact you all when the matter in Dark Mulberry City is resolved.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Brother Chen, I will be with you.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“No, you can’t. We would easily be noticed when we are together. Later, the people of Dark Generation would certainly hunt us. I’m afraid that at that time, we won’t have a place to hide in the entire Void Triangular Domain, let alone go to the King City. I can complete this task swiftly and unnoticeably. After that, I would

join you all at the major trading event.”

Jiang Chen said.

Dan King and Tyrant exchanged glances after hearing what he said. According to their understanding of Jiang Chen, he is certainly planning on creating a major event that would affect the entire Dark Mulberry City. They believed that Jiang Chen is definitely capable of doing that.

They could clearly see that Jiang Chen is nursing an extreme anger in his heart. He was just waiting for the right time to release all of his fury. Everything that Dark Liuyun did privately was just way too ruthless and heartless. All of them agreed that he must definitely suffer the harshest punishment.

“Alright, we will leave for now. Chen Er, be careful.”

Dan King patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

“Don’t worry about it.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He already had a plan in mind. He was going to turn this city into ruins and obtain a huge benefit at the same time.

given their current strength, it wasn’t a hard thing to leave the city without anyone noticing. The city guards were too weak to sense the movement of the Minor Saints. As for the experts of the

prefecture, who would have thought that someone would dare to mess around in the prefecture?

Jiang Chen darted Dark Liuyun a glance after the trio left, and said. “You have to answer all of my questions honestly. Don’t even try to lie to me. I will cut off a part of your body every time you do. I will begin by cutting off your genitals.”

Jiang Chen intentionally looked at Dark Liuyun’s bottom, it frightened him to death. For a man, especially a lascivious devil, they would lose everything once their reproductive organ was detached from their body. He had no reason to believe that Jiang Chen was joking. Jiang Chen was a man who is more ruthless than him.

“Let me ask you. What is the total number of people to have entered the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion for the past three years?”

Jiang Chen asked. His eyes were like those of a vicious demon, staring steadily at Dark Liuyun, causing him to exude cold sweat. It seemed that he had no choice but to tell the truth. He would instantly be detected by Jiang Chen’s eyes if he attempted to lie and that would lead to an endless suffering. Dark Liuyun wanted to keep his life, as long as he was still alive, he still got a chance to be spared.

“Twe...twelve.”

Dark Liuyun answered.

Hong

After hearing this number, a fiery bellow exploded from his vocal cord. This was a group of animals, no, they were worse than animals. Jiang Chen was holding himself back from slapping Dark Liuyun to death. He gritted his teeth and said. “including you, it would be thirteen.”

“Yes.”

Dark Liuyun didn’t dare to deny.

Jiang Chen had made up his mind. He would annihilate the entire Dark Mulberry City but before that, he had to eliminate those twelve people first. He wanted to kill them one by one so that the girls could see their sexual assaulters being killed in front of them. None of these filthy devils deserve a pleasant ending. Vengeance must be taken so that the girls could finally rest in peace.

“Are they all in Dark Mulberry City?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yes, they are my friends. They are the sons of the rich family in our city.”

Dark Liuyun said. He didn’t dare to show a single delay in his response. He had never felt such a domineering aura coming from

a Third Grade Minor Saint, it was an aura that shivered his soul.

“Let’s go. Bring me to find them, one by one.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone.

...

Chapter 815 - A Bloody Lesson

The night in Void Triangular Domain was truly dark. The coldness in the air gave visitors from other worlds an uncomfortable sensation. Two silhouettes suddenly appeared above a mansion, without causing any ripples in the air, as though they were spectres that had fully integrated with the void.

These two silhouettes were Jiang Chen and Dark Liuyun. Currently, he was being controlled by Jiang Chen. In his opinion, Jiang Chen had become a very terrifying being. Despite being in his own city, Jiang Chen would certainly not give his father a chance to save him.

“This is one of the rich families in our city. Dark Huiguang and his two brothers are from the same family.”

Dark Liuyun pointed at the mansion below and said.

“Three brothers, huh? It seems like the young princes of Dark Generation have such a disgusting hobby. Truly despicable.”

Jiang Chen glanced at Dark Liuyun. The three of them originated from one rich family. They must've been a frequent customer to his Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. There was really no reason for such people to continue on living.

“Let's move. We have to find them. Don't ever try to play tricks on me because they are of no use in my power sphere. It would only bring endless pain. I am the only one who can hear you, no

one else would be able to hear it, even if you shout.”

Jiang Chen sounded frigid, but it was also despairing for Dark Liuyun. He had been constantly thinking of how to escape, but none of them had seemed to work.

“Dark Huiguang’s residence is over there.”

Dark Liuyun pointed his finger at a position. It was a peaceful and splendid-looking courtyard. It was brightly lit, despite the darkness of the night.

Jiang Chen made a sway and rushed towards it.

Presently, three young men were sitting around a table, drinking and chatting about things related to women.

“Big brother, those misses in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion have been our toys for three years, it’s time to find other girls to replace them.”

“That’s right. Now that the Void Triangular Domain is opened once again, I believe that prince Liuyun would certainly not miss this good opportunity. We would be able to enjoy new toys when he finds better quality girls.”

“Agreed. I have to admit, those girls are a lot better than the girls of our generation. Haha...”

The three of them were drinking wine while talking about obscene topics. None of these words had escaped Jiang Chen's ears.

"The three of them are present."

Dark Liuyun said.

"This is better than what I had expected."

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. It seemed like he lucky this time. They had just saved him a lot of time. They must have a lot of common interests, to be able to sit down in the middle of the night and chit-chat. There was a huge difference if you compared their cultivation with Dark Liuyun's. Two of them were First Grade Minor Saint and the other was a Second Grade Minor Saint.

Swoosh

Two men appeared suddenly, right next to the table. One was a youth in white while the other was a man in purple. This man in purple looked pitiful. There were wounds all over his body and half of his face was mutilated.

The three of them were stunned. They have never expected a visitor to casually come in the middle of the night. Although Dark Liuyun looked in a bad shape because of being beaten up, the three of them had no problem recognizing him.

“Brother Liuyun, what happened to you?”

Dark Huiguang stood up from his seat and asked.”

“Who are you?”

Another prince pointed at Jiang Chen and shouted.

“The person who wants you dead.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were cold. His five elemental sphere had covered them all up. Their faces instantly changed when they felt a shapeless pressure working against their bodies from all directions, immobilizing them.

“Who are you? Do you have any idea what you are doing?”

“Son of a b*tch! You are emanating human Qi. This is Dark Mulberry City. You would certainly die for attacking us.”

The three of them howled in anger. Jiang Chen got a little annoyed by their useless threatening words. It seemed as if these three guys were seriously lacking in IQ. If Jiang Chen dared to touch even Dark Liuyun, what more them?

Hu *Hu*

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time. Flames rushed out of him, like sharp blades, piercing through their bodies. They didn't die immediately. They were blanketed by a sea of fire. Their painful wails rang out continuously. It was like what the old man faced before he died.

“Let me explain why all of you would die. My name is Jiang Chen, and I am here to avenge the girls of the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion.”

Jiang Chen said coldly.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

The three men's wails lasted for several minutes, before being incinerated into ashes. The mansion wasn't affected at all. Plus, this courtyard was a private place that no other people would come to, except the three brothers.

Jiang Chen brought Dark Liuyun along and headed for another target after incinerating three of them.

Dark Liuyun was shocked, the image of the three brothers was still playing in his head. Now, he realised that Jiang Chen had just become a bloodthirsty devil king. He could already imagine the fate that he would face in the end.

Three had died out of the twelve. There were nine more left. Judging by Jiang Chen's speed, he would finish them off in no

time.

When they came to another mansion, they straightaway barged into a prince's room. It was full of sexy wallpapers and drawings. However, there were people on the bedroom.

A man and a girl of Dark Generation were engaging in some sensual activity. The sudden intrusion of the two had caused the man on the bed to be furious whereas the girl remained indifferent.

Unfortunately, as soon as the man jumped out from his bed, he was turned into a blood mist by a slap, he didn't even know who the intruder was. The entire room lingered with a nose-stinging stench of blood.

“Argh...”

The girl shouted. She looked at Jiang Chen in fear as her body shivered.

“All the people of Dark Generation should die.”

Jiang Chen was cruel. A light shot out cutting the woman's head off. He then continued to another location with Dark Liuyun's guidance.

Tonight was a disaster to all the princes of the wealthy families in the city. The city had turned into a hell of slaughtering. There

would be blood wherever Jiang Chen went. It only took ten minutes to kill the twelve princes. None of them were left with a body or a body part.

This was the revenge of the humans. This was the way Jiang Chen fulfilled his vengeance. He wanted to teach these pricks a bloody lesson.

“Ying Er, I have already avenged you all. I will leave this Dark Liuyun as the last to kill. You all can rest in peace now.”

Jiang Chen looked at the black sky and said in a sad tone.

The current Dark Liuyun was so frightened that his soul had almost leaped out of his body. His eyes had already lost its usual radiance. He had just witnessed Jiang Chen’s ruthlessness. One should know that those were the princes of the rich families. There was at least one powerful expert in each of those mansions but none of them were alerted.

...

Chapter 816 - The Mine of True Meta Stone

Everyone who was involved in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion was eliminated. A part of Jiang Chen's anger had been released through eliminating them. Of course, the matter wouldn't just end here. Since he had come all the way from Saint Origin World, he must ensure that the Void Triangular Domain would descend into chaos.

Dark Liuyun wasn't killed yet. Jiang Chen had kept him alive as he needed to get the benefits that he mentioned just now.

“Jiang...Jiang Chen, you have already killed all of them. I believe that your vengeance have already subsided. I could guarantee your benefits if you spare me my life.”

Dark Liuyun said while shivering. No one in the world wanted to die. The better the life of a person, the more fearful the person becomes towards death. Dark Liuyun was a young lord of a prefecture, a highly prestigious person in his city. He had never imagined that a day like this would come in his life.

“Let's move, bring me to the vault of the True Meta Stone.”

Jiang Chen said plainly.

Dark Liuyun's expression changed. He could feel Jiang Chen's strong desire for targeting the vault of the prefecture. He knew that was the last bargaining chip that he could use, he would certainly lose if he brought Jiang Chen there.

“Jiang Chen, the entire vault is sealed by my father. Only my father could enter it. You just have to let me go and I will ask my father to open the vault for you to enter. At that time, you can take however many True Meta Stones you like.”

Dark Liuyun said.

“Bring me to the vault, I will not repeat myself another time.”

Jiang Chen looked at Dark Liuyun coldly, Dark Liuyun didn't dare to look him in the eye. After knowing that his persuasion had failed, he quickly moved, leading Jiang Chen to the direction of the vault. Dark Liuyun chuckled in his heart silently even though he was still in Jiang Chen's custody. As a matter of fact, there was a seal planted by his father around the vault. If Jiang Chen entered the vault forcefully, he would be in contact with the seal. After that, his father would be alerted and he would be saved.

It was a pity that Dark Liuyun had forgotten the incidents in the courtyard earlier. Jiang Chen had set a formation outside the courtyard himself, to make sure that the noises and movements would be hidden by the formation. As such, it was naïve for him to think that an ordinary seal could stop a grandmaster in formation.

Similar to the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion, the vault of the prefecture was hidden underground. It was a very huge underground chamber. With his earth soul, he could drill into the ground without going through the normal passageway.

Dark Liuyun was shocked when he saw Jiang Chen's uncanny ability. He regretted plotting against such a crazy and ruthless human being. Why did he go and provoke such a disastrous being? His fate would not have ended up like this if he didn't intentionally provoked Jiang Chen.

“This is the vault.”

Dark Liuyun pointed at the four-meter-tall thick rocky door. He knew that this was the only way to get into the vault and it was completely sealed by his father. Anyone who tried to break into it would be detected instantly by his father.

Furthermore, it would also be useless if one tried to destroy the seal. His father would know if the seal is destroyed. In other words, Jiang Chen's movement would be exposed as long as he entered. Now, Dark Liuyun felt a glimmer of hope in his heart. He believed his father, a peak Seventh Grade Minor Saint would be able to rescue him from Jiang Chen's evil grasp.

Dark Liuyun looked at Jiang Chen, he was curious about what Jiang Chen would do to overcome this obstacle.

“Dark Liuyun, I already knew what you are thinking but unfortunately, you are fated to be disappointed.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Dark Liuyun. Then he vanished with a swoosh and penetrated the rocky door.

“What? This is impossible!”

Dark Liuyun exclaimed. He could sense that Jiang Chen didn't affect any of the seals as he entered through that door. It showed him how harmless and useless his father's seal was.

Jiang Chen didn't mind Dark Liuyun's astonishment because he too, was astonished by the glittering and dazzling fist-sized True Meta Stone that was piled up into three small hills.

“There are all high grade True Meta Stones. I think there are at least 50 million of them here.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. He couldn't help but lick his lips. There was an excessive amount of fortune stored here. Besides the stones, there were also some other herbs and unusual treasures here. This must be the things that they traded from the humans three years ago. It seemed like they were going to run out of it soon.

Well, Jiang Chen was uninterested in those herbs. He only wanted the True Meta Stones now because one stone was equivalent to a Saint Rank Restoration pill. 50 million of them was truly a shocking amount.

“You are right. There are exactly 50 million high grade True Meta Stones here. Take all of them with you and let me go.”

Dark Liuyun said.

Jiang Chen ignored Dark Liuyun. He grabbed with his big palm, followed by a consecutive sounds of ‘Hua La’ as uncountable amount of True Meta Stones flowed crazily into Jiang Chen’s body like a tidal wave. His body was like a bottomless pit that couldn’t be filled.

With his current cultivation, his Qi Sea had already become as large as a small world. It was even large enough to fit hundreds of mountains.

The entire vault became spacious and empty in just a few blinks. Jiang Chen also kept those herbs into his Qi Sea. The emptiness in the vault gave Dark Liuyun the urge to spurt blood. He didn’t know what his father would do if he found out about this.

“Jiang Chen, you have already obtained what you needed. I suggest you to release me now. You won’t gain anything by killing me.”

Dark Liuyun said.

“Since I have already obtained what I needed, your life is worthless to me now. I will kill you right away.”

Jiang Chen revealed a violent smile at the corner of his mouth. Dark Liuyun could feel Jiang Chen’s killing intent. His face turned drastically pale and said at once. “Do...don’t kill me. I am still useful to you.”

“Uh? Tell me about it. I want to see whether it is true.”

Jiang Chen kept his Qi and gave an expectant look.

“These ores originated from the land of Void Triangular Domain. The unique feature of these ores is that they can absorb light energy before turning into True Meta Stone. The reason for our unending supply of True Meta Stone is the special ore mines. A thousand mile away from Dark Mulberry City is a small scale ore mine. We mined all of the True Meta Stones there. If you promise to let me go, I could bring you there. According to my knowledge, it is still possible to mine around 50 million of them despite its small size.”

Dark Liuyun quickly explained hoping that he could win Jiang Chen’s mercy. One should know that the ore mine was hidden on the surface. Adding the fact that the World Origin was connected to it, any ore mine would look as ordinary as the summit of a mountain. Only the people of Dark Generation could locate them. Any outsiders wouldn’t be able to find it.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled after hearing this. He had already guessed that some kind of ore mine should be the source of the True Meta Stones. Now, it seemed his guess was really on point. How could he miss this opportunity to visit the ore mine?

“Bring me there now. I will consider sparing your life if I am in a good mood.”

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more effort in negotiating with Dark Liuyun. He hauled Dark Liuyun along and vanished from the empty vault.

Dark Liuyun actually had another plan in mind at the ore mine. This would be his last chance to escape with his life. The ore mine was fully controlled by Dark Mulberry City, there were experts and guards on duty there. Anyone there could instantly send a distress signal to the prefecture should anything bad happen. So Jiang Chen could not avoid this unless he could kill all of them the second he arrived. His father would be able to sense it for Jiang Chen would certainly create a big commotion this time. Given his father's strength, it would only take him a few blinks to reach the ore mine from the prefecture.

Jiang Chen and Dark Liuyun had reached their destination. There was a small hill ahead. It didn't look anything special, but this was certainly one of the ore mines in the domain. Jiang Chen used his Great Soul Derivation Technique but didn't find anything extraordinary about it. It seemed like it wouldn't be an easy thing for the humans to find an ore mine here. Suddenly, he thought of Big Yellow, what if that dog was here with him, the task would have been easier.

“This is it.”

Dark Liuyun said.

Jiang Chen raised his head and looked at the dark sky. His eyes shot out two rays of cold light. He extended his arms to feel the chilling wind in the dark and said. “It's time to put an end to this.

The next moment would be the last step of the plan. Tonight is fated to be an extraordinary night.”

Jiang Chen finished his words and his body began to transform. Cracking sounds were heard. In a few blinks of time, his body grew a fold larger. He was now a half human half dragon. A pair of blood-red dragon wings flapped, oozing with a cold light and his sharp claws exuded a blood-red shimmering light. His eyes looked like those ferocious devils from hell.

Hiss

Dark Liuyun sucked in a cold air upon seeing this sudden transformation. He was shocked. It was hard for him to relate this dragon man to Jiang Chen. In fact, this was Jiang Chen’s plan just now. After telling his friends to get away from here, he would begin a night of massacre with his human-dragon form. The most they could remember would only be his human-dragon appearance, they wouldn’t know that it was him. As such, it wouldn’t ruin their trip to the King City.

...

Chapter 817 - Violent Massacre

Dark Liuyun could see that it was a shape-shifting technique but he didn't know why he decided to use this technique. Unless he was planning to use this against the experts in the ore mine, it was totally unnecessary.

He was smart enough to know that Jiang Chen was planning something but he didn't have a clue what it could be. Furthermore, Jiang Chen terrified him and send tingles from the bottom of his spine. He had never seen such an abnormal human being in his life.

There was a big entrance to the ore mine but Jiang Chen didn't use it. He just made a very simple move. He floated above the ore mine and sent a violent punch below.

No one had any idea how powerful the punch was, but the surface of the hill-like ore mine was instantly crushed, leaving behind a large pit. Now, the mineral ores inside became visible from the outside. The surface of the big rock was glittering brightly in the night. It was a very big bulk of ore attached to the mountain. It would require plenty of effort to reduce the size of this rock into a fist-sized True Meta Stone. However, all of these were as effortless as lifting a feather to Jiang Chen. In fact, if this big rock was broken into smaller pieces, it would be harder to suck it into his body than this large rock itself.

Jiang Chen immediately stuck out his roughly three-hundred-meter large dragon claw that was condensed by Yuan Force, and grab the entire ore mine in his claw.

“Who is it? Trying to act atrociously in our ore mine?””

“Someone is attacking the ore mine. That person is absolutely courting death!”

“Not good, the ore mine is moving. Someone is trying to bring the entire ore mine away. Who the hell is doing this?”

Sounds of exclamation was heard from below. A second later, numerous black silhouettes flew out of the mine one after another. In just a few blinks, over a hundred of them had gathered above the mine. They were all powerful experts ranging from Combat Emperors to Minor Saints. There were roughly 14 Minor Saints. The leader among them was an elder with a powerful cultivation – Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

These people were the experts and guards whom Dark Liuyun mentioned. In normal days, the people here would be lesser than half of their current number. The security had been increased when the Void Triangular Domain was opened.

Dark Liuyun was stupefied. He didn’t expect that a very careful Jiang Chen would suddenly create such a huge commotion. He initially had planned to send a message to his father himself, but it seemed like it was already unnecessary. His father should just step down as the lord of the city if he couldn’t sense such a big movement.

“Stop! Where did this wild man came from? You dare to touch

our ore mine?!”

The elder saw that the ore mine below was covered by a blood-red dragon claw, a human-dragon that illuminated a blood-red light was trying to lift the entire hill. All the guards widened their eyes in awe, as if they had just seen something unbelievable in a TV show. How could a person be bold enough to seize their ore mine? Does he want to die so badly? According to the history of the domain, there were no humans that dared to seize their ore mine before, even if they were considered very powerful, but today, they had encountered a frenzied human who was bold enough to take their ore mine away by force. This was without a doubt despicable.

Hong Long Long

The mountain and land was shaking. Jiang Chen no longer tried to conceal his actions. The mountain like ore below was about to be detached from the ground.

“Third uncle, save me.”

Dark Liuyun shouted at the elder. He only viewed this guards and experts as cannon fodders, he had already witnessed how Jiang Chen easily disposed a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. If he was sensible enough, he would have reminded his people not to approach Jiang Chen until the experts of prefecture arrive. Unfortunately, he was overwhelmed by his instinct to survive. Although he had been held captive by Jiang Chen not long ago, he felt like he was always on the edge of falling into hell at any time.

The elder was stunned. It took him a while to recognize him before his face changed drastically. “Liuyun.”

When he saw Dark Liuyun’s miserable condition, his rage erupted from his body, an outsider dared to attack and held the prince of the city captive.

Dark Liuyun wanted to speak more but his voice was stuck in Jiang Chen’s power sphere. Now, his words could longer be heard even if he shouted with all of his might.

Hong Long

In a few hundred mile radius of that area, the mountain shook as soon as the ore was lifted from the ground. Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered. Although this wasn’t a very large ore mountain, it was like what Dark Liuyun had said, the ore could still produce around 50 million True Meta Stone. Adding the 50 million from the vault, he would gain 100 million True Meta Stone this time. Such a large fortune was truly too shocking, even to the eight families.

“Stop!”

“Stop him!”

A lot of the guards exclaimed when the mountain was about to fall under the outsider’s hands. They finally couldn’t take it anymore. Everyone launched their attack. Over a hundred people had surrounded Jiang Chen, making a large circle.

Jiang Chen remained composed didn't change even when he was surrounded by so many of them. He just totally ignored them. The mountain that was in mid-air was kept into his Qi Sea with a swoosh.

“Bastard! He has taken the ore mountain! Kill him!”

“Be careful! Don't hurt the prince!”

Some people started yelling. The current scene was too shocking for everyone. Guarding the ore mountain was just a very simple task in normal days because no one would dare to attack them unless they were at war with another city. This was unlikely because their relationship with the neighbouring city was quite close and the two of them had their own ore mountain. So they would never interfere in each other's business. There had never been a conflict between two cities before.

Hong Hong

Everyone began to release their Qi. Those Minor Saints had summoned their Combat Weapons that created by humans but these were just ordinary Emperor Weapons. Perhaps this kinds of weapon was strong enough in Void Triangular Domain.

“All of you would have to die.”

Jiang Chen sounded cold-blooded. He would never pity the

people of Dark Generation. His five elemental sphere had already encompassed all of them the Combat Emperor or Minor Saints alike before they even struck.

“What is happening? I feel like I have been confined.”

“This is a very powerful monster. My entire body is immobilized.”

“Why is this happening? Why can’t I control my body? I am a Fifth Grade Minor Saint!”

.....

Everyone started to panicked the moment the five element sphere blanketed them, they had lost control of their movements.

“Eternal Immortal Wind.”

Jiang Chen wouldn’t give them a chance. The immortal wind had turned into a shape of a dragon with sharp winds resembling blade-like scales. In this instant, the wind had engulfed them all.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Wails of pain resounded throughout the sky. The Eternal Immortal Wind was like a meat grinder that pulverized them instantly. The Dark Spirit left behind automatically flew towards

Jiang Chen.

It was just a few blinks of time, all of them were killed, except the Sixth Grade Minor Saint. Not a single remain was found in the scene. Presently, half of the Sixth Grade Minor Saint's body was already badly injured as the wind was just too strong.

“No...how can he be this powerful? Argh...”

The Sixth Grade Minor Saint turned into a blood mist and vanished completely in the wind. Over a hundred of them disappeared in the void just like that, there was no corpse left behind.

The Eternal Immortal Wind was a very powerful technique of Nan Bei Chao. It was an inherited immortal art that Nan Bei Chao acquired in the Immortal Possessive Mountain. It was powerful enough to instantly kill a Seventh Grade Minor Saint even if Jiang Chen was the one who used it.

Hua La

Then, he withdrew the wind and the night returned itself to its usual calmness. A sharp stench of blood lingered in the atmosphere. But not even a single corpse could be found on the premises. Dark Liuyun who was standing beside Jiang Chen had lost all of his hope and was in shock. This was a scene that he would never forget for the rest of his life. Over a hundred of them were killed instantly by the terrifying wind. He had never seen anything like this before.

Hong Long

A few seconds after Jiang Chen killed all of these men, a powerful Qi of seven to eight people emerged in the direction of the city like a flash. Jiang Chen knew that they were the experts of the prefecture. Jiang Chen would go and find them if they weren't coming. His next target was to start a clean-up in this city.

The Qi was from the eight of them. There were two leaders, a middle-aged man and an old man. They had the strongest cultivation – Seventh Grade Minor Saint. The other six were all Sixth Grade Minor Saints. These were all the higher ups in the city. In fact, they were not a threat to Jiang Chen at all.

The eight of them were furious when they saw the scene and the large pit in the ore mountain. Their expression changed instantly when they saw Dark Liuyun being held captive by Jiang Chen.

“Liuyun.”

The lord of prefecture called his son's name. Dark Liuyun was the son that he loved the most, he was his only child and was so precious to him. Today his son was hurt by an outsider. It made his rage erupt from his head.

“I don't know which world you are from but I am sure that our city hasn't offended your kind. Release my child now!”

The lord of prefecture bellowed. When he saw Jiang Chen's human-dragon form, he assumed that Jiang Chen was from some kind of demon race.

...

Chapter 818 - It's Just the Beginning

Dark Liuyun's emotion was stirred up when he saw his father, it was as though he had seen his true saviour. He almost dropped a tear and shouted, but no one outside of Jiang Chen's power sphere could hear him.

"You aren't any better than your son for not educating him. Today, all of you would have to die here."

Jiang Chen looked at the lord and said.

"Bastard! How dare you talk to the City Lord so rudely?!"

"He has harmed our prince, killed our guards and has stolen our ore mine. City Lord, let's finish this audacious human now!"

.....

The anger of the experts started to soar up to the sky. Void Triangular Domain was Dark Generation's territory. Dark Mulberry City had never been attacked before until now. The actions that this human-dragon did had touched their bottom line. It was truly unacceptable. He needed to be eliminated in order to restore the dignity of Dark Mulberry City.

"Trying to act arrogant when you are merely a Third Grade Minor Saint? You are courting death!"

The City Lord was angered. He immediately struck with his palm. In his opinion, a Third Grade Minor Saint would certainly be under his full control. He had locked onto Jiang Chen. The strike that he made would not only restrain Jiang Chen but also save his son.

Unfortunately, that was just his thoughts.

He thought that he could immediately restrain Jiang Chen with his strength, but it was far from the truth. Jiang Chen dodged the restraining force with a simple sway. Then he hurled Dark Liuyun outwards.

It all happened in a split second. Dark Liuyun who had lost his cultivation collided with his father's attack. It was imaginable what would happen next.

Bang

“Father, argh...”

Dark Liuyun let out a wail before he disintegrated and died instantly, like the others before him, leaving not a single remain behind aside from a Dark Spirit in which Jiang Chen immediately kept.

“Liuyun.”

The City Lord howled wildly like a mad man after seeing what

happened. He had just killed his own son.

“Haha! You are really a being that has no conscience. Did you know that even a cruel tiger would not kill its own cub? You have just pulverized your own son into tiny particles, not even a part of the corpse is left. Sure enough, you are cold-blooded. Just now, I promised Dark Liuyun that I will release him after I obtained the ore mine. I didn’t expect that he would still die, and he died under his father’s hands. Haha...”

Jiang Chen started to laugh wildly. The way Dark Liuyun died was probably the cruelest way of dying. Only the Heaven knew what Dark Liuyun thought before he died. This type of death was a hundred times more cruel than being burnt to death. It destroyed all of his hopes instantly. Ever since he was held captive by Jiang Chen, he had always been planning to get his father to save him, he believed that his father would be able to defeat Jiang Chen. Now, his father was finally here but he still died under the hands of his father. How ironic was that? Although the root of all of these was Jiang Chen, the fact still remained that he died under his father’s attack.

The one who felt the agony right now must be the City Lord. Different kinds of emotions, anger, hatred, sadness, regret and many more overwhelmed his soul with every second, causing him to fall into a frenzied state. Both of his eyes stared at Jiang Chen hatefully. He knew that all of this happened because of Jiang Chen and it was all his fault, otherwise he wouldn’t his kill own son with his attack.

“Kill, kill him now! No! Capture him alive! I would make him

suffer all kinds of torture to avenge my son, Dark Liuyun.”

The City Lord was infuriated and clamoured. Dark Liuyun’s death was mainly caused by this human-dragon.

The overall strength of two Seventh Grade Minor Saints and six Sixth Grade Minor Saints were overpowering but it was still not too powerful for Jiang Chen. Back when he annihilated the Heavenly Sect, the group of Minor Saints were even larger than this small group.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen moved. The movement of his steel-like dragon wings created a gust of blood-red whirlwind. Jiang Chen didn’t plan to let any of them go. He would take the initiative if his opponents wouldn’t.

Pu Chi *Pu Chi*

Two Sixth Grade Minor Saints wailed and were severed in half, they died instantly. His pair of dragon wings was like an indestructible weapon that was a lot stronger than any ordinary Minor Saint weapon. Using this kind of weapon to kill Sixth Grade Minor Saints was as easy as cutting melon.

“Not good. This demon is too powerful. Everyone, stick together!”

Not only did the City Lord failed to capture the human-dragon, they were attacked instead, causing two deaths as a result. He wasn't a fool, he could instantly see how powerful this dragonified human was when two Sixth Grade Minor Saints were killed so easily.

“Argh!” “Argh!” “Argh!” “Argh!”

However, the other four Sixth Grade Minor Saint were killed while the City Lord spoke these sentences. The way that he killed them was too cruel and eerie. Two of them were severed from the waist and the other two were killed with their skulls crushed by Jiang Chen's dragon claw.

It was only a few breaths of time. Now, the group only had two Seventh Grade Minor Saints left. Both of their faces changed dramatically. They looked at the terrifying human-dragon in disbelief. Despite their cultivation, they could still feel a shapeless pressure from him. Neither of them could kill six Sixth Grade Minor Saints in mere seconds.

“Dark World.”

The City Lord no longer dared to waste any time. He immediately launched his strongest attack. An image of a world appeared above his head. There was nothing inside except darkness. It gave anyone the feeling of heaviness and suffocation.

“Dark Swelling Tide.”

The other elder yelled and launched a violent dark wave. It came out like a boundless tidal wave with a dark force that let out howls. Then, a huge image of a giant monster with black scales that looked the king of darkness emerged behind the elder.

“It seems like my guess is really on point. This is the force from your World Origin. You all are just a bunch of monsters.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. The attacks from these two were one of the ultimate skills of the Dark Generation. Their attack would be stronger because it was night time now. Their attack would be enhanced by the dark energy around the atmosphere, making their attack deadlier than in the day time.

He was not really concerned about it because his body had a natural resistance against the dark force. Any dark force would eventually be suppressed by Jiang Chen’s fire.

“Eternal Immortal Wind, True Thunderfire, True Dragon Fire.”

Jiang Chen bellowed. A gust of wind rushed out of his body once more. This time, it was a lot stronger than before because it was integrated with the raging flames. It was the flames of thunder fire and true dragon fire. Now, it started to look like a shadow of a dragon and lightning, intensifying the atmosphere.

The Qi of both their ultimate skills dropped significantly when they sensed the formidable force of the flames and wind. It was like they had encountered their natural enemy.

“What kind of flame is this? How could it suppress our power?”

“Is it some kind of Heavenly Earth Flame? Our generation had never succumb to flames but this flame has the purest Yang energy. All of our strength would be significantly suppressed by these flames.”

Their faces instantly changed, but it wasn't their concern now. Although their opponent had suppressed their strength, their cultivation was still undeniably higher than their opponent. Their strongest attack still continued to charge towards Jiang Chen at the same time.

Jiang Chen's combined skills also launched forward and collided violently with the two dark attacks.

Hong Long Long

In an instant, thousands of miles across the mountains were destroyed, causing the sky and land to shake and quake. The supposedly dark sky turned unusually bright because of the flames. The destructive force of the wind had crushed all the mountains into powder. Everything were destroyed in its path.

The Dark World and Dark Swelling Tide were torn by the Eternal Immortal Wind. The two dark attacks couldn't even stand for a few seconds. The entire process was as simple as breaking a rotten piece of wood.

Wah *Wah*

The two of them spurted out successive mouthfuls of blood after being struck by the gale. They had lost all of their composure as a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Their bodies were cut by the sharp wind, making them shaky to even stand and would fall to the ground any time. Even if they were still alive now, they weren't very far from death. Their current condition wouldn't allow them to fight, as more than half of their combat strength has already been expended.

“Impossible! I absolutely don't believe this!”

The City Lord was shaking his head in disbelief. They were very confident of their own strength. How could a day like this arrive and knock on their doorstep?

Swoosh

With a sway, Jiang Chen appeared in front of the two. He used his sharp dragon claw to lift both of them by holding their skulls. He exerted a slight force and both of their heads snapped. Presently, all the experts, including the City Lord were already dead.

Jiang Chen was yet to stop after completing this. He turned to Dark Mulberry City. Given that such a big commotion has happened here, there would certainly be a continuous flow of bystanders who would want to come here and find out what happened.

“Like I said, the Dark Generation should never exist. I would ensure that their entire generation would disappear from this world. It would start from Dark Mulberry City.”

Jiang Chen’s dragon wings fluttered. He then turned into a blood-red light and shot straight into Dark Mulberry City. He would not only finish Dark Liuyun and the people related to him, but the entire Dark Generation. Dark Mulberry City would be the starting point of all these.

...

Chapter 819 - The Crisis for the Princes

This was destined to be an exceptional night, a night of bloodshed. There was a sudden wave of wind that blew right above Dark Mulberry City. It then became a cyclone that destroyed anything that it touched. All the nearby beings were ripped to shreds.

The next day, the entire Dark Mulberry City disappeared completely from the land of Void Triangular Domain. All the buildings were gone. What was only left now was the ruins. However, there was a hidden place for the people of Dark Mulberry City during emergency. There were still quite many of them who were still alive in this secret place. Those who were in the city, especially the rich families were destroyed along with the buildings. It seemed like the cyclone was only targeting the rich families.

A powerful cyclone like that had never struck the Void Triangular Domain before. The people were smart enough to know that this was an act of an outsider, a human. The way the human destroyed their city sent chills down their spine.

Someone saw a dragonified human dig out the entire ore mountain and kill the City Lord and his followers yesterday. He then continued to attack Dark Mulberry City with a storm, turning the city into ruins. However, not a single soul knew about this person's background.

It was a shocking news to the Dark Generation that the Dark Mulberry City was destroyed overnight. The incident had spread

across the Void Triangular Domain with the fastest speed. In fact, the domain was only half the size of any domain in the Divine Continent, except Western Domain. Thus, the amount of cities in this domain weren't that many. The destruction of a city was without a doubt an unprecedented event. Almost all of them were informed about this latest news in a very short period of time.

The gate of Void Triangular Domain had only opened for a day. Now, the neighbouring cities of Dark Mulberry City could already feel the threat of the crisis. They started to ask for reinforcements from the King City. According to the witness, the dragonified human was so powerful that even a Seventh Grade Minor Saint died under his hands.

The King City.

It was irrefutably larger. It was the largest and the most luxurious city of the Dark Generation, a grand city. The reason? it was because the city was inhabited by the imperial kinsmen. They were the true ruler of Void Triangular Domain. At this moment, plenty of imperial experts had gathered in the main hall of King City. The destruction of Dark Mulberry City had shaken all of them. Now, not even the King of the Dark Generation could sit calmly.

There was a middle-aged man with a black crown sitting in the hall. He had a physically strong body. His body exuded an aura of a powerful Qi. His cultivation was expectedly powerful – peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint. He didn't have a name. Everyone addressed him as the Dark King.

The Dark King was the king of the Dark Generation. Anyone who took the position of a king of the Dark Generation would be addressed as Dark King. The imperial system here was similar to the emperor of Martial Saint Dynasty. The Dark Generation was like a country and the country was ruled by a single ruler – the Dark King.

“This is despicable! That dragonman must be from either of the three worlds. The gateway has only been opened for a day. How could such an event take place in our domain? I suggest to close the gate immediately and cancel all of the trading event.”

A Ninth Grade Minor Saint said. Due to his imperial status, he had a prestigious identity in the Dark Generation. As a matter of fact, any Ninth Grade Minor Saint would be treated as the highest beings in the hierarchy status.

“No, we can’t. Our resources would not be enough for another three years. Plus, we have already mined a huge amount of True Meta Stones for the trade. We can’t cancel all the events because of this dragonman.”

Someone rebutted. In fact, they were the ones who gained the most everytime a trade happened. So none of them could afford to cancel the trading events on a whim.

“None of us know where the dragonman came from. It is very likely that he is from the demon race. The demon race of the Boundless and Black Yellow World isn’t that powerful. The only possibility is that this dragonman came from the Demon Race of the Saint Origin World. The overall strength of the Demon Race

could be compared to the seven families’.”

Someone guessed.

“That may not be entirely true. All the eight families have their own private passageway. Besides, there is still half a month left before the trading event. They won’t arrive here that early. It would take at least a few more days for them to arrive here. There isn’t a single movement that was detected in their private passageway as of yet. We should remove the possibility of the involvement of the Demon Race.”

Someone said.

“Dark King, in any case, the incident in Dark Mulberry City has never happened before in our history. Now, this would certainly leave a great insult in our history. This is obviously a challenge to our Dark Generation. We must find that dragonman by any means necessary.”

Someone said in a solemn tone.

Dark King waved his hand, implying all of them to keep silent.

“The trading event will not be cancelled because of the dragonman. I will not allow this tiny dragonman to cause a great turmoil in our soil. Pass the order to your subordinates, increase the security of all the cities and their awareness towards the dragonman. Also, send someone to Dark Mulberry City to find out

any clues about this dragonman.”

Dark King ordered.

It was logical to think that the dragonman would certainly conceal himself after destroying Dark Mulberry City, unless he wanted death for himself, given the tight security they had imposed in all the cities.

The next thing that happened would send the entire Void Triangular Domain into turmoil.

On the third day after the gate was opened, the dragonman reappeared after a day of silence. The vault of treasure in the prefecture of the two neighbouring cities of Dark Mulberry City had all been stolen. Besides that, there were a series of murder cases happening in these two cities. Every case involved a prince of a rich family. They were all princes with prestigious status and innate talents but was also extremely arrogant like Dark Liuyun. They also did some immoral activities with the females even during the day.

Now, those cities had fallen into chaos. All the people of Dark Generation started to get anxious about this mysterious dragonman. Although the citizens didn't actually see the dragonman commit theft and murdered those princes, they were still sure that it was the dragonman because there wouldn't be anyone who was bold enough to commit such a crime.

However, the result of the two cities were a lot better than the

Dark Mulberry City. They only suffered losses in the vault and a few princes of some rich families. The cities were still in good condition. These two cities had approximately the same strength as the army of Dark Mulberry City. Hence, the extra security wouldn't do much help to prevent Jiang Chen from massacring their people.

The group of people which was affected the most was the princes of all the other cities. They started to worry for their safety. They weren't fools. They have already realised the killing patterns of the dragonman. The demon wasn't just after their fortune but also the lives of these princes.

They had no clue why the dragonman would target them. They were involved in this crisis whether they liked it or not. Plus, the dragonman was untraceable and always hid himself in the dark. The empty vault could explain how powerful this dragonman's stealth ability was. No one could tell when that demon would strike them and take their lives.

...

Chapter 820 - All the Fortune Was Wanted

Dark Shadow City was considered an intermediate city out of all the cities in the domain. There were several Eighth Grade Minor Saints guarding it. A city as strong as this wouldn't fear any attacks. However, the destruction of Dark Mulberry City, the theft of treasure in the vault of the two cities and the deaths of the princes of the rich families had rung the warning bell in their city. They no longer dared to impose the usual patrolling system despite the city being guarded by high grade experts. Now, the Eighth Grade Minor Saints would constantly sweep their divine sense throughout the entire city, looking for any suspicious entities. They would act as soon as they found any suspicious person.

The ones who were worried the most were the princes of the rich families in the city. They were all in fact princes with exceptional talent but it scared the sh*t out of them when they thought about how those princes died in the two cities. Most of them refused to leave their door. They were accompanied by a few experts despite them staying home. They couldn't deny the fact that those princes died unnoticeably in their own homes. This made the dragonman look like a ruthless spectre that haunted them.

The gateway was already opened for more than a few days, and a lot of the big cities were already filled with different kinds of people from the three different worlds. They couldn't just chase these foreign visitors out of their cities. So, they needed to tighten their security so that they can hasten the detection the appearance of the dragonman in their cities if he so choose to come.

At the present moment, in one of the inns in Dark Shadow City, Dan King had booked an accommodation. The three of them were

crystal clear of what has happened these past three days. The others might not know who the dragonman was, except them.

Tyrant got very excited after learning the world-shaking actions that Jiang Chen had done. He regretted not having the chance to fight alongside Jiang Chen when he reached the city. Given his impatient personality, he must be suffering a lot for being restricted by their current situation. This made him look less like a monk of Buddha Sect, who supposed to be very calm and patient.

Yan Chenyu looked very composed. She would not be shocked even if Jiang Chen had created a heaven-and-earth shaking chaos, because in her heart, brother Chen was an almighty being. Furthermore, the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion built by Dark Liuyun really disgusted her. Her impression of the Dark Generation dropped drastically when she learned that plenty of princes here had that kind of lascivious hobby.

Dan King was the one who was trapped in anxiety among them. He had been here before and knew how scary the Dark Generation could be. Besides, this was their territory. The way Jiang Chen do things worried him a lot. An incident like this had never happened before in the history of the Dark Generation.

“I just remembered that little Chen was using his human-dragon form when he fought with Nan Bei Chao in Mysterious Domain. Although none of Dark Generation had seen this before, the people of Saint Origin World must have already known about this. Wouldn't his life be in danger when his identity is exposed?”

A sudden thought struck Tyrant which kick-started his anxiety

for Jiang Chen.

“Well, if I remembered correctly, this is not really a concern. Majority of the people from Saint Origin World are people from the Pure Land. Most likely, they will only know about Jiang Chen’s name because of the events in Mysterious Domain. Very few of them would know the details of the battle. Furthermore, it was just a recent event. Not many people knew about the battle in Western Domain. Also, the people of the Pure Land seldom cared about the matters of the other eight domains. I’m afraid that those who truly know about Jiang Chen’s true identity now are only three of us. This must be the reason why Jiang Chen acted so boldly. I have to say, his actions were very incisive. Nothing like this had ever happened before in the history of the Dark Generation.”

“Senior Dan King, why do you have a heart that is more compassionate than a monk like me? You should already know what happened in Dark Mulberry City. That Dark Liuyun tried to poison us using tea. If it wasn’t for little Chen’s observation, we would have fallen under his hands now. Can you imagine what would happen after that? And those dead girls in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. I don’t think there is only one Dark Liuyun and one Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion across the entire land of this domain. What’s the use of being so compassionate towards these heartless and evil generation?”

Tyrant acted like he was advising Dan King from the bottom of his heart. His impression of the Dark Generation crumbled after the incident of Dark Liuyun.

“Of course, I know about the bad things that the people of Dark

Generation have done, but they are the absolute master in this domain. The three cities that he attacked were the weakest cities of all. Now, he has infuriated the people of the Dark Generation, how could I not worry about him?”

Dan King sighed. He was not against Jiang Chen’s actions but he couldn’t wash away the worry that he had for him in his mind.

“Father, there is no need to be overly concerned. Brother Chen is capable of handling them.”

Yan Chenyu said with a smile. Her confidence in Jiang Chen exceeded even hers.

Dan King nodded. His confidence in Jiang Chen was boosted every time he recalled all of the things that Jiang Chen did back in Saint Origin World. Everything that he did was out of the ordinary. For example, he had ruled the four large domains and annihilated the Heavenly Sect. However, confidence wasn’t the same as concern. As Dan King had treated Jiang Chen like his own son, he didn’t want to see Jiang Chen got hurt. He was the senior who brought them here in Void Triangular Domain after all. Furthermore, Wu Ningzhu who was in Gu Family still needed Jiang Chen alive.

Weng Weng

At this time, a buzzing noise was heard from Dan King’s body. He quickly took out a golden talisman.

“It’s the messenger talisman from little Chen.”

Tyrant’s eyes sparkled.

“Chen Er is asking for our location.”

Dan King said. His face seemed relieved after knowing Jiang Chen’s news. He immediately convey their current location to Jiang Chen into the talisman.

A moment later, a spectre-like silhouette appeared in the courtyard. The man was wearing a snowy white robe and seemed to be around twenty years old. He was undeniably good looking with a bright smile, as though he was a prince of a wealthy family. Everyone could tell that this was Jiang Chen.

“Haha! Who can connect you to the dragonman with your current look?”

Tyrant laughed. Jiang Chen’s current look was truly charming. Even if the Dark King was here, he wouldn’t be able to find a connection about about the matter. Who would have thought that this young man that was full smile was the killing god that annihilated a city three days ago?

“Brother Chen.”

Yan Chenyu was delighted to see him again. She ran forth and gave him a bear-like embrace.

“Father, Xiao Yu, Tyrant, sorry for letting you all worry.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Little Chen, what you did in these past three days was really intoxicating. I heard that you have stolen all the treasure in the vaults of the three cities, and also dug out an ore mine. You should have quite a lot of True Meta Stone by now, right?”

Tyrant asked.

“That’s right. I have at least 200 million high grade True Meta Stones now.”

Jiang Chen said. He had obtained 100 million from Dark Mulberry City and 50 million each from the other two cities.

Hiss

Dan King gasped a cold breath of air. 200 million high grade True Meta Stones was irrefutably a very great fortune. They were only supposed to come here and make the trade with the people of the Dark Generation for True Meta Stones. They were going to trade their items in exchanged for these stones. But it seemed like Jiang Chen had chosen another route to gather True Meta Stones after the incident with Dark Liuyun. He had decided to use the violent way of getting this stones. Clearly, his way of doing things was way more efficient, Dan King could even ask for some of them when he

ran out of pills.

“200 million? Truly amazing! Little Chen, why didn’t you dig out the ore mines of the other cities as well?”

Tyrant asked.

“That’s what I wanted as well but without the help of Big Yellow, I won’t be able to locate those mines. I can’t just annihilate those two cities because I couldn’t get the ore mines right?”

Jiang Chen said. The reason he annihilated Dark Mulberry City was because it had planted an unpleasant memory in his mind after witnessing the incident in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion. His mind and cultivation would be affected if the city wasn’t eliminated. Plus, the vengeance of the girls would also never be taken. So, he spared no efforts to get rid of everything in the city that day.

Of course, it wasn’t because of Jiang Chen’s compassion that the two cities weren’t destroyed. He just didn’t feel the need to do that. He would never do things that wouldn’t bring him benefits. Killing those excessively lascivious princes was already enough for him.

“Chen Er, what are you going to do next? The imperial kinsmen of the Dark Generation have already been alerted about this matter. I assume that all the cities have already tighten their security and patrols.”

Dan King asked.

“Not really a concern. They are looking for the dragonman, not me. They won’t be able to find him. We are going to browse around in different cities from now on and act like normal people and engage in some minor trading events. Finally, we’ll go to the King City for the major trading event. Of course, we would also kill a few princes on our way to reduce our boredom.”

Jiang Chen smiled. The dragonman had already become an untraceable avatar because the body and appearance varied too much with his current human form. Anyone who had seen his human-dragon form would not be able to recognize him that he was the dragonman.

“I think those princes of the rich families have locked themselves up now, fearing that the dragonman would find and assassinate them any time.”

Tyrant smiled.

“This is the reason that I have gotten rid of them. I want them to be afraid, afraid of what they have done in the past and the price that they would have to pay for committing such crimes.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shot out two beams of cold lights.

“Little Chen, since you have already obtained 200 million True Meta Stones, would you stop gathering them from now on? I know

there are still a lot more in this domain.”

Tyrant asked naively. He was an individual who feared peaceful times.

“I won’t stop, of course. I don’t mind telling you my bigger plan. I want all the fortune that existed in this domain to be in my possession.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. Did he already got enough stones? That was impossible. Since he had come here, he should achieve greater things. He would just act according to the situation for the time being. He was afraid that the 200 million high grade True Meta Stones would not be enough for him to advance from the First Grade to the Ninth Grade Great Saint. He might also need it after becoming an Immortal. At that time, it would absolutely be an astronomical figure. So, what he wanted wasn’t just this 200 million. He wanted all of them in this domain. This time, the opening of the domain would certainly be chaotic because of Jiang Chen’s arrival.

...

Chapter 821 - Eighth Grade Minor Saint, the Third Prince

Tyrant began to laugh. He knew that there wouldn't be peace in wherever Jiang Chen went. The Void Triangular Domain was destined to be one of Jiang Chen's stepping stone. Dan King was sighing at one side. He couldn't deny the innate aura of a king from Jiang Chen. It was like he was gifted with an overbearing and imposing demeanour the moment he was born.

Jiang Chen was a person who had extraordinary luck. He would have lucky and unexpected encounter anywhere he went. As such, it was also his luck that made this domain chaotic.

He had made all the necessary preparations. Tomorrow, they would go to the trading centre of Dark Shadow City to undergo some transactions. This would make them look like normal human merchants. It wouldn't arouse the suspicion of the Dark Generation people by the time they left for King City.

According to the usual schedule, the experts of the eight families should have arrived by now. But they would never appear in some small and insignificant city given their prestigious status, their private passageway would only be linked to the King City.

The next day, the four of them walked out of the inn towards the central region of the city. On the way, they had heard some conversation related to Jiang Chen.

“Haven't you heard about it? That dragonman disappeared after

committing those crimes. I think he is too scared to come out now. Anyway, the Third Prince is going to deal with the dragonman personally soon.”

“Yes, I have. The news has been spread from King City. The Third Prince is an outstanding genius from the Dark Generation. He has already advanced to the Eighth Grade Minor Saint at thirty plus years old. He was infuriated when he was told of the incident regarding the dragonman. He has decided to get rid of the dragonman himself.”

“Is that so? But nothing will change if the dragonman doesn’t appear.”

“The Third Prince isn’t someone ordinary. The intention of the dragonman was very obvious. The reason he emptied all the vaults of the prefectures was because of the True Meta Stones. However, no one knew why he killed the princes of the rich families and how did these young rich princes offended him. So the dragonman must be targeting these princes. The Third Prince have gathered the princes from different cities to discuss about the dragonman.”

.....

The entire Dark Shadow City was filled with conversations regarding the meeting of the Third Prince. One should know that the Third Prince’s prompt action represented the will of King City. In other words, they would be after the dragonman until they found him and kill him.

“Do you know where the meeting of the Third Prince and those princes would be held?”

“It has already been announced. I think it would be on the Black Dragon Mountain. It isn’t very far away from Dark Shadow City. It is only a few thousand miles in distance. The reason the location of the meeting was announced was to lure the dragonman there. It was likely that the place was already heavily guarded by numerous experts. The dragonman would certainly die if he chooses to appear there.”

“You are wrong. You should know that the Third Prince is prideful. He won’t allow the other experts to set up an ambush at that place. Furthermore, those young princes were mostly geniuses, which made them proud as well. This is a conflict between them and the dragonman. They would certainly wish to handle their own problem. Also, it would sully the Third Prince’s reputation if he needed some experts to deal with the dragonman.”

“I agree. Everyone knows how much pride the Third Prince has. He is a true imperial descendant. The unique bloodline of the Dark Generation is flowing in his body. Since he has decided to take action personally, he won’t be needing any external help. Those princes who were invited were merely the baits.”

“Despite being the bait, they were still willing to participate in this so-called meeting. This was because they could get in touch with the Third Prince. Who would be stupid enough to miss this opportunity? Furthermore, they don’t need to fear the dragonman with the Third Prince there.”

.....

This conversation were everywhere in the city. It was hard for the four of them not to hear it.

“Hehe, little Chen, it seems like the matter is becoming really interesting. I wonder if you would strike this time.”

Tyrant smiled.

“Chen Er, the imperial princes of King City aren’t like the previous enemies that you faced. They have stronger techniques and skills. It would be too dangerous to go there given the fact that the Third Prince is an Eighth Grade Minor Saint.”

Dan King said with a concerned tone. While it was true that Jiang Chen could eliminate a Seventh Grade Minor Saint with ease when he is only a Third Grade Minor Saint, it was also true that he would face difficulties while fighting against an extraordinary Eighth Grade Minor Saint. The Third Prince was a Minor Saint with great talent. He must’ve possessed some kind of trump card. Thus, he wasn’t an easy enemy for Jiang Chen.

“If the Eighth Grade Minor Saint that I would be facing is a genius from the eight families, I definitely won’t succeed. But I will definitely succeed if I am facing the genius of the Dark Generation. I don’t fear any of them.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Chen Er, don’t underestimate the people of the Dark Generation. Their geniuses are relatively on par with the geniuses of the Pure Land. They are all very powerful individuals.”

Dan King said.

“What you said is true but I have skills that can suppress their strength effectively. The skills that they are using are connected to the Dark Force. My flames, the True Thunderfire is the bane of the Dark Force. He would certainly not be able to exert his full strength even if he is an Eighth Grade Minor Saint.”

Jiang Chen said in a relaxed tone. He had proved the weakness of the dark force in his previous battles. He was starting to get interested in the Third Prince.

“Brother Chen, are you going out again?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

“Of course, those princes don’t make me feel pleasant. I will just have to erase them from this world. If I can hold the Third Prince hostage, it allows for more options for my future plans.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. This was an opportunity that came knocking on his door, how could he miss it?

“But, what if there is an ambush in the Dark Dragon Mountain?”

Dan King was still concerned about him despite knowing that the Third Prince was a very proud man.

“Don’t worry. My human-dragon form could allow me to escape even if I encountered a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. If there is really an ambush, all I need to do is to escape and I’m sure that my true identity won’t be discovered.”

Jiang Chen said. He would never fight a sure-lose battle or do an unaccomplishable task.

Then, Jiang Chen interjected on a Dark cultivator who was in the middle of a conversation with a smile. “Hi, brother, do you know when will Third Prince start inviting the princes of the different cities to the Black Dragon Mountain?”

“I think it should be tomorrow, but I guess that dragonman would certainly not appear. He should know how powerful the Third Prince is. He would instantly die if he went there.”

The dark cultivator replied in a proud manner, sounding as if he was the Third Prince.

“Of course. Everyone knows how divine the Third Prince is. The dragonman would surely be defeated and eliminated.”

Jiang Chen smiled and replied with pride to show how much he

admired the power of the Third Prince.

After a while, the four of them continued on to the largest trading centre of Dark Shadow City. A lot of pills have been traded for True Meta Stones. But this amount of True Meta Stones were nothing compared to Jiang Chen's 200 million stones.

While they were acting like normal merchants in the crowd, the people of the Dark Generation were searching for signs of the dragonman. They would have never thought that the dragonman was just beside them.

On the second day, Black Dragon Mountain would become the center of attraction. The Third Prince had given the order that no one was allowed to get any closer to the Black Dragon Mountain except those young princes who were willing to fight against the dragonman. A lot of people were watching the mountain. They saw the young princes from different rich families flying towards the mountain one after another.

...

Chapter 822 - Turning the Black Dragon Mountain Blood Red

The Black Dragon Mountain stretched out for a few hundred miles. It looked like the shape of a large black dragon from afar. The ups and downs of the summits gave one some sort of intense pressure. The central region of the mountain was a flat highland. It wasn't a manmade highland, but a natural made land, regarded as the workmanship of the nature.

Presently, the day had turned bright. It was due to the energy of the light element. Tens of tables were placed on this flat highland. These tables were made from high grade True Meta Stone. This wasn't to show how much fortune the Dark Generation had, but how abundant these stones were.

The tables was seated on by many people. Every one of them was a young prince with luxurious clothes and excessively prideful. They would naturally attend the meeting if they were personally invited by the Third Prince, regardless of whether the dragonman would appear here or not.

These princes came from different cities, all over the domain. They were the prestigious group of the Dark Generation. All of them were gifted geniuses and some of them were the elites of elites.

There was another table placed in front. It was the seat of honour, but it was still empty. The Third Prince hadn't arrived yet. Roughly fifteen princes had already arrived at the venue, though most of them were already on their way here.

A while later, the number of princes rose to roughly thirty. All the seats had been taken. There were some outstanding princes among this group. There were two Seventh Grade Minor Saints, four to five Sixth Grade Minor Saints. The rest were mostly Minor Saints below the Sixth Grade.

Due to the unique bloodline of the Dark Generation and the particularly favourable natural conditions for their cultivation, many geniuses were produced. Their abilities could be compared to the outstanding geniuses of the eight families. If it wasn't for the restriction of the domain, the overall strength of the Dark Generation wouldn't be any weaker than any of the eight families.

“Gentlemen, do you think that the dragonman will emerge?”

A Fifth Grade Minor Saint prince asked. His cultivation was the same as Dark Liuyun's.

“I guess he won't dare to. Although he is strong enough to kill a Seventh Grade Minor Saint, he won't stand a chance against the Third Prince, an overpowering Eighth Grade Minor Saint. Besides, did you notice that the dragonman only went to Dark Mulberry and the other two neighbouring cities? These three cities are deemed to be the weakest cities of our Dark Generation. The highest grade expert they have is only Seventh Grade Minor Saint. As for the cities that are guarded by an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, no incident was reported there. What's the reason behind this? It's because the dragonman is not capable enough to fight an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. So, if the dragonman appears today, we would be able to get rid of this trouble once and for all.”

“That’s right. The Third Prince will be here very soon. This is a rare gathering. Whether the dragonman comes or not, the most important thing here is the chance to meet the Third Prince. We can use this chance to build a rapport with him, which would certainly bring us a lot of advantages in the future.”

“Come, fellow brothers. We won’t always have a gathering like this. We should take this opportunity to have a few cups of drinks before Third Prince arrives. I have brought along my collection of vintage wine to share with my fellow brothers.”

A man waved his hand. A second later, a goblet made from high grade True Meta Stone was placed on every table . Then, a delicate wine pot was seen floating in the air as it filled the goblets on every tables.

“Gentlemen, my pleasure.”

The prince led them after circling around in all of the seats.

“This is a good wine indeed!”

At this moment, an abrupt sound was heard above them. The princes who were about to gulp their cup of wine lifted their heads up. They saw a dragonman that was illuminated with a blood-red light appearing out of nowhere. Despite their numbers, none them had noticed his arrival.

“Dragonman.”

“You demon! You finally dare to show yourself. You really have the nerve.”

“Dragonman, you are surely finished this time for killing the princes of rich families. You will still die, even you have a hundred lives.”

.....

Everyone on the highland cried out loud with their threats the moment they saw the dragonman. Jiang Chen just treated their threats as fart. He landed from the sky and strode forward to the side of the seat of honour. It was the seat where the Third Prince should be seated in but unfortunately, he wasn't here yet.

“I don't have a hundred lives, but just one. Did you think that the bunch of you could kill me?”

Jiang Chen's ruthless eyes swept around the area. Those princes couldn't help but feel frightened when they realised that the Third Prince hadn't arrived yet. None of them was powerful enough to be this dragonman's match, unless one of them was above Seventh Grade Minor Saint.

“A group of foolish garbage that are addressed as princes? I know that Third Prince had invited you all to deal with me. In fact, you are all here, just to establish a connection with him. I am already

here, but he hasn't arrived yet. This is a rather good thing, because he can play with your corpses when he arrives."

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

Those princes were stunned after they heard what Jiang Chen had said. Their faces instantly turned ugly. Jiang Chen was right. According to their agreement, it was not yet the appointed time for the meeting to start, so the Third Prince hasn't arrived yet. He would definitely not come early and wait for them, given his high ranking status. That's why they came here early and waited for Third Prince instead. They had never thought that the dragonman would suddenly appear here, even before the Third Prince came.

As a matter of fact, most of them were not really concerned about the matter of the dragonman. To them, this was merely an opportunity to get in touch with the Third Prince. As for the dragonman, they were sure that he wouldn't come here after hearing the name of the Third Prince. However, the current situation proved them wrong.

"Humph! Brothers, there is no need to be afraid of him. There is only him alone. We have two Seventh Grade Minor Saints here and we are all geniuses. Our Seventh Grade Minor Saints aren't as weak as the ones he had killed before. I believe that with our combined strength, we can hold him off until Third Prince arrives and eliminates him."

A Seventh Grade Minor Saint prince made a cold humph. They must face this dragonman by themselves before the arrival of the Third Prince, unless they were willing to be slaughtered by this

beast.

“That’s right. I’m curious to know how powerful this dragonman is. Take my Dark Palm!”

A Sixth Grade Minor Saint who had a fiery temper immediately struck out a palm. The terrifying black palm struck like a sharp blade, slapping over Jiang Chen.

It moved so fast that it reached Jiang Chen in a flash. This was a very powerful attack coming from a Sixth Grade Minor Saint, but Jiang Chen’s movement was simple while facing the attack. He raised his dragon claw and pushed it forward lightly, pulverising the incoming attack.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen attacked. He wouldn’t show any quarters towards these princes. Putting aside the unpleasantness he had for these people, they were already sentenced to death, the moment they show their murderous intent towards Jiang Chen. He would never show any mercy towards the people who wanted him dead.

Hong Long

The True Dragon Palm struck out. Two princes were grabbed by the terrifying dragon claws. They let out a high-pitched wail before turning into a blood mist.

“Attack!”

The other two Seventh Grade Minor Saints were angered. Both of them launched an attack together, followed by several Sixth Grade Minor Saints. Together, they launched their strongest attack by far. A terrifying force exploded on the Black Dragon Mountains, making it look like the scene of the-end-of-the-world. Those princes' attack had turned into some sort of black disc that was pressing down towards Jiang Chen from above.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph, totalling disdaining this attack. He immediately struck out the Fire Dragon Seal. An about 30-meter-long fire dragon burning with raging flames rushed out, as if it had come to life. It opened its huge mouth while charging towards the black disc.

Hong Long

The fire dragon straightaway swallowed the entire black disc and it exploded inside the dragon's body. But due to the natural suppression of the fire dragon, the combined attacks of these princes was not able to reach its full potential.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Wah *Wah*

Many of them had received a heavy backlash and were sent flying

away. Some spurted out blood and looked at the dragonman with fear.

“Not good. This thing’s flames is able to suppress our dark force. We won’t be able to use our full strength under such a condition.”

Someone exclaimed. All of them had underestimated the dragonman. The previous attack was enough to prove that none of them was Jiang Chen’s match even if they combined their attacks. Now, they only could hope for the arrival of Third Prince, otherwise most of them would die under this thing’s hands.

“It’s my turn to strike.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. His five elemental sphere spread out like a tidal wave, covering all of them in just a few blinks of time. It was in fact too powerful that it could not be compared to any power sphere. The five elements were in perfect balance and harmony, it made five different power spheres. Anyone who was trapped by five elemental sphere wouldn’t be coming out.

These princes were like tortoises in a jar now. Running away was no longer possible for them.

“Not good, he has confined us!”

Someone shouted with shock.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen ignored the expression and emotions of these princes. He flapped open his dragon wings and lunged forward.

Pu Chi *Pu Chi*

Most of them were instantly killed when their waist was severed in half. When Jiang Chen attacked, he looked like a killing machine that would reap all of their lives. He was invincible. It was a pity that these princes who were supposed to cooperate with the Third Prince died because they came here early.

...

Chapter 823 - The True Form of Dark Imperial Bloodline

Continuous wails of pain could be heard. The Black Dragon Mountain had become an Asura Hell to these princes. None of them had encountered such a terrifying scene in their life. The huge combat waves and explosions from the Black Dragon Mountain had been noticed by the people outside.

Black Dragon Mountain was destined to become the center of attraction today. No one dared to go and find out what happened because of the orders given by the Third Prince. So, these people could only sense the combat waves but no one knew what exactly was happening within the mountain.

“Look! That’s a combat wave. Why did the battle start so quickly? It must be the dragonman. This is unbelievable, the dragonman really went over there.”

“This beast really has the guts to appear in front of them even after knowing that the Third Prince had invited all the princes there to capture him. His audaciousness knew no bounds.”

“This is surely a big commotion. Judging from here, it should be Third Prince who had initiated the strike along with the princes against the dragonman. Who do you think would win?”

“Isn’t that already obvious? The Third Prince is a powerful Eighth Grade Minor Saint. There are also some very powerful geniuses among the princes. The dragonman will never be their

opponent even if he has two more heads and three more arms. I pity the dragonman for his lack of intelligence despite his powerful strength. Anyone could tell that this is a trap specially planned for him. There is a strong competition among the imperial princes in King City. The Third Prince would certainly gain a higher status after killing this dragonman.”

.....

A lot of people were discussing the matter but unfortunately, they didn't know that their respected Third Prince hasn't arrived yet and the Black Dragon Mountain had already fallen into chaos, it was the day where those young princes die.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Fundamentally, there was no chance of surviving after being encompassed by Jiang Chen's five elemental sphere. He moved so fast that he became a beam of blood-red light. It was merely a few breaths of time but half of the princes were already killed.

“He is too aggressive but don't worry everyone. We just have to stick together.”

“Quick! We have to launch an attack together.”

All the princes were frightened to death. Their hearts were pounding fast. The current scene had never cross their minds. It was too frightening. Now, they started to feel a little regretful

upon seeing how cold-blooded this beast was. No, they were feeling super regretful. Some regretted for choosing to come here today. Some regretted arriving early. They should have come here on time rather than being early. If the Third Prince was here, they wouldn't have ended up in such a way.

Hong Long

As a matter of fact, these princes' cultivation weren't low or weak. Their combined attack was without a doubt deadly. Sadly it was really not a threat to Jiang Chen.

In a battle, besides having a powerful combat strength, morale was also vital. If one's morale dropped, one have already lost half the battle. Currently, not only were these princes had weaker than Jiang Chen, their morale was fully overwhelmed by Jiang Chen's.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

The wails and howls of pain continued. Their combined efforts couldn't defend against Jiang Chen's aggressive attacks, they died one after another. They were all killed instantly. In fact, Jiang Chen has already gained quite a bit from killing them. He had collected quite a lot of dark spirits from them.

Very quickly, over thirty princes were already dead. Now only two were left. They were the Seventh Grade Minor Saints. Their faces were full of despair. Their bodies were covered with blood. Despite their high cultivation, they were having difficulty just standing up. It was conceivable how deprived their condition was.

They were staring at Jiang Chen with frightened eyes. The two things that could be seen in their eyes were despair and hatred.

“Do...n’t kill us...”

One of them said.

“Don’t kill you? Let me ask you a question. If I am the one who had fallen under your hands, will you not kill me?”

Jiang Chen asked.

Two of them felt stunned before shaking their heads reluctantly. In truth, the question need not be answered. If it was Jiang Chen who fell into their hands, he would not only be killed but also tortured horrendously. He would suffer torture beyond one’s imagination. If that was the case, what’s the reason for them to beg for mercy? Could it be that they were the only one allowed to kill Jiang Chen but not the other way?

In this world, there are no moral values or reasons. The rationality lay on the strength of one’s fist.

“Stop!”

At this time, a bellow was heard all of a sudden from above. A man in black robe appeared. He looked handsome and was as sturdy as a tiger or a bear. There was a kind of dignified aura in between his eyes. It gave people the urge to respect him

involuntarily.

This was the Third Prince. His eyes had swept across the highland, he had seen those bloody corpses and the two princes who were under the control of Jiang Chen. One of the princes was familiar to him as he hanged out with him before.

Hong

Rage erupted from the Third Prince's body. The scene made him spurt out blood. He had never expected that it will turn into such a tragic event just because he was slightly late.

“Third Prince, save us.”

One of them shouted loudly when he saw Third Prince, as though he had seen his saviour.

“Bastard! I order you to release them now!”

The Third Prince glared at Jiang Chen. His eyes had already turned red. He was undeniably angered. The reason he summoned these princes here was to lure the dragonman to the Black Dragon Mountain. He had never thought that he would actually come. What shocked him the most was that the dragonman came here even before he arrived.

The reason behind why the Third Prince took the initiative to capture and get rid of the dragonman was to prove his capability

among the other imperial princes. He never thought that this plan had turned out to be a futile. Now, not only was the dragonman not eliminated, virtually all princes who were invited were dead instead. The background of all these princes were from different forces of different cities. So these princes represented almost all of the cities of the domain. Now, only two of them were left. The families of these dead princes would definitely put the blame on him. This would not only make the Third Prince's initiative foolish but also cause a major trouble to the domain. He would not be able to compensate the losses, even if the dragonman was killed.

While he was clouded by anger, he continuously cursed those princes for arriving here early, and himself for not coming here sooner. He just needed to be a little bit early to prevent all of this from happening. However, his plans did not come to reality. Even if he came early, the ending would still be the same if he faced a powerful being like Jiang Chen. These princes would still die at Jiang Chen's hands.

“Order? Is this some kind of joke? What right do you have to order me? Because you are an imperial prince?”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. It seemed like the Third Prince was using his high status to make all the people obey him. It was a pity that he couldn't perceive the current situation properly. Jiang Chen wouldn't pay his respect to this prince, he would only treat this prince as prey.

“Third Prince, save us.”

The two men looked very pitiful and miserable. The Third Prince

was the only one who could possibly save them. They had fallen under Jiang Chen's complete control now. Given the injuries that they had, they were completely immobilized.

Pu *Pu*

As soon as their voices faded, bloody holes appeared in their chests. Jiang Chen's sharp claw had pierced through their chests. They could feel their vitals slowly fading away. It was a very cold sensation.

Roar

Third Prince burst from rage. His body started to expand and transform. His human appearance turned into a 30-meter-size monster.

His body became extremely muscular and plated with black scales that shone with a faint light. It had two sharp claws and a ferocious face that was scarier than any ordinary demon. In fact, the face alone could scare anyone to death.

“Bastard! You have really infuriated me! I will rip you into pieces, you lowly and absurd human!”

The Third Prince said while some sort of buzzing sound was produced from his body.

“Humph! Is this the true form of your bloodline? So this is the

origin of Dark Generation. It looked a hundred times more disgusting than the devils.”

Jiang Chen humped coldly. His self-confidence that he had in annihilating the Dark Generation faltered slightly after seeing the true form of the Dark imperial bloodline. A race like this was no different than the devils which were cruel and heartless. It would be disastrous if the people of the Dark Generation could go to the Saint Origin World.

“Die.”

The Third Prince spit out a word and stretched his sharp claw forward. The void ahead was immediately crushed. He lunged forward with incredible speed, and appeared before Jiang Chen in just a blink. Unlike the common dark bloodline, the Dark imperial bloodline was extraordinarily powerful. As such, the Third Prince was a powerful enemy that shouldn't be underestimated.

“You can at the right time.”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. His current physical endurance alone was stronger than the physique of the dark imperial bloodline but due to the gap of their cultivation, Jiang Chen didn't dare to take any chances. This was the first time that he would fight an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, an extraordinary Eighth Grade Minor Saint.

Bo

The void trembled. Jiang Chen launched an attack. It wasn't a fancy punch but it moved so fast that it looked like a blood-red flash. The force of this punch was powerful enough to crush a large mountain.

Hong Long

Jiang Chen's dragon claw collided with Third Prince's sharp claw, creating a rumbling sound. The two claws collided with each other and produced large sparks.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

The powerful impact caused Jiang Chen to stagger three steps backward before he managed to compose his balance.

Chapter 824 - Not Giving a Chance

‘The true form of Dark Imperial Kinsmen was really powerful. My physique couldn’t overpower it because of my low cultivation.’

Jiang Chen thought. He wasn’t surprised by the impact just now. Probably because it was already one of his expectations. His enemy was an Eighth Grade Minor Saint after all, an extraordinary one at that.

There was no sign of nervousness on Jiang Chen’s face despite him being sent staggering three steps back. The suppression of his flames actually helped fill the gap in their cultivation. Besides, he felt excited meeting an opponent worthy of his time.

“What a strong human! You are not dead yet even after receiving one of my punch. It seems that your transformation technique isn’t something ordinary. Too bad, you have made an unforgivable mistake. Today I must shred you to pieces.”

Third Prince shouted. He was very surprised that Jiang Chen was able to withstand his punch and stay alive. The gap in their cultivation was huge. Although Jiang Chen’s transformation technique could enhance his combat strength to fill in some of the gap, it was surely far from enough to fill in the huge gap.

After realizing the power of his opponent, he blamed himself for not arriving early. He was certain that this dragonman would be eliminated by him. And those princes wouldn’t have died. His reputation would’ve risen once again. He would then have the

feeling of exaltation and fulfilment.

This was all because he came late that turned the success into failure. Killing this dragonman wouldn't help compensate the deaths of the princes.

“Despicable!”

The Third Prince became angrier the more he thought about it. His body produced cracking sound and swayed. His terrifyingly sharp claw lunged at Jiang Chen once more. It was all this dragonman's fault which put him into such a predicament. He must make this dragonman pay an extremely high price. This dragonman's death must be a thousand times more pitiful than those princes' death.

The force was too powerful. A simple move could already shred the void into pieces. The Third Prince had unleashed an unimaginable dark force that could destroy everything from his Dark imperial bloodline.

“You come just in time.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. There was no sign of fear on his face while facing the second attack of the Third Prince. He clenched his fist tight. Now, his fist was covered with dazzling flames. It then rippled outwards like a fire dragon, snaking his entire body.

“What?”

The Third Prince was amazed because he could feel the pressure coming from the flames. This type of flame could strongly affect his dark origin. Under the suppression of the flames, the dark force in his body was somehow stifled. His Qi instantly faltered. In other words, he could no longer launch his greatest attack because of the suppression of the flames.

Bang

The both of them collided violently once more. The force of the collision pulverized the nearby void. Fiery light were lingering everywhere above the mountains, turning the battlefield into a world of fire.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

The impact of the collision pushed Jiang Chen and Third Prince three steps backwards, making it seemed like a draw.

Roar

The Third Prince roared furiously. How could he possibly accept such a result? He was obviously gaining the upper hand just now. His opponent couldn't even stand his attack just now. His opponent only used a few breaths of time to counter his attack. This was certainly unbelievable.

Despite the shock, he was clear that his opponent was just relying

on his powerful flames. It was a flame with the purest Yang energy, it could naturally suppress the dark energy, because of this, the Third Prince was unable to exert all of his power into his attacks. The draw in the battle had undeniably hurt his pride.

“Contemptible trick! I dare you to fight me without your flames!”

The Third Prince bellowed.

“You’ve got to be kidding me. How could a dignified imperial prince speak something like that? If you say that using my flames wasn’t fair in battle, what about an Eighth Grade Minor Saint fighting a Third Grade Minor Saint? You think that’s fair? It’s a life-and-death battle. You are welcomed to use any skills that you have.”

Jiang Chen gave a cold smile. It would probably make someone laugh until his teeth fall off, hearing the Third Prince say fairness in a life-and-death battle.

“Humph! I will show you my true power. Even if your flames could suppress me, so what? I will show you that any trick besides the true combat strength is useless. Take this! Dark Hand!”

Third Prince bellowed. The dark force spiralled around his body before condensing into a giant hand. It was a dark palm with the size of 30 meters. It was as black as ink and filled with lines that looked like a palm print. A simple wave of the giant palm created a gust of dark waves.

“How could your Dark Hand match my True Dragon Palm? It is equipped with the purest Yang energy.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was more powerful than the Third Prince. His body was boiling with combat aura. It wasn't easy for him to find a powerful opponent like this. He must make sure that this battle would be very intense. He struck out the True Dragon Palm. The blood-red dragon claw was a lot larger than the Dark Hand.

True Dragon Palm was a true dragon combat technique. The force of this attack was much greater than when he is in human form. This attack blended perfectly with the True Dragon Fire before colliding violently with the Dark Hand.

Hong Long

Both the heaven and earth shook. Black Dragon Mountain was completely destroyed. Now, it wasn't just the battle of physique. It was a battle of powerful techniques. As a matter of fact, the Dark Hand was a notch weaker than the true dragon combat technique. It was instantly crushed by the True Dragon Palm. The Third Prince received a huge backlash and was sent flying 30 meters away before finding his balance.

“Not possible!”

The Third Prince was in shock, this time he couldn't help but feel shocked. They had just exchanged blows for three rounds. In the first round, he successfully suppressed his opponent. The second round, it was a draw and the third round, he was suppressed by his

opponent instead. He couldn't accept the development of the battle.

Jiang Chen had already expected all of these. If his opponent was replaced by the Eighth Grade Minor Saint of the Pure Land, he certainly only had one option – flee.

The current situation had given Jiang Chen the advantage, his flames could fill the gap of their cultivation. Also, his true dragon combat technique was naturally equipped with flames. So, it was another problem to the Third Prince. As such, it was impossible if the imperial prince could not be defeated.

In a nutshell, Jiang Chen would always have the upper hand against the people of Dark Generation.

“I won't lose, Dark Surging Tide.”

The Third Prince was enraged. He refused to believe that he would be defeated by a mere Third Grade Minor Saint. It was true that Jiang Chen had the advantage because of his flames, but, the fact still remained that he was an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. If he lost the battle, who else or what else he could blame? Fairness again?

Hong Long

The gale of dark tide gusted out. It was boundlessly black, accompanied by a strong wind wave that could engulf everything

ahead. The entire scene was filled with the black energy, turning it to a total darkness. The chilling atmosphere could send a chill down their spine.

“Fire Dragon in the Sky.”

Jiang Chen naturally wouldn't fear the Third Prince's attack. He was getting fiercer after every battle. A powerful fire dragon was launched. The power of every elemental skill in the Five Elemental Battle Dragon Seal was enhanced tremendously after the completion of the five elements. Adding the human-dragon form and the Fire Dragon Seal into it, the power of the attack was unimaginable.

Roar *Roar* *Roar*

Three heaven-and-earth shaking dragon roar was heard all of a sudden. Three dazzling fire dragons roughly 120 meters in size were summoned by Jiang Chen. They drilled into the Dark Surging Tide at different direction. The terrifying power and suppression of the flames instantly tore the dark waves away.

The three fire dragons broke the darkness into a few portions, greatly reducing its attacking power.

“Explode!”

Jiang Chen yelled once more. The three fire dragons exploded in the dark waves. The overpowering energy and explosive force blew

all of the dark force within, destroying it completely.

Wah

The recoiling force was too strong, even for the formidable Third Prince. He spurted out a large mouthful of blood. His face turned deathly pale and his eyes glinted with a blood-red light. He wouldn't dare to believe the thing that he was experiencing right now. He actually lost to the dragonman despite his high cultivation.

“No, I won't lose this battle. Imperial blood, burn now.”

Third Prince was getting frenzied. He, who was a highly prestigious being could never accept defeat. He immediately casted the most extreme spell, to burn his own blood in exchange for greater power.

Roar *Roar*

He roared wildly as his body grew stronger. Judging from his physique, it had become a lot stronger than before and his Qi had been enhanced as well. All the newfound energy and tyrannical demeanor came from the combustion of his blood.

“Burning your own blood? I won't give you the chance.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. How could he allow Third Prince to grow stronger? Immediately, he used the Azure Dragon Five Steps.

He stepped into the void. Every step he made stamped a large pit in the void. Under his legs was a raging fire. His speed was fast. When he was above Third Prince's head, it was the last step of Azure Dragon Five Steps.

Bang

This step which weighed thousands of pounds landed on the Third Prince's head, interrupting the combustion of his blood, 50% of his blood had already been burnt.

...

Chapter 825 - The Imperial Hostage

The Azure Dragon Five Steps was fiercer than the True Dragon Palm of the true dragon combat technique. The power unleashed from it was unimaginable. The void was smashed with his every step. Even if the combustion of his blood was forcefully stopped, half of his blood had already been burnt. Thus, his combat strength was still improved much compared to before.

The Third Prince quickly responded to Jiang Chen's attack. A black shield was condensed by an awful dark force to defend himself.

Ka Cha

How could a shield condensed by a dark force withstand Jiang Chen's Azure Dragon Five Steps? Furthermore, it was already the fifth step, the last step. The so-called indestructible shield was crushed into pieces by Jiang Chen's foot.

The Third Prince absorbed a tremendous amount of force, pushing his large body 30 meters away. Currently, cracks and fissure could already be seen on the skin of his body, the cracks looked like spider webs. Blood was flowing out of those lines of cracks, it made him look gruesome.

Roar

The Third Prince hadn't died yet. Besides that, there was still a huge amount of combat strength left in his body due to the support

of the blood that he burnt. It was already imaginable that such a power wouldn't last long in his body. Once the power faded, he wouldn't be able to recover from all of the injuries that he suffered and return to his original peak form even if he didn't die.

“Son of a b*tch! Damn you! You have ruined me! I will kill you today!”

The Third Prince's roar turned hoarse due to his rage. He supposedly had a good future waiting for him. He didn't expect that this tiny slip would become his lasting sorrow. He was the one who came looking for trouble by provoking the dragonman. Even if Jiang Chen was killed, it wouldn't help repair his combusted imperial blood. Now, his future had been turned into a lasting darkness.

“What other tricks do you still have?”

Jiang Chen's Qi soared to the sky. The battle today had lifted his confidence that he could defeat the people of Dark Generation powerful cultivation because of his particularly favourable advantage.

Swoosh

The Third Prince made a sway with his arm. A black shield materialized in his hand. It wasn't the same as the previous shield. The previous shield was fully condensed by a dark force whereas this shield was a solid. It was a Combat Weapon carved with some profound patterns that looked mystical.

Jiang Chen's eyes were fixed on that black shield. He could naturally determine that it was a true Minor Saint weapon with his eyesight. There was no blacksmith in the Dark Generation and the place they lived was a desolate land with insufficient raw materials to create weapons. Thus, this Minor Saint weapon must be from either of the three worlds.

The shield was fully blanketed by a dark Qi. It had fused itself with the imperial bloodline and Qi of Third Prince. Jiang Chen had to admit that this Third Prince was a one in a thousand genius because he could use his own bloodline to temper the weapon and fully integrate his Qi into it, turning it into a Natal Weapon. Without a doubt, this kind of weapon would become more powerful than before.

"I still have my ultimate technique. Let me see how you withstand this."

Third Prince gritted his teeth and yelled. "Ultimate Dark Imperial Shield."

As soon as his voice faded, the shield rose up to the sky above, and floated above his head. An unlimited dark force was gushing out of his body and flowed into the dark shield like a tidal water. The initial power of the shield was boosted further. After a few blinks, its power grew a fold of its original strength.

This was his strongest attack, stronger than any of his attacks before. It was a self-created technique and he named it the

“Ultimate Dark Imperial Shield”. This had always been his hidden trump card that fuelled his pride.

“Receive your death! Ultimate Dark Imperial Shield, charge!”

Third Prince roared once more as the shield lunged towards Jiang Chen like a small mountain.

Jiang Chen didn’t dare to underestimate this incoming attack. He wasn’t concerned about it either. First, the Third Prince had already lost all his confidence in the battle. Second, although the Dark Shield was a terrifyingly powerful Minor Saint weapon, it could never be compared to his Heavenly Saint Sword.

Xiao

An ear-splitting sound was heard, followed by a brilliant sword light that shot straight into the sky. A divine-looking longsword materialized in Jiang Chen’s hand. On its surface was a terrifying and dazzling flames.

The power of this weapon was increased further after the fourth fragment was integrated into it. It was currently encompassed by the True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire. Jiang Chen lifted it and lunged at the Dark Imperial Shield.

Bang

The dark force and the sword intent of the Heavenly Saint Sword

clashed together, producing a huge shock wave before turning into a sea of fire. Countless of dark force rolled in the sea of fire and was incinerated completely. When the sword and the shield impacted, the shield couldn't bear the sharpness of the sword and was cut into half.

“What?”

The Third Prince stared at the scene like a copper bell. He couldn't believe what just happened. The Dark Imperial Shield was an extraordinary Minor Saint weapon. He was very clear on how strong and firm the shield was. One would wonder, how much power was required in order to destroy his shield? Without a doubt, the sword was overly sharp.

Jiang Chen didn't give Third Prince the time to react. His Heavenly Saint Sword swung across the void leaving the effect of a waterfall and reached the Third Prince in split seconds.

The Third Prince had absorbed a heavy backlash the moment the shield was destroyed. He wouldn't have the strength to defend against Jiang Chen's incoming attack. Subconsciously, He immediately raised his sharp claws to defend.

However, using own physique to defend against Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword was a very foolish act.

Chi La

“Argh!”

The Third Prince let out a wail of pain when his arm was cut in half. He continued to cry in pain as he had already suffered some serious injuries. His body could no longer support his true form because the energy in his bloodline was already expended by the Ultimate Dark Imperial Shield. He turned back into a human. He had lost all of his previous demeanour as the Third Prince. His body was full of wounds, and trickling with blood. The arm on his body dissipated after being cut. Now, he was out of strength to continue the battle.

He was feeling completely down spirited. The defeat had dealt a huge blow to his mind. He was a dignified Third Prince, an Eighth Grade Minor Saint and an outstanding genius among the imperial kinsmen. But today, he was defeated by a being which he looked down upon. The kind of feeling that he was feeling right now was like being pushed down from the summit of the pyramid.

He swayed his body and flew out of the Black Dragon Mountain that was left with dunes of ruins. Although the battle was a failure, he needed to stay alive. So, his most sensible choice now was to flee.

Despite his determination to leave, Jiang Chen wouldn't allow it. His large hand clawed forth and grabbed the Third Prince like grabbing a chick back to his proximity. It would be a funny joke if he let such a prey escape.

“Dammit! Do you know what the consequences of killing me is?!”

Third Prince threatened.

“Don’t worry. I won’t kill for you now.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“It’s a prudent choice. In that case, release me now!”

Third Prince sounded proud and arrogant despite him being under someone’s custody.

“I won’t kill you, but I won’t release you either.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. He didn’t want to waste any more effort in talking to an arrogant man. A seal was struck out, encompassing Third Prince fully before he was sucked into the spatial ring.

He knew that this prince had an uncommon status in the imperial family. He had a huge plan in this domain. In his plan, offending the imperial kinsmen of the Dark Generation was unavoidable. At that time, this Third Prince could act as an imperial hostage.

He immediately left the scene after resolving this problem. Even if the battle had only lasted for a short period of time, which was only a few minutes, the combat wave was just too great. The

experts would certainly come to find out what happened very soon. So, it was best if he left now. It was true that he could kill an Eighth Grade Minor Saint of the Dark Generation, he needed to exert almost all of his efforts.

His current strength was far from enough to dominate the entire Void Triangular Domain.

“Look! The battle in Black Dragon Mountain is over. I wonder what the result of the battle is.”

“It was a very intense battle. That dragonman must be very powerful to last the battle for so long, but he was certainly no match for the Third Prince. He was destined to be killed by the Third Prince.”

“That’s right. I had already expected that the dragonman would die under Third Prince’s hands. After this, the Third Prince’s status in the imperial kingdom would surely rise again.”

.....

Plenty of observers concluded that the battle was over when they felt the absence of combat wave. All of them thought that the dragonman was dead because there was no way for an overpowering Eighth Grade Minor Saint to lose to the dragonman.

Two silhouettes appeared above the Black Dragon Mountain not long after Jiang Chen had left. Both of them were elders. Nothing

could be sensed from them despite their presence, as if they had fully integrated with the atmosphere. Their Qi was absent, like a specter. You could already tell how formidable their cultivation was.

There were both Ninth Grade Minor Saints. The Qi in their bodies were similar to the Third Prince. They were the experts of the imperial Dark Generation. They were informed that the Third Prince was dealing with the dragonman today. Due to their confidence and the arrogant demeanor of Third Prince, they didn't emerge until they found out that the battle was over. They were shocked when they saw what happened.

...

Chapter 826 - The Fury of Dark King

Presently, not even the formidable Ninth Grade Minor Saints could keep their composure upon seeing the scattered corpse below. The Black Dragon Mountain was in ruins filled with a nose-stinging stench of blood. They couldn't help but heaved their chests up and down despite their willpower.

“Wh...what happened here?”

One of them said in a shivering tone.

“These are the corpses of the princes. Every one of them were killed. It must have been done by the dragonman. What about Third Prince? Where is he? Did he leave them for the dragonman to massacre?”

Another man was alarmed as when he saw the scene with so many corpse of princes lying gruesomely. This was clearly a direct challenge to the Dark Generation.

Suddenly, one of them saw the black shield that was slashed into half, his face changed instantly.

That man stuck out his hand. The two halves of the black shield flew into the sky and landed in his hand. “This is the Third Prince's Combat Weapon – Ultimate Dark Imperial Shield. It was broken into half.”

“That was his indestructible shield. That dragonman was way too powerful beyond our imagination. The Third Prince has miscalculated and it seems like he is in danger now.”

“Look over there! That’s the true form of our bloodline. It’s the one of the Third Prince’s spell figure. Not good, it is likely that the Third Prince was killed. Wait, I do not sense any of his death Qi. All of us possess the imperial bloodline. The imperial Qi in his body won’t just vanish so quickly if he was killed and we would definitely be able to sense it.”

“Dammit! There are only two possibilities now. It was either the Third Prince has managed to flee from the scene or he was held captive by the dragonman.”

“It was impossible for him to fled from the scene. If he did, we should have found him. He must have been taken away by the dragonman. It is our mistake to underestimate the power of the dragonman.”

“Fine. The battle wave just stopped not long ago, I think the dragonman is still in the proximity. Let’s go after him.”

.....

The two experts were completely infuriated by the dragonman’s outrageous action. There had never been something like this that happened before in the history of Void Triangular Domain. Incidents about the dragonman that came out of nowhere continued to happen since the opening of the gateway. It was

obvious that he was deliberately provoking the Dark Generation.

In fact, the theft in the vault and killings of the princes weren't as serious as harming the imperial prince. The attempt to hurt the imperial prince was absolutely unacceptable.

“The Third Prince is in trouble. We have to inform the Dark King immediately. The dragonman is more powerful than what we expected. Now, not even an Eighth Grade Minor Saint would be his match.”

An elder said and frowned.

“How powerful do you think the dragonman is? Is he stronger than a Ninth Grade Minor Saint?”

“That's unlikely. If he is really capable of fighting a Ninth Grade Minor Saints, he wouldn't choose to flee and do things in a sneaky way. He was afraid that we might find him. In my opinion, this dragonman is without a doubt, stronger than an Eighth Grade Minor Saint but isn't a match with a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. There is a huge and unimaginable difference between an Eighth Grade and a Ninth Grade Minor Saint even if it is only a grade difference.”

The two of them were trying to size up Jiang Chen's power before flying in the direction of King City. One had to admit that their judgement about Jiang Chen's power was right.

On that day, a period of time after the combat wave vanished, a lot of people started to go into the mountains to find out what happened to the princes and Third Prince. When they saw the gruesome scene, their souls were in shock.

The incident in the Black Dragon Mountain spread very quickly to the other regions of the domain.

“My God. This is too cruel. We didn’t get to see the intense battle but we saw that all the princes were killed. It was a total bloodshed. Furthermore, the corpses were scattered and in fragments.”

“It must be the doing of the dragonman. I couldn’t imagine that the dragonman would be so scary. He has killed all of the princes.”

“What about the Third Prince? Did anyone of you see the Third Prince? Was he killed as well? Given his cultivation, he shouldn’t have been defeated by the dragonman.”

“I have no idea. There are no traces and the corpse of Third Prince was nowhere to be found. The scene is absolutely horrifying.”

.....

Everyone was discussing about the incident on the Black Dragon Mountain. The Dragonman had become the hot topic of conversation across all the cities. In fact, it was hard for them not

know about it because the incident was just too bloody.

King City.

When the Dark King heard about it, he raged and sent a palm smashing into one of the halls. After that, he realised that the soul jade slip that belonged to the Third Prince wasn't broken yet, which only meant that he was still alive.

“Dark King. He hasn't killed the Third Prince yet, it only shows that he still fears our imperial family. The Third Prince should be in his custody right now.”

Someone said.

“Investigate the matter now. Send out the experts of our imperial family. We have to find this dragonman even if that means turning our domain upside down. We would never tolerate such an insult to our dignity.”

The Dark King was enraged, much more enraged than the time the Dark Mulberry City was destroyed. It was obvious that the dragonman was challenging the imperial family directly. He had become the common enemy of the Dark Generation. If he wasn't gotten rid of quickly, all of the cities would certainly fall into the chaos. Many people of Dark Generation, especially the princes would be affected in their daily lives.

The matter regarding the dragonman had already gotten very

serious. On this day, many experts had been directly instructed by the Dark King to find this dragonman by hook or by crook in order to restore their family's dignity and reputation.

The following day, the news regarding the dragonman was spread across the entire domain. Most of them were astonished when they heard that the Third Prince was in the dragonman's custody. People from different cities were emotionally stirred up by this news. Before this, they were anticipating the result of the encounter between the Third Prince and the dragonman. They would never have thought that it would end up like this.

“My God! How strong is the dragonman exactly? Even the Eighth Grade Minor Saint Third Prince couldn't handle him. What's going to happen next?”

“This man was really audacious. Killing a few princes isn't as serious as kidnapping the Third Prince. His action has tarnished the dignity of the imperial family, which means that he had become the public enemy of the Dark Generation. He needs to be executed so that the dignity of the Dark Generation can be restored.”

“Now that the Dark King has become truly mad, countless numbers of experts have been sent to find this dragonman. I'm sure that there is already no place for him to hide in our domain.”

.....

Many people were getting increasingly nervous with each passing

day, particularly those cities that were guarded by mere Eighth Grade Minor Saints. Their initial thoughts was that their safety was ensured as long as their city was guarded by an Eighth Grade Minor Saint expert. This however turned out to be false. The news said that even the powerful Third Prince was held captive by the dragonman now. Their cities were susceptible to the dragonman's attack. Putting aside the matter of the treasures in the vault, most of them were worried about their lives, especially the princes in the rich families. They didn't want to end up in a tragic death like those princes on Black Dragon Mountain.

The imperial kinsmen had already provided a solution to these cities. Under the order of the Dark King, a Ninth Grade expert would be sent to every city that was only guarded by an Eighth Grade expert. So, should the dragonman emerge, he would be killed by the Ninth Grade expert.

The cities felt a sense of relief with a Ninth Grade expert around, including those princes who had been staying late at night without a good sleep. Despite this, they still didn't dare to walk out of their mansions. There were about ten experts guarding them in their room to ensure their safety. This was definitely the first unprecedented crisis that happened in the history of the domain.

As the experts were in search for the dragonman everywhere across the domain, Jiang Chen was already back at Dark Shadow City, regrouping with Dan King and the others. A lot of people in the inn recognized this youth in white that always carried a pleasant smile. No one would be able to connect this elegant youth to the dragonman.

“Haha! Little Chen, this has become very exciting. Those animal-like prince who said that they wanted to kill you ended up being killed by you instead. I have no idea how many of their families want to consume you right now.”

Tyrant looked over at Jiang Chen and laughed. They couldn't ignore the news about this dragonman. It was all over the place.

“Chen Er, I was so worried for you just now. But when I thought about your capabilities, it somehow relieved my worries.”

Dan King chuckled. His concern for Jiang Chen was gone. Now, even if the experts had turned up on their doorstep, they wouldn't be able to find the dragonman unless Jiang Chen deliberately transform himself.

The thing that amazed him the most was that Jiang Chen was able to defeat an Eighth Grade Minor Saint with his Third Grade Minor Saint cultivation. It was absolutely terrifying, even if the main reason for that was because of his flames. It seems that only Jiang Chen could achieve such a heaven defying result.

“Little Chen, what are you going to do with the Third Prince?”

Tyrant asked. He had been curious about this since the incident.

“He had already been imprisoned. He may prove to be useful against the imperial Dark Generation in the future. He is a prince after all, an imperial hostage.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Haha! It seems clearer now that Void Triangular Domain would never experience peace as long as you are in this land.”

Tyrant laughed.

Chapter 827 - Another Nan Bei Chao

Tyrant's remark wasn't wrong, Dan King agreed too. Ever since Jiang Chen arrived here, the domain was not as peaceful as before. There would always be a commotion in the domain.

Yan Chenyu leaned close to Jiang Chen's side. Although she didn't speak much, her eyes showed the confidence that she had in Jiang Chen. She wouldn't depend on Jiang Chen even though she was leaning against him right now. She didn't want to be a nuisance to him. She was happy as long as she could be on Jiang Chen's side.

“Chen Er, what's your next plan?”

Dan King asked.

“We will head to King City. According to the usual schedule, the major powers of the three worlds should have arrived by now. King City is the busiest city in the domain right now. We can take our time to make our trade there, like the other human cultivators. I won't be using the identity of the dragonman for a while. Just let the people of the Dark Generation continue searching the dragonman.”

Jiang Chen said with content. He already had a plan in his heart. However, the incident on Black Dragon Mountain had drawn too much attention. It angered the Dark King so much that he sent his experts out to look for him. He would be immediately captured if he transformed into a human-dragon form. Given his current

strength, he wasn't strong enough to fight a Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

“Alright, we'll go to King City.”

Tyrant nodded, excitement could clearly be seen in his eyes. He wasn't sure why he sensed the feeling that Jiang Chen would turn King City upside down.

On that same day, the four of them left Dark Shadow City for King City. The number of human cultivators in Void Triangular Domain has increased since the opening of the gateway. Most of them were scattered across the different large cities for one reason only – trade.

The four of them were also heading to a large city – King City for the same reason. They were going to the trading centre in the city to trade for True Meta Stones using their pills.

Yan Chenyu's appearance was overly striking. In order to prevent the incident in Dark Mulberry City from happening again, Jiang Chen suggested her to partially cover her face with a veil.

In these past few days, Jiang Chen and the rest were relaxed and trading in the city. The news about the dragonman was still ongoing. It could be heard everywhere. The imperial kinsmen had sent many experts to find this dragonman. Unfortunately, there was no sign of the dragonman, as if he had vanished completely from the map, despite the experts having searched all the places in the domain.

“It seems like the dragonman is too afraid to come out. But no one knows where he’s hiding?”

“Yea. The group of Ninth Grade Minor Saint experts were constantly on the lookout but not a single trace of the dragonman is found. It is like he has completely disappeared in the sky. Truly unbelievable.”

“Don’t you understand? That dragonman must be some kind of transformation technique used by some human to commit those crimes. He could be anyone in the crowd like those normal humans. That’s why it is hard to find him.”

.....

The people of Dark Generation weren’t fools. After a few days of effort searching for the dragonman, the experts involved concluded that the dragonman was a human who had a transformation technique and he might have mixed with the ordinary humans in any of the cities now.

They became nervous when they thought about this. The traders were being cautious while trading with the humans, they feared that the merchant was the dragonman. After a few days of peace and with the protection of the Ninth Grade Minor Saints in the cities, their worries were relieved.

The domain had been opened for ten days, only five more days to the major trading event. The day before the major event,

numerous experts from the three different worlds arrived at King City. They were welcomed warmly by the imperial kinsmen which had temporarily put the matter of dragonman aside because the dragonman was too afraid to show himself now.

These imperial people did not dare to show any disrespect towards the humans such as the eight families because they were valuable customers who could give them precious pills and Combat Weapons. Hence, necessary hospitality was needed.

These major powers were separated into three sections in the city, according to their world. These sections were named as the guest section which was reserved to the major powers of the three worlds.

There were still five more days to go before the actual trading event. A major power like the eight families had brought along selected genius disciples from their sect. During these five days, these disciples were allowed to trade freely in the city. They could also go to the other city to trade for different things, which would make numerous trading centres crowded with people. In other words, the Void Triangular Domain became lively when the people of eight families and other worlds arrived.

The light energy in the domain had helped Tyrant a lot, pushing his cultivation to the Second grade. Presently, they had already arrived in Dark Surge City, the nearest city to King City and was ranked as the second city in the domain. The scale of the city was a lot larger than Dark Mulberry City and Dark Shadow City. The huge city gate alone carried a grand aura that made people want to respect it.

“Dark Surge City is the largest city in the domain excluding King City. This will be the most crowded city before the major trading event. A great number of genius disciple from the eight families would certainly come over to trade. Although its size was smaller than King City, the things here are good. Perhaps you can trade for something precious in the trading centre.”

Dan King said.

“Let’s go in then.”

Jiang Chen strode forward through the large gateway. The place ahead was already crowded with people. There were people with attires that could not be seen in the Saint Origin World. They must be the humans from the other two worlds. Jiang Chen could feel the different World Origin flowing from them. Fundamentally, everyone could sense anyone who was coming from a foreign world.

After a few steps, a silhouette caught his eyes. They locked onto each other’s gazes. Jiang Chen was petrified.

Hong

Immediately after that, a Qi that carrying a chilling murderous intent rushed out of Jiang Chen’s body. The sudden change attracted Dan King and the rest’s attention. When they shifted their gazes over, they saw three men standing not far away. The leader among them looked twenty plus years old, wearing a golden

robe. He had a golden long hair and a resolute face that carried an overbearing demeanour that made everyone seemed to respect him.

“Nan Bei Chao.”

Three of them exclaimed. They finally knew why Jiang Chen’s Qi suddenly erupted from his body. The person standing in front of them was no doubt Nan Bei Chao.

“How is this possible? This guy was already killed by Chen Er before but he looks very much undamaged now. Judging from his Qi, he is already a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. How could this happen?”

“Wait, the World Origin flowing from his body isn’t similar to ours. He isn’t someone from our Saint Origin World.”

Dan King and Tyrant were freaked out. Tyrant could sense the difference from this blonde and determined that he wasn’t from their world, but his appearance and Qi were clearly similar to Nan Bei Chao, making him look exactly the same as him. The cultivation type in him was also the Monarch Heaven Art. No one could cultivate such a cultivation other than Nan Bei Chao.

The blonde frowned when he heard them calling his name. He then asked plainly. “You all know my name?”

Sure enough, his name was also Nan Bei Chao.

“This is unacceptable. Who are you? Who give you the permission to call brother Nan Bei’s name?”

“Exactly, brother Nan Bei is the outstanding genius of our Boundless World. Calling his name directly will lead to your death, and you, puny Third Grade Minor Saint, you are done for unleashing your Qi in front of brother Nan Bei.”

The two young geniuses standing beside Nan Bei Chao yelled at Jiang Chen and the others.

Nan Bei Chao of the Boundless World? Dan King and Tyrant were stupefied. Did this mean that this Nan Bei Chao wasn’t the Nan Bei Chao that they fought back in their world?

Nan Bei Chao waved his hand, implying for the two to be quiet. He came to Jiang Chen and said in an apathetic tone. “I don’t know who you are but you give me a sense of familiarity and the urge to kill. However, I am having a good mood today. So, no killings for today. Remember, don’t try to unleash your puny Qi in front of me again. Disrespecting me would only lead to one result – death, regardless of which world you are from.”

He was arrogant, aggressive and domineering. His tonality was exactly the same as the real person. Could there really be two same people in this universe? Or was he an entirely different individual? Jiang Chen could also feel the Qi of the Monarch Heaven Art from his body.

“Let’s go.”

Nan Bei Chao crossed his hands behind his back and strode deeper into the city. The two sidekick geniuses darted Jiang Chen and the rest a cold glance and let out a disdainful cold humph.

Jiang Chen was holding himself back. First, this was the Dark Surge City. If he attacked just now, he would reveal his own strength, which would make it very easy for the others to connect him to the dragonman. Second, if this dude was really as powerful as Nan Bei Chao, he was already a Seventh Grade Minor Saint, he wouldn’t stand a chance against this new Nan Bei Chao.

Most importantly, this dude was from the Boundless World. If he was the Nan Bei Chao of Saint Origin World, he would have attacked the moment he saw Jiang Chen without saying a word.

Jiang Chen was overwhelmed by fear and doubts. Back then, in Nebula Sect, he was the one who killed Nan Bei Chao, he was sure that no remains was left behind. All of a sudden, a man that looked exactly like Nan Bei Chao emerged. Jiang Chen couldn’t put his mind off this matter.

Chapter 828 - The Shameful Dog Came

“Little Chen, what was that all about? He doesn’t seem to recognize us.”

Tyrant came to Jiang Chen’s side and said in a frightened tone. Nan Bei Chao’s appearance had messed up their plans.

“He is certainly not the Nan Bei Chao we know of, but did you realise that there are many features in him that is similar to the Nan Bei Chao we knew? His name, appearance, tonality, imposing demeanour and his cultivation method are all similar. He is exactly like him. If it wasn’t for the different World Origin flowing in him and the strange way he looked at me, I would have thought that Nan Bei Chao wasn’t dead.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered. Nan Bei Chao had always been his archenemy but this enemy was already gotten rid of for quite a long time now. He had never expected to see another Nan Bei Chao here.

“How could this happen? Could it be there are a lot of other Nan Bei Chaos in the universe?”

Dan King was astonished. He would not believe it if he didn’t see it with his own eyes.

“Brother Chen, were you able to connect this Nan Bei Chao and the Nan Bei Chao of the Saint Origin World?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

Jiang Chen remained silent. He started to doubt Nan Bei Chao's identity. He was sure that the Nan Bei Chao just now wasn't the Nan Bei Chao that he killed but there must be some kind of connection. Back when he killed Nan Bei Chao, he had clearly eradicated Nan Bei Chao's body, he ignored the feeling that Nan Bei Chao may still be alive. Now it seemed that that feeling turned out to be true.

Nan Bei Chao was the reincarnation of an Immortal Soul, which meant that he originated from the Immortal World. Today, another Nan Bei Chao from the Boundless World emerged. Jiang Chen couldn't not link Nan Bei Chao and the Immortal World together. Perhaps there was one more Nan Bei Chao in the Immortal World, or perhaps the Nan Bei Chao from the Immortal World was the true Nan Bei Chao.

These were still a mystery to Jiang Chen despite his intelligence and knowledge. He wasn't able to determine the true origin of Nan Bei Chao.

"I am still uncertain about his real identity but there is one thing which I am certain of and it is that he is my enemy. I could see an indistinct murderous intent from his eyes just now. I didn't launch the attack because Dark Surge City was not the right place to fight. The murderous aura that he exuded was intrinsic. The odd thing was that he already viewed me as his enemy with a single look and said that I am somewhat familiar to him. As such, I would not leave him be, regardless of whether he is related to the previous

Nan Bei Chao or not.”

Jiang Chen said. Maybe, we would be able to find out Nan Bei Chao’s real identity once he reached the Immortal realm. He and Nan Bei Chao were fated to become enemies in this life. He would kill any Nan Bei Chao that he’d met. After he rose to the Immortal realm, if there was really a Nan Bei Chao in the Immortal World, he was sure that killing the Nan Bei Chao under the heavens first would deal great damage to the true Nan Bei Chao.

“Given the fact that Nan Bei Chao has the immortal physique, it is very likely that he has created clones in different worlds. That must be it.”

Tyrant said. Although this was only a guess, the possibility was still undeniable.

“Alright. Now is not the time to deal with Nan Bei Chao yet. We are no match for him given our current strength. Let’s hope that we will obtain some great treasures in this major trading event. If my strength is enhanced once more, my success rate of dominating this domain would become higher.”

Jiang Chen said. Nan Bei Chao’s emergence had ignited his sense of urgency. He could see it from Nan Bei Chao’s eyes that he would not let him go even if it was just a glance.

It was true that Jiang Chen could eliminate an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, but that only applied to the Dark Generation. Now that many major powers from the three worlds had come,

including the geniuses and experts of the eight families, his current strength wasn't enough to turn this domain upside down. Hence, it was important for him to raise his cultivation grade quickly.

Currently, in the deeper region of the city, Nan Bei Chao's face was frosty and his eyes were glittering with a cold light.

“Brother Nan Bei, that guy just now was too impolite. We should teach him a lesson.”

One of his followers said.

“I don't know why this man gave me a sense of familiarity, as though I have already seen him somewhere before. Despite his cultivation being only a Third Grade Minor Saint, I can feel a sense of threat from him.”

Nan Bei Chao said with a frown, he felt strange to have such feelings.

“How is that possible? Brother Nan Bei is the unrivalled genius under the Heavens. Despite your Seventh Grade Minor Saint grade, not even a Ninth Grade Minor Saint could fight you. As for that guy, he was merely a Third Grade Minor Saint that you can easily crush. He would never stand a chance against you even if he is given a hundred years more in training.”

Another follower said with a smile.

“We cannot take these assumptions as conclusions. I will kill him, but not now. My main purpose this time is to obtain all the fortune of the Dark Generation. I am a cultivator of the monarch heaven art, I will make the entire domain shudder in my presence. My monarch heaven art would be enhanced further after dominating this world. This plan could only be executed after the major trading event, after all the experts of three worlds have left. So, we have to keep our silence for the time being, letting that man live for a few more days. Killing him is merely a simple matter for me.”

Said Nan Bei Chao. Any outsider who heard this remark would be freaked out, or they might straightaway connect him to the dragonman.

Nan Bei Chao was a wildly ambitious schemer. The Void Triangular Domain had already been shaken since Jiang Chen’s arrival. Adding Nan Bei Chao into the picture would only lead to unimaginable consequences.

There was in fact certain differences between Nan Bei Chao and Jiang Chen. He was more cruel than Jiang Chen. He didn’t care about anything or any people or moral values. There was only hegemonic control and submission in his heart. Anyone who refuse to submit to him would only end up dead. It wasn’t a good thing to the Dark Generation when Nan Bei Chao had shifted his focus to them.

The Dark Generation was really unlucky to be targeted by these two heaven defying creatures. The domain would certainly be very lively this time with the presence of these two twisted devil kings.

The battle between Jiang Chen and Nan Bei Chao would be unavoidable and no one knew who would win this time.

Jiang Chen and the other three walked deeper into the city. The size of the city was in fact a lot larger than the previous cities that they had gone to. The city was crowded with people from different worlds.

Hua La La

All of a sudden, a group of city guards wearing black armours materialized in front of them. They were all filled with rippling Qi. They came forth to the street facing the two shops and everyone around.

“Everyone listen, whoever can catch that big yellow dog or provide any leads of this dog, immediately report it to the prefecture and you will be rewarded.”

The leader shouted before he left in a hurry in another direction. It wasn't just them who were in a hurry, the atmosphere of Dark Surge City was in a nervous mood. Tight security was in place and guards in black armour could be seen everywhere. All these guards looked very enraged as if they were going to kill someone.

“Big yellow dog.”

Jiang Chen and the rest sparkled their eyes when they heard the news. They were not sure whether this big yellow dog was

someone they knew.

“Excuse me, bro, may I know why are you all hunting the dog?”

Some new guy who just entered the internal section asked one of the locals.

“Aren’t you informed about this? The night before, a dog came out of nowhere and slipped into the vault of the prefecture and stole the demon soul of a Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint, the demon soul of a Soul Eater King. Everyone knows that this demon soul was one of the precious treasures that would be auctioned tomorrow. The City Lord is infuriated because of this and wants to find that dog and rip him into pieces.”

“This is infuriating. Before this was the dragonman, now it is a dog. What the hell is going on? None of this had ever happened last time when the gateway was opened.”

.....

Thinking about the incident the night before made many of them grit their teeth. Dark Surge City was the second largest city of the Dark Generation. Its security was considered to be very tight. Because of this, it gave the citizens some sense of relief and that big yellow dog took the chance. Before the Major Trading Event took place in King City, there would be trading activities held in Dark Surge City. One of them was the auction that would be attended by numerous geniuses of the three worlds. Now, everything was messed up when the Ninth Grade Minor Saint demon soul was

stolen by that dog. This incident had greatly affected the prestige of the prefecture and the dignity of the Dark Generation.

The opening of Void Triangular Domain wasn't as smooth sailing as last time. The matter of the dragonman had already quieted down recently, but another dog-like creature suddenly emerged.

Puff

Tyrant couldn't stand it anymore and laughed. If there was any dog that could commit such a crime, it was Big Yellow.

“Big Yellow is being naughty again.”

Yan Chenyu didn't know whether to cry or laugh. If they were talking about the ability to cause trouble, Big Yellow was certainly better than Jiang Chen. Don't think about getting a peaceful day with Big Yellow around.

“Ninth Grade Minor Saint demon soul of a Soul Eater Demon King? That was why he couldn't let go of such a precious thing. Big Yellow has an innate ability – Soul Crunching Tune. He would surely get a lot of benefits by obtaining that demon soul, especially since it is a Ninth Grade Minor Saint demon soul.”

Jiang Chen laughed lightly. There must be a reason behind whatever Big Yellow stole.

“Haha! Big Yellow has come, this time it will be fun.”

Tyrant laughed. Jiang Chen was delighted to know that Big Yellow would join them in this trip. They felt that something was missing if Big Yellow wasn't here.

Chapter 829 - Stolen By the Dog

Almost every corner of the city was monitored by city guards. The current scene reminded Jiang Chen of Red City, when they were also looking for a dog. The history repeated itself today.

“I was not surprised that the City Lord got infuriated, Big Yellow have just stolen the precious item that is going to be auctioned. The prefecture would usually announce the items to be auctioned before the auction day to attract buyers. This demon soul must be one of the items that was announced to the public. Now that the item is stolen by Big Yellow, it would be so embarrassing for them not to have the demon soul tomorrow.”

Dan King shook his head and was speechless towards Big Yellow's actions.

“Senior Dan King, maybe because you haven't been with him for very long that's why you don't understand him well. This was his usual way of doing things. If no trouble was created here, how could we still call him Big Yellow?”

Tyrant smiled.

Dan King looked at Jiang Chen and shook his head again. The first was Jiang Chen, second was Nan Bei Chao, now it was Big Yellow. It was hard to imagine what would happen next in Void Triangular Domain.

“Brother Chen, do you think they will find our small doggy?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

“What do you think?”

Jiang Chen chuckled. Yan Chenyu reacted the same way. Large number of manpower was dispatched to find Big Yellow, if he really wants to hide himself none of them would be able to find him, they'll just tire themselves out. They should know that this was an extremely cunning dog.

“First, he is doing this because of the beneficial effect of the demon soul, second, he must have heard about me and want to help to divert their attention.”

Jiang Chen said. There was a bond between the two of them, like real sworn brothers. They could anticipate what the other was trying to do from the first action.

Big Yellow's considerate effort touched Jiang Chen's heart.

“Little doggy is awesome.”

Yan Chenyu's face was full of smile.

“Let's go, we have to move into the city. If Big Yellow is hiding somewhere around here, he must be able to find us, and then, we'll try to find ways to regroup.”

Jiang Chen said before the four of them strode deeper into the city.

Dark Surge City was very large but it didn't take long for them to reach the central region, which was very crowded with people. The two lanes of the street were partially occupied by stalls on both sides. A lot of cultivators were engaging in transaction with them.

Suddenly, a yell was heard.

“F*cking dog! Stand right here!”

The sound was coming from a distance. As soon as the voice faded, a brilliant golden light appeared before Jiang Chen at maximum speed. The golden light stopped and turned into a large dog – Big Yellow.

“Haha! Little Chen, master dog has finally found you all.”

Big Yellow smiled delightfully when he saw Jiang Chen, then he walked to Yan Chenyu and greeted her nicely. Jiang Chen couldn't help but roll his eyes after seeing this. Did this dude really care about him? Why did he feel like this dog was only missing Xiao Yu? Tyrant felt annoyed that this dog didn't even bother to say hello to him before going to Yan Chenyu, treating him like air.

“Little doggy, you have gotten yourself into trouble again.”

Yan Chenyu patted Big Yellow's head.

“You as*hole! Still dare to show yourself after stealing the treasure from the prefecture?”

Tyrant was speechless. But then, their gazes instantly turned frozen when they saw Big Yellow's cultivation – Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint. When he left them until now, it was merely a short period of time. His growth was ridiculously fast. Anyway, they understood it when they thought about the possibility that Big Yellow had consumed the demon soul of the Soul Eater Demon King.

“F*cking dog! Stand there!”

The angry yell was heard again. Two powerful silhouettes were flying in Big Yellow's direction. One of them was full of red flames on his body and the other was full of frost. Judging from their Qi, their cultivation were both Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

When they reached Jiang Chen, their Qi was still fluctuating. Their gazes were glued on Big Yellow and an angry fire was about to explode from them.

“F*cking dog! Hand over the treasure right now! Or else, I will peel your skin off!”

The youth with flames yelled at Big Yellow, ignoring the existence of Jiang Chen and the rest.

“Look! That’s the big yellow dog. He has appeared.”

“That’s him, the one who stole the treasure of the prefecture. Quickly inform the people of the prefecture.”

“What are these two men doing? They are humans. Are they trying to help the prefecture retrieve the treasure from the big yellow dog?”

.....

For an instant, all the attention was shifted to Big Yellow, making him the center of attention.

“What makes you think that I have the treasure? Don’t simply accuse me.”

Big Yellow wagged his sturdy tail, acting like a dead pig that wasn’t afraid of being boiled.

“You shameless dog! It seems like I really have to peel your skin off!”

The youth that was surrounded with a chilling Qi had a much more fiery temper than the other. He struck out a palm in Big Yellow’s direction, but it was grabbed by another hand midway.

The youth was stunned. He turned to glare at the person who stopped him. It was a youth in white smiling at him.

“Hey, I suggest you not to interfere in this business.”

The youth said coldly.

“Why are these brothers being so angry? We can always talk.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Fine. It seems like you are with him. Ask this dog to hand over the Fire Soul Pearl and the Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal now and we’ll forget about this incident. I am Duan Rong of the Black Yellow World. You all can’t afford to offend me.”

The youth stared at Big Yellow coldly.

“Where did this shameless and ignorant dog come from? Who gave him the audacity to steal Huo Miao’s things?”

The youth in flames yelled once more.

Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Dan King were stunned. It didn’t seem like they were here for the demon soul, but for the other treasures. What did Big Yellow actually do?

This guy's name was Huo Miao. It was rare to come across geniuses possessing this surname. Clearly, he was a genius from one of the eight families – Fire Family. The companion beside him was the genius of the Black Yellow World.

They finally understood the incident behind this after Big Yellow told them via divine sense. It happened when Hua Miao was trading something with Duan Rong. Huo Miao used a Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal to exchange for the Fire Soul Pearl from Duan Rong. This was because Duan Rong cultivated a cultivation method that involved the cold attribute, he needed items with cold features to match his frosty physique. Hua Miao however was the opposite. So the trade was a mutually benefiting trade, but none of them expected that the treasure would be snatched by a dog in the trading process. That's why they had chased after him until here, and they were so angry. No one wouldn't be angry if this incident happened while trading.

“Huh? Who set the law that the things of Huo Miao could not be stolen? You want to blame others because you failed to protect your own item? Besides, you aren't his opponent. So, you should feel lucky that he hasn't taken your lives.”

Jiang Chen said in a cold tone. He would never be courteous to arrogant people. Besides that, he also knew Big Yellow very well. He wouldn't return the things that he stole or snatched. Now that Big Yellow had gotten himself in trouble, Jiang Chen would naturally step forward and help him.

Chapter 830 - Shove Off!

“What did you just say? I can see that your Qi of World Origin belongs to that of the Saint Origin World. Which major power are you from? How dare you go against me?! Don’t you want to live?”

Huo Miao was enraged after hearing Jiang Chen’s comment. Most of the people who cultivated the fire attribute cultivation method had fiery physique as well as temper, let alone Huo Miao who was the genius of the Fire Family. He had powerful strength as well as a powerful backer. He had been raised in the best environment since young. There was an arrogance that was planted deep in his bones, always thinking that he is always above others. Today, a Third Grade Minor Saint weakling came out of nowhere and said something rude to him. He must have a death wish.

“Like what he just said, master dog is just showing mercy to the both of you, or else, you two would have already become dead men.”

Big Yellow said in a blunt and shameless way, but it was the truth. It wasn’t a problem for him to get rid of these two Sixth Grade Minor Saint geniuses using his current strength. However, because Big Yellow was the one who stole their things first, and they were in Dark Surge City, it wouldn’t be a good thing if he initiated a fight.

“Brother Huo, since you are from the same world with them, I will entrust this matter to you.”

Duan Rong said.

“Don’t worry about it, Brother Duan. Your Ten-Thousand-Year-Old-Cold-Crystal would absolutely be returned to you.”

Huo Miao said with assurance. Like Duan Rong said, these people were from the same world as Huo Miao. If he couldn’t handle these few insignificant people, he would turn into an object of ridicule, ultimately hurting his and Fire Family’s reputation.

Hua Miao took a step forward. The flames that suffused all over his body grew stronger. The flame on his body was some sort of unusual flames that was more dreadful than any ordinary flames. Every descendant of the Fire Family was born with a fire attribute physique. This was also the reason that made the Fire Family one of the strongest eight in the Pure Land.

“Dude, I will say it one last time. Hand me the Fire Soul Pearl and the Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal, together with the dog and I will pretend that none of this has happened. I must peel the skin of this dog off to restore my reputation.”

Huo Miao said proudly.

“Little bastard of the Fire Family, you want to restore your reputation from master dog and him? I really don’t understand this. Isn’t fire the strongest weapon of your family? In my opinion, you, a genius of the Fire Family only has less than a tenth of his strength in the aspect of fire.”

Big Yellow shook his head while stirring his temper.

“What did you say? You say that my flames is no match for this dude?”

Huo Miao raged.

“I am not talking about just the strength of your fire, but the strength of fire of the entire Fire Family.”

Big Yellow said.

Hong

After hearing Big Yellow's words, Huo Miao's rage instantly boiled. As a member of the Fire Family, the thing that he couldn't accept the most was when someone criticize their strength of fire. This big yellow creature in front of him had just done it. Even in the entire Saint Origin World, there was no one who dared to show contempt for their fire.

“You, what's your name?”

Huo Miao looked over at Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen revealed his name.

“It seems like you are also an alchemist. Did you think that the strength of your fire is good just because you’re an alchemist? Let me tell you, your flames is merely superficial. You are only using it as a tool in concoction. The true flames is used to attack. If you can defeat me with your flames, I will not take the Fire Soul Pearl.”

Huo Miao was very confident. He pointed at Jiang Chen, totally disregarding Jiang Chen’s feelings.

As a matter of fact, anyone who was in his position would also never put Jiang Chen into their eyes. Due to the gap of their cultivation, no Sixth Grade Minor Saint would show respect to a cultivator who was three grades lower than him, let alone competing with him on his innate attribute.

“In that case, you are guaranteed to not get the Fire Soul Pearl.”

Jiang Chen shrugged, absolutely unconcerned about his opponent’s arrogance. It would be unusual if a genius of the eight families wasn’t being snobbish. Of course, they had the reason to be arrogant.

Chi La

Huo Miao’s arm moved and along with a ‘Chi La’ sound, a red flams bounced out, like a fiery snake drifting on both of his palms divinely.

“Raging Flames Prairie.”

Huo Miao bellowed, the flames rumbled as it rushed out in Jiang Chen’s direction. Apparently, Huo Miao’s fire skill was exceptional. The flames and his body have already become one. The flames that was struck by him turned into a dragon that suddenly came to life.

This was a combat technique of the fire attribute. Huo Miao’s hand seal and powerful physique had made the technique stronger. It was true that this flames was not comparable to any ordinary alchemist. Even Dan King himself wouldn’t deny it as he was also well versed in fire.

Among the eight families, the Fire and Dan Family were the two families that were well versed in fire attribute techniques. If the fiery technique between the two was to be compared, the Dan Family would be the weaker one as the family only used their fire for alchemic purposes.

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk at the corner of his mouth while waiting for Huo Miao’s fire dragon attack. He too had to acknowledge Huo Miao’s powerful attack and mastery of fire, but unfortunately, it was far from enough to match Jiang Chen’s True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire. There was no need to compare.

As the fire dragon reached Jiang Chen, he struck out a large red palm full of brilliant flames along with a rumble of a dragon’s roar. It had caught many pair of eyes as the fire dragon suddenly shot

out of Jiang Chen's palm. Judging by the size of this fire dragon, it wasn't as big as Huo Miao's fire dragon, but the Qi of this dragon was too overpowering. The Qi of Huo Miao's fire dragon shriveled up immediately, as if it had encountered its true king.

That's right. Jiang Chen's flames was the king of flames compared to Huo Miao's flames. The flames carried a formidable aura of a king, causing many of the flames to tremble.

Roar

The fire dragon of Huo Miao turned smaller when Jiang Chen's fire dragon let out another roar, and then was swallowed completely by Jiang Chen's fire dragon. Then, Jiang Chen waved his hand to summon back his fire dragon. Now, he was looking at Huo Miao with a smile on his face.

“What?”

Huo Miao was stunned.

“What terrifying flame is that? It could actually overpower my flames, which meant that it is greater than the psychic fire of our family. How could there be such a flame in our world?”

Huo Miao was shocked. In fact, there was no way that he wouldn't be shocked. He wouldn't feel bad if Jiang Chen had suppressed him using skills of other attributes. He couldn't accept the truth that he was defeated by Jiang Chen's flames. But the

more he thought about Jiang Chen's terrifying flames, the fear in him got stronger.

All of a sudden, his frightful eyes revealed a sense of greed. That was right, it was greed.

“How could a tiny figure like you possess such superior flames? It is the king of flames, a Saint's fire. It's definitely an insult to the flame to fall under your possession. Only the people of the Fire Family is eligible to possess such flames.”

Huo Miao's eyes sparkled sinisterly. He took another step forward and said. “Brat, if you hand over your flames to me, I will let bygones be bygones. I will also provide an opportunity for you to cultivate in our family. Your cultivation will definitely soar, once you enter my Fire Family. You should know how many people of Saint Origin World dream to join our family. I hope that you won't miss this once-in-a-lifetime opportunity.”

Dan King and the others were confused. After a while, they started to understand the scenario. It seemed like this guy was attracted by Jiang Chen's flames. He wanted to forcibly take it.

However, this guy was destined to be disappointed because Jiang Chen would surely not be interested in joining the Fire Family.

“Not interested. You have lost just now. Like what you said earlier, leave now.”

Jiang Chen replied in a cold tone.

“Jiang Chen, don’t try to go the hard way when you are given the easy way.”

Huo Miao’s eyes glinted with anger.

“The hard way?”

Jiang Chen was getting a little annoyed. He didn’t wish to start a conflict with a person from the Fire Family in Dark Surge City, but if Huo Miao insisted, he had no choice but to react.

Hong.....

A strong Qi suddenly shot out of Huo Miao’s body. He was going to attack Jiang Chen because the flames he had was just too precious. If he could obtain such flames and brought it back to the Fire Family, he would earn great reputation and recognition from his family. How could he let this golden opportunity slip away from him?

Swoosh

However, Jiang Chen moved before Huo Miao had even attacked. He moved in a very fast speed, appearing before Huo Miao in a flash. No one knew when did a sword appeared in his hand. The cold sword had reached Huo Miao’s throat and its sharp light had broken Huo Miao’s skin. It would only take an inch deeper to take

Huo Miao's life.

Hiss

Huo Miao caught his breath, keeping his powerful Qi instantly. He could feel a bone-stinging chilling aura from Jiang Chen's long sword. What frightened him the most was Jiang Chen's speed. He couldn't see Jiang Chen's sword. In other words, if Jiang Chen wanted to kill him just now, he would already be dead by now.

"You, what are you trying to do?"

Huo Miao's tone was slightly shivering. He could also feel his soul shuddering under the pressure of Jiang Chen's Qi.

"You should feel lucky that I don't want to kill anyone now. Shove off!"

Jiang Chen bellowed coldly.

Chapter 831 - I have already eaten

Shove off!

The word hurt Huo Miao's self-confidence deeply, he was a member of Fire Family. No one has ever spoken to him like this before. He was the one who always told others to get lost. He was a dignified genius of his family, but he was humiliated by a youth that came from nowhere. How could he possibly accept that?

In spite of that, he had no choice but to swallow it because his opponent was just too strong, he was no match for him. He knew that he would die in a split second if this youth wanted him dead. He could also sense Jiang Chen's eyes that was as cold as a long sword. He was afraid that his opponent would immediately kill him if he continued to wander around.

“Haha! Get lost, you lose.”

Big Yellow laughed happily as he walked to Huo Miao, wagging his sturdy tail. Then, he turned and shook his backside at him.

Huo Miao staggered backward, almost fell down. He spurted out a mouthful of blood after realizing that he was just insulted by a dog. He even had to stomach that.

“Fine, Jiang Chen. You win today. You would certainly pay a great price for what you did today. You should know that there is no one who would dare to provoke the Fire Family, and, you irritating dog,. I will skin you off sooner or later and barbecue

you.”

Huo Miao left a cold message before turning into a blaze and disappeared.

After Huo Miao was gone, Jiang Chen turned to Duan Rong, a genius from the Black Yellow World, but that didn't concern Jiang Chen. Once they left Void Triangular Domain, they would fundamentally not be meeting each other. As such, even if Duan Rong had a powerful backer behind him, it wouldn't be a threat to Jiang Chen.

“You're still not leaving?”

Jiang Chen stared at Duan Rong.

“Humph!”

Duan Rong let out a cold humph before he turned and left. He was smart enough to know that he had hit a wall today. The youth in white wasn't an opponent that he could afford to provoke. As his strength was on par with Huo Miao, he immediately noticed their disparity when Huo Miao lost in the mini battle. If he persisted to initiate a fight, he would only bring insult upon himself. It seemed like the Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal would fall into their hands today. He would need to settle this score with them next time.

“*Wakaka* you are too unskilled to fight master dog.”

Big Yellow laughed but he was slapped by Jiang Chen in the middle.

“Little Chen, why did you hit me?”

Big Yellow glared at him.

“You stupid dog, I knew that you have caused trouble for me again.”

Jiang Chen gave an angry glare at Big Yellow. He had been the magnet of troubles wherever he went. Jiang Chen's plan for the Dark Generation had yet to be executed and the matter of Nan Bei Chao struck him incidentally just now. Before entering the domain, he had already killed the people of the Dan Family. Now, he had offended a member of the Fire Family. Thinking about all of these problems had really gave him a headache.

In fact, Jiang Chen was already used to them. There was a saying that says that worries were too much need not be worried. There were unlimited worries out there and he would have to stomach a great amount of them when the time came.

“What did you say? The troubles you caused are greater than mine.”

Big Yellow stuck out his tongue at Jiang Chen.

“That’s enough. Stop arguing about how great your troubles is. By the way Big Yellow, I understand that you stole that demon soul for your own good, but why did you steal the two items from them as well? I suppose they aren’t that useful to you, right?”

Tyrant said.

“I stole it for Xiao Yu. As for the Fire Soul Pearl, it just so happen to be there, so I took it along as well.”

Big Yellow spat out the fist-sized Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal and drifted to Yan Chenyu. The appearance of the crystal lowered the surrounding temperature immediately, and the frosty Qi that it exuded shivered everyone around.

“This crystal is indeed a high-quality treasure of the cold attribute, it would certainly be beneficial to the heart of the ice god. If I refine it, perhaps I can make a breakthrough to the Fifth Grade Minor Saint realm.”

Yan Chenyu’s eyes sparkled. She possessed the Nine Yin Meridians physique. It was imaginable how much this crystal would benefit her. The crystal made her forgive Big Yellow’s mischievous act, because she would also try many ways to obtain this crystal if she ever saw it. To Yan Chenyu, it was a rare crystal that she had never seen before.

“Xiao Yu, since Big Yellow stole it for you, don’t hesitate to take it.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Some people tried to blame me just now... I think the Fire Soul Pearl isn't useful to you, so master dog will just eat it then.”

Big Yellow darted Jiang Chen a glare. Although the Fire Soul Pearl was also a rare item, it wasn't that useful to Jiang Chen. The True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire that he cultivated were already paramount flames. Even if he was given the pearl, the only beneficial thing that he would obtain from it was the energy inside it. The fire of the pearl couldn't enhance his original flames anymore.

As Big Yellow could digest anything, eating the pearl was quite beneficial to him.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

At this time, powerful Qis' coming from different people were heading this way not far away from here. After a few blinks, it reached the center of the street. This group of people had a very high cultivation. The leader among them was an elder with silver hair, a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. The rest of them were Seventh to Eighth Grade Minor Saints. They immediately got very angry when they saw Big Yellow.

“Look! The people of the prefecture is here. This dog is finished this time.”

“What a hateful dog, stealing the things of the prefecture. The City Lord would surely not be light on him.”

“That’s the Great Elder of the prefecture, a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. You can already tell how serious this matter is now that he’s here.”

“Of course. Anyone should know that the trading event in the city was always handled by him, including the items and the treasures. He naturally wouldn’t look good, after that dog stole the treasure from the prefecture.”

.....

Plenty of people in the shops started discussing after seeing their arrival. They said that the thief of the night before was already found and certainly wouldn’t face any pleasant consequences in the presence of the Great Elder.

Jiang Chen and Tyrant couldn’t help but rubbed their foreheads gently, when they saw that this people had found them. This was rather troublesome. They weren’t snobbish fools. It was obvious that these group of people were harder to deal with than the previous two.

“This is the dog.”

Someone pointed at Big Yellow.

However, Big Yellow still acted in a carefree manner. In fact, it was already not bad that he could still maintain his calmness when confronted by so many powerful experts.

The Great Elder's darkened face turned and stared at Big Yellow. He then said coldly. "Hand over the demon soul and I will reduce your punishment."

"Eaten."

Big Yellow said it grimly and belched.

"What? Eaten?"

The people of the prefecture were stunned. The Great Elder's face turned fiery red and he spurted out a mouthful of blood. The demon soul was eaten by this dog? Was there a more hateful thing in the world than this?

"Eaten? You shameless dog! That is a Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint demon soul of the Soul Eater Demon King. What rights do you have to consume it? Cut open his stomach to see if the demon soul is in it."

An Eighth Grade Minor Saint bellowed.

"He is right, the demon soul has already been eaten by him."

Jiang Chen said.

“Then, you must pay the price. Kill this dog and retrieve the demon soul.”

The Great Elder gritted his teeth and said.

“You all want to kill master dog? I’m afraid that all of you aren’t qualified to do so.”

Big Yellow was angered as well. The dragon horn on his forehead started to glitter. If no compromise could be reached, then just fight openly. He was a being that didn’t fear anything. He wouldn’t hesitate to start a battle with the opponents despite their strength.

“Allow me to kill him!”

An Eighth Grade Minor Saint middle-aged man fluctuated his murderous Qi and charged at Big Yellow.

“Stop!”

Jiang Chen yelled.

“Brat, who the hell are you? This is a matter of the prefecture, I suggest that you don’t interfere in it.”

The man looked coldly at Jiang Chen.

“My name is Jiang Chen, a friend of this dog. How about this? I will compensate you all for the demon soul.”

Jiang Chen said. He couldn't afford to start a fight in Dark Surge City as their opponents were too powerful. If he attacked, he would immediately expose himself.

“This is a joke. Do you have any idea how valuable that demon soul is? Can you afford to buy it? Not to mention, this demon soul has already been announced to the public and should be one of the treasures in the auction event tomorrow. How are we going to keep our reputation if the promised demon soul is not available for tomorrow's auction ?”

Keng *Keng* (clattering of metals)

Jiang Chen didn't waste any time to resolve the matter. He quickly took out two powerful Combat Weapons – a blade and a sword. Although they weren't considered high grade Minor Saint Weapons, they weren't ordinary weapons either. The value of these two weapons would clearly not be able to match with the value of the demon soul eaten by Big Yellow, but it might be the case for the people of the Dark Generation who was desperate for pills and Combat Weapons. Even this Ninth Grade Minor Saint Great Elder was using a Combat Weapon that was akin to these two.

“I believe that Great Elder is a person who can identify great

items. These two are Minor Saint Weapons. Let's treat this as the price for the demon soul and end our conflict here. What do you think?"

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"These two Combat Weapons are indeed good items, but I am afraid that the value of the demon soul isn't only worth two of these weapons. The price would be a lot higher than this, if the demon soul is put into auction for you humans tomorrow. Besides, the action of this dog has caused the prefecture to lose some of its reputation. You think that you can use these two Combat Weapons to resolve this conflict? Don't think that this is just a child's play."

Great Elder smirked.

Chapter 832 - Resolving the Crisis

Jiang Chen laughed after hearing the Great Elder's comment. After interacting with humans for so many years, his knowledge and experience regarding pills and Combat Weapons weren't similar to ordinary Dark Generations. Besides knowing what he wanted, he also knew the demands of human.

Of course, Jiang Chen didn't expect to get through this by offering two weapons. However, he realized the distinct change in the manners of the Great Elder when he took out the weapons. He was trying to get more of these weapons from Jiang Chen. As for Jiang Chen, he had no intention of showing the available Combat Weapons because he was a decisive person.

“Great Elder, I think that I have to inform you about this. It's better for you to not underestimate this dog. I suppose that you have heard about the Demon Race of Saint Origin World before. This dog is a high ranking member of the race. His status is even greater than the princes of your Dark Generation. You should all think it over before touching him, as you know the way Demon Race conduct things. It will certainly cause a major chaos in this domain. At that time, the auction event won't be able to proceed smoothly. The major trading event in King City will also receive a great impact. I heard that the dragonman has already caused a huge mess in your generation a few days ago. If you were to add the mess that was created by the experts of the Demon Race, I'm afraid that your Dark Generation won't be able to swallow it this time. I don't know if Great Elder could shoulder this responsibility.”

Jiang Chen said casually. At this point, it was necessary to reveal

Big Yellow's identity. The Great Elder might not care about the other major powers but they knew the Demon Race very well after many years of businesses. The people of the Demon Race were always forthright. They wouldn't hesitate to fight anyone who offended them and the truth would be useless at that time.

It was true that Big Yellow had a status similar to or higher than the princes of Dark Generation in the Demon Race. This could be seen clearly when the Peacock King personally went to Western Domain to fetch him. Furthermore, it was only several days ago that Big Yellow joined the race, but he was already brought along to Void Triangular Domain. It was likely that such treatment was one of a kind. Besides that, Big Yellow was a very powerful divine beast that has the complete bloodline of a divine beast. Naturally, the Demon Race would treat and nurture him like a precious talent. If these group of people dared to touch Big Yellow's fur, given the character of the Demon Race, he was sure that they would not let this matter go.

The Great Elder and the others' facial expression changed. In the beginning, they thought that Big Yellow was some sort of cowardly dog that came from nowhere. None of them thought that this dog had such a high and prestigious status in the Demon Race, a very powerful major power which was well-known for their impulsive behavior.

They could already recall that there was once a member of the Demon Race that clashed with a major power of the Black Yellow World in the middle of a major trading event. Seconds later, the Demon Race started a fight, nearly causing the complete destruction to the auction platform. They would truly not hesitate when they had decided to attack.

Furthermore, the special ability of Demon Race was undeniably powerful. Their physiques were as strong as the people of the Dark Generation. These two factors made it very hard to go against them and had become an unsettling problem for the Dark Generation. They could choose to ignore the humans but not these demons.

“Great Elder, I have told you whatever I think is necessary. If you are fine with it, I will use these two Combat Weapons to compensate the price of the demon soul. If you are not, I will keep them and I will no longer interfere in this matter. You are free to do whatever you want with the dog.”

Jiang Chen said.

The Great Elder frowned deeply while being caught in the dilemma. The reputation of the prefecture had been affected negatively when the demon soul was stolen, but it seemed like punishing this dog wouldn't bring them any benefits either.

“Great Elder, what this kid said makes sense. If this dog is really a member of the Demon Race with a high status, we can't afford to offend him, knowing how barbaric that group is.”

“That's right Great Elder. In my opinion, we should just accept these two Minor Saint weapons. I believe that it is worth a high price. Anyway, it's still better than not receiving anything. If we touch this dog, the people of the Demon Race would certainly cause us tremendous troubles. At that time, not only can we not

proceed with our auction event, but also affect the major trading event in King City. If Dark King finds out that it is us who caused trouble, we would all be doomed.”

Two people were murmuring beside the Great Elder. It seemed like they understood the scenario quite well.

“Fine. Jiang Chen, I will humor you by taking these two Combat Weapons. I hope that this matter will never happen again, or else, I would guarantee his punishment, even if he is the prince of Demon Race.”

The Great Elder darted a cold glance to Big Yellow while keeping the two Minor Saint Weapons.

“Great Elder is a wise man. Tomorrow, I will head to the prefecture and watch the incredible auction event held by your race.”

Jiang Chen held his fist at the Great Elder, knowing that the matter had been resolved.

The Great Elder didn't speak anymore and left with his people. He had lost more reputation than what he had expected today, so he didn't want to stay there any longer.

“Little Chen, what you did was awesome! By borrowing the power of the Demon Race, you were able to keep the Great Elder's silence.”

Tyrant showed his thumbs to Jiang Chen.

“Chen Er, it’s best to resolve the matter without a fight.”

Dan King looked over at Jiang Chen in admiration. He was actually very nervous when he saw the power of their opponents.

His impression of Jiang Chen had been raised a notch higher in Dan King’s heart. One needed both bravery and intelligence to achieve success. Jiang Chen was not only powerful but also wise when it came to solving some situations where force wasn’t the solution. It was rare to meet such a talented young man.

After this series of events, they had lost the mood to continue strolling on the streets. They quickly found an inn to rest until the next day.

There was an exquisitely built courtyard outside the inn, where they all gathered. Jiang Chen still felt happy to be able to meet Big Yellow in Void Triangular Domain despite the mess that he had created. As a matter of fact, this dog wouldn’t be Big Yellow if he didn’t create a mess.

At any rate, Big Yellow had already come, which would be of great help to Jiang Chen. In his plan, Big Yellow was indispensable because only Big Yellow could help Jiang Chen find those secretly hidden ore mines.

Chapter 833 - The Ultimate Plan

“Big Yellow, how are you doing in the Demon Race?”

Jiang Chen asked as if this was the thing that concerned him the most. Big Yellow was just like Wu Ningzhu, unfamiliar to the place when he got to the Demon Race in the Pure Land. Big Yellow was invited to go there, unlike Wu Ningzhu, who was forced to return. So, there would certainly be a difference in them.

“Still fine. Those old men’s eyes glittered when they saw me. It made me feel so uncomfortable when I think about how they will abuse me. Luckily, they are sane people. It was actually quite messy in the Demon Race. That old man peacock said that it happens to any clan in the Pure Land. Someone wanted to train me to be the next patriarch of the Demon Race but of course, there were many oppositions. I almost got overly frustrated by these political issues until I got the chance to let out some steam in this trip to Void Triangular Domain.”

Big Yellow said in faint tone. These few sentences were enough to allow Jiang Chen and the others imagine the intense competition in the Demon Race. In fact, this was present in any major power. As the major sect grew stronger and more influential, the internal competition would be greater. Big Yellow had certainly suffered a lot of rejections when someone suggested to nurture Big Yellow into the next leader of the race.

“Big Yellow, in which case, you have to be careful. The race to become the next patriarch would garner support from others but at the same time, also attract other people’s envy, and would try to

stop you from achieving your goal. As such, improving yourself is the most crucial.”

Said Jiang Chen.

“I understand, I am not a fool that can be controlled by anyone. The reason that I stole that the demon soul was improve my current strength. Besides the cultivation grade of the demon soul, it could also provide great help to enhance my innate abilities. My cultivation rose to the Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint after refining it. But, it hadn’t been fully refined yet. It won’t be a problem for me to advance to the Sixth Grade after refining it completely. Adding the metamorphosis of my Soul Crunching Tune, it won’t take long for me to reach the Seventh Grade Minor Demon Saint. After that, I would be capable enough to defeat a Ninth Grade Minor Saint opponent.”

Big yellow said. Don’t let his usual carelessness and rashness deceive you. He was in fact very shrewd. Anyone who failed to see that would suffer unexpected losses.

After hearing what Big Yellow said, Jiang Chen, Tyrant and Dan King couldn’t help but shook their heads and smile bitterly. This was a proof of how powerful a divine beast’s bloodline is. Besides, the Dragon-Horse bloodline in his body was unlike any other ordinary divine beast’s bloodline. This advantage alone was incomparable. As Big Yellow’s advance further in his cultivation path, his bloodline would be enhanced as well, increasing his rate of advancement. As such, his future advancement would be faster than his previous advancement.

“Stop talking about me. Why are you all in Void Triangular Domain? Before the Void Triangular Domain was opened, I have gone to Nebula Sect to find you all, but none of you were there. After that, I heard about the incident of the dragonman here. It goes without saying that it was you, because only you could do such a thing.”

Said Big Yellow.

“Father is a renowned alchemist that had been here before. He had brought all of us here with the Spatial Talisman a few days ago.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“No wonder.”

Big Yellow shook his head before turning to Jiang Chen and said. “Are you trying to cast me aside for not asking me to join your wonderful activities? By the way, why did you kill those princes of rich the families? And destroyed one of their cities? I wonder how huge the conflict was.”

Big Yellow sounded confused despite his good understanding of Jiang Chen. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn't a reckless man and wouldn't just cause such a big movement in a new world.

“Big Yellow, those princes died for good reasons.”

Yan Chenyu told him everything that happened in Dark Mulberry City. He became enraged when he heard that Dark Liuyun wanted to poison them, and how he treated the female humans in the Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion.

“Dammit! This group of bastards are worse than war-mongering beasts! Good work, killing them! I believe that the entire Dark Generation should be annihilated!”

Big Yellow bellowed.

“I am certain that the Dark Generation would have to pay their fair share for what they have done; they would surely come and find me soon. This is a conflict that has no solution. We’ll just see who’s stronger. Big Yellow, in fact, you have come just at the right time. I have a big plan that would require your help.”

Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow.

“What’s the big plan? Tell me more. I know that master dog is an indispensable member of the team. You have never excluded me before when you were doing great things.”

Big Yellow sounded like a narcissistic freak. His eyes almost fell out when he heard that Jiang Chen had a big plan for him. He was undeniably a being who feared peace and felt excited when there was trouble.

“You already know my cultivation method; the consumption of

energy would only become larger every time I advance, although it isn't obvious right now. The moment I stepped into Great Saint realm, I'm afraid that the amount of Saint Rank Restoration Pills needed would be tremendous for each advancement. It is an unknown figure even to me. Plus, Saint Rank Restoration Pills were rare and precious item. Even the eight families could not afford my cultivation needs. As for the True Meta Stones here, they are the perfect substitute for the Saint Rank Restoration Pills. You should have already heard that I have emptied the vaults of three different cities and an ore mine. Now, there are 200 million True Meta Stones in my possessions but it is still far from enough. My goal is to possess all the True Meta Stones in this domain."

After he spoke his main objective, Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled with two beams of brilliant lights.

"Damn! Aren't you being too greedy?! But I like it!"

Big Yellow was stunned for a moment before it turned into a smile. "It just means that we are going to confront the Dark Generation sooner or later, but they are very powerful. The two of us are certainly no match for them, especially your strength, it isn't enough for that kind of battle."

Big Yellow sounded a little worried.

"Naturally, we can't act right now, first and foremost— our strength is still insufficient, second – there are people from three different worlds here. The scene would certainly be chaotic and uncontrollable if we act now. I am just a mere Third Grade Minor Saint, but I have already collected a huge amount of dark spirit. It

won't be a problem for me to advance to the Fourth Grade Minor Saint after refining these spirits. However, as far as my foundation is concerned, I'll keep this advancement method as a last resort. In the auction event of Dark Surge City and King City, I believe that there will be different kinds of items and weapons that would be beneficial to my advancement."

Jiang Chen continued. "My flames can significantly suppress the dark energy. After I transformed, I can even defeat an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. If I advanced to the Fourth Grade Minor Saint, a Ninth Grade Minor Saint would no longer be my opponent, but the number of Ninth Grade Minor Saints is just too many, it would be hard for me to fight all of them. So, I need to advance to the Fifth Grade Minor Saint, the auctions would certainly provide the chances for my advancement. After the major auction, the people of three worlds would surely leave simultaneously. We will act as soon as they left."

This was the plan that Jiang Chen was talking about.

Dan King couldn't help but gasp in a cold breath of air after knowing what Jiang Chen's goal was. This kind of audacity couldn't just be described as being overly bold. He was afraid that only Jiang Chen could plan this out. A lot of people would surely be freaked out if this plan was leaked to the public.

"Alright. This is a world-shaking plan. Master dog liked this kind of plan the most. What's my role in this plan? Why do I feel like I wouldn't be of any use in this plan?"

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen.

“Of course, you are useful. My ultimate target is those ore mines. The small ore mine of Dark Mulberry City alone consisted of 50 million True Meta Stones. I am confident that the super large ore mine controlled by King City would be many times more bountiful than this amount. However, those mines are hidden from our eyes and senses. Only the people of Dark Generation are able to find them. So, I’m afraid that only you can help me find those mines. Do you think your role is useless now?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

“*Wakaka* No! There is nothing that master dog cannot find, even if those ore mines are nicely concealed from our eyes. They could never hide it from my special senses.”

Big Yellow laughed when he understood his great role.

“I also think so. When little Chen becomes powerful enough, he can just force King City to give the location of those ore mine. Wouldn’t that help save you more effort than finding the ore mine yourself?”

Tyrant sneered.

“Go f*ck yourself, bald donkey! Do you know what the consequences are for saying that master dog is useless?”

Big Yellow immediately bared his teeth at Tyrant.

“That isn’t certain. Although I might need to fight the Dark Generation, there are still a lot of uncertainties. If they destroyed the ore mines during the war just to ignite my temper, the losses would surely be great, but right now, we have to focus on the ore mines first, dug the entire mine off the ground without them knowing. This would require finding the exact location of the ore mine first.”

Jiang Chen said, emphasizing Big Yellow’s importance in this plan. In other words, the ore mine was more important than getting rid of the Dark Generation to Jiang Chen.

“Good. We will proceed as planned.”

Big Yellow sounded happy.

“But, there are still uncertainties in the plan.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes narrowed.

“Are you talking about Nan Bei Chao?”

Tyrant suddenly recalled.

“What? Hasn’t that bastard died long ago? He has appeared again?”

Big Yellow jumped surprisingly, back then, he personally saw Jiang Chen eradicate Nan Bei Chao with his own eyes. But now, he just heard Nan Bei Chao's name again.

“It is true that Nan Bei Chao is dead, but this is another Nan Bei Chao that came from the Boundless World.”

Tyrant said.

“Huh?”

Big Yellow's head was spinning.

Chapter 834 - The Response of Finger Bone

After that, Tyrant told Big Yellow about the incident that happened the moment they entered the city. They could never calm themselves down when they thought that Nan Bei Chao comes from the Boundless World. They could see it from his eyes that even if he was from another world, he was fated to be their mortal enemy.

“Motherf*cker! How many Nan Bei Chaos are actually out there? Does this guy really have so many clones?”

Big Yellow was annoyed. He knew very well how difficult it was to kill Nan Bei Chao. Jiang Chen had spent a lot of effort and almost sacrificed the people of Nebula Sect and Dark Devil Religion before the war. Another Nan Bei Chao emerged not long after the previous one was eliminated. Will this ever end?

“It’s hard to tell. The one that we killed might just be a clone. It is likely that the true Nan Bei Chao is in the Immortal World.”

Jiang Chen stated his guess courageously.

“Is that even possible? This is way too astonishing.”

Dan King widened his eyes when he heard about the Immortal World, a world beyond their world. The name of this world alone could make people worship it.

“It’s just a guess. We don’t need to worry about all of that for now. Nan Bei Chao will certainly become a major obstacle and an influential variable in the plan. If we have the chance, we have to eliminate him.”

Jiang Chen clenched his fist. He would never be nice and merciful towards Nan Bei Chao.

He had presented his plan to the others but he couldn’t have imagined that Nan Bei Chao also have the same goal. The two of them were fated to be enemies and was destined to clash again.

Even though Nan Bei Chao was a threat to his plan, it wouldn’t stop him from executing his plan. He had to obtain the True Meta Stones in this domain by any means necessary, otherwise he would face stagnation in the Great Saint realm.

After a night of rest, they left the inn early in the morning and headed to the prefecture. Today was the day of the auction organized by Dark Surge City. Because of this, the streets were bustling with people. People from different worlds had come.

Every time the Void Triangular Domain was opened, the largest trading place would be held on Dark Surge City and King City, they were also the largest auction event. However, the crowd that attended the auction in Dark Surge City weren’t as many as those in King City. Most of them were the geniuses of the different major powers and elders below Ninth Grade Minor Saint. The experts of Ninth Grade Minor Saint would only attend the auction in King City.

The compound of the prefecture was huge. A roofless auction platform was situated in the compound. Today, anyone who wanted to enter the auction was required to pay a certain fee.

Jiang Chen and the others entered the prefecture following the crowd. They arrived at the large entrance outside the auction platform, it was surrounded by guards in black armour. The security today is unusually tight.

Besides humans, people of the Dark Generation also participated in this event. As Void Triangular Domain was considered a world, the people living here – Dark Generation, would perform many transaction with their own kind daily.

Jiang Chen saw that every human who entered paid the guard a pill as the entrance fee.

“Father, I saw them pay the guard using pills, different kinds of pills.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That is the entrance fee for the auction. They would accept any kind of pills as long as it is human pills.”

Dan King said.

Jiang Chen and the rest suddenly realised how much the people of Dark Generation craved for pills, to the point where they even disregard the type of pills. Despite that, the prefecture would still earn a great amount of fortune from the entrance fee alone as there are many people who would come and participate in the event. Furthermore, most of the people here were Minor Saint experts, the pills they carried were not any ordinary pills.

When it was Jiang Chen's turn, the guard frowned when he saw the big yellow dog beside Jiang Chen. It took only a few seconds for the guard to deduce the real identity of this yellow dog.

“Thieves aren't allowed to enter.”

The guard bellowed.

“Who are you talking about?”

Big Yellow raged.

“I am talking about you, the dog who stole the demon soul. Still refuse to admit it?”

The guard said coldly.

“Haha! You still have the guts to say it out when your prefecture couldn't even protect a single treasure. Did you know that master dog felt like he entered an unguarded compound when I entered your prefecture? Anyway, you all have already gotten the

sufficient compensation for the demon soul.”

Big Yellow laughed. He even sneered openly, which attracted many people’s attention. A person in the crowd laughed. “Haha! A so-called prestigious prefecture couldn’t even protect its own treasure. This is truly a disgrace. I think we should just skip your auction next time. We can just go straight into your prefecture and take whatever treasure we want.”

This was what a blue-headed youth that seemed to be in his twenties said. He had a powerful cultivation – Sixth Grade Minor Saint. The demon Qi around his body clearly indicated that he was from the Demon Race.

“You people of the Demon Race really know how to distort the truth. I am impressed by the fact that you can still sound so reasonable even though you are the one who committed the crime.”

Another youth said. He was wearing purple clothes. He had an extraordinary Qi, he must be from one of the eight families.

“Humph! This is how we, the Demon Race do things. We defy the trivial conventions in every matter. If you aren’t satisfied about it, let’s have a fight!”

The youth from the Demon Race made a cold humph. His Demon Qi fluctuated. Although the youth in purple looked angry, he chose not to respond to the challenge because he knew that it would never end once the conflict with the Demon Race started. This was

a battle that was deaf to all reasons once their adrenaline had been activated. He didn't want to be stuck with this demon as the auction was about to begin soon.

Jiang Chen smiled and looked at the guard. He tossed a few pills to him and said. "I suggest you to take these pills and not offend this dog. He will certainly eat you up if you touch his fur. That will only result in an unnecessary death. Given his status in the Demon Race, I believe that the Demon Race would certainly demolish your auction platform if you touch him."

The guard looked angry but he couldn't do anything. He had also heard about this group of people from the Demon Race before. Also, the Great Elder agreed to accept their compensation yesterday, it clearly proved the exceptional status of this dog in the Demon Race. If this dog really ripped him to death, his death would be in vain because the prefecture would certainly not offend the Demon Race for a single guard. He too didn't want to create a mess before the auction starts.

"You all can go in now."

The guard said coldly.

"Dammit! What's with the annoying attitude?"

Big Yellow was truly sensitive. He wanted to bite the guard when he saw the guard's attitude, but luckily, he was pulled by Jiang Chen by the ear. Otherwise, that guard would surely be seriously injured from his bite. There were still many people waiting

behind. It wouldn't be pleasant to start a commotion here because that would ruin his plan.

“Why are you pulling my ear? Master dog wants to teach him a lesson.”

Big Yellow sounded dissatisfied.

“Don't forget about our plan.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow's head.

The auction platform in Dark Surge City was huge. It was in the shape of a circle. There was a large stage for the items to be placed during the auction. The surroundings were occupied with chairs. There were rooms on the second floor. It should be the so-called VIP guests section and the seats below were the ordinary guests section. Anyone who could enter the second floor must have a high status.

“Little Chen, where are we going?”

Tyrant asked.

“Any seat will do.”

Jiang Chen was walking towards the scattered seats on the ground floor.

At this time, the blue-headed youth approached Jiang Chen and the rest and said. “Big Yellow, our race are considered honourable guests. Come, let’s go to the second floor. These are your friends, right? They could come along too.”

He sounded pleasant and forthright, it seemed like his impression of Big Yellow wasn’t that bad.

“No, thanks, we are fine here.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at the blue-headed youth. His impression of the Demon Race was friendly.

“Did you hear that? He said he is not going, we are staying down here.”

Big Yellow said.

“Fine. I am Blue Lion, how may I address you?”

The Blue-headed youth looked over at Jiang Chen. Although the youth in white was only a Third Grade Minor Saint, he must not judge the book by its cover. He could see how obedient Big Yellow was to this white-clothed youth. Their connection must be beyond ordinary. Although Big Yellow had just arrived in the Demon Race, he had already gained a prestigious status. Therefore, him and the Lion Race was willing to establish a good rapport with Big Yellow.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Alright, brother Jiang, if you encounter any difficulties, feel free to seek for my help.”

Blue Lion said and walked toward the stairs.

“Big Yellow, who is that?”

Tyrant asked.

“I haven’t seen him before, but he must be from the Lion Race. He is a blue flame lion, a Sixth Grade Minor Demon Saint, considered one of the rare geniuses. The Lion Race has always been in a good relationship with the patriarch, which means that they support my existence.”

Said Big Yellow. Although he had just joined the Demon Race a few days ago, almost all of the members of the race had recognized him. This was because he was personally brought back by Peacock King. Naturally, the Lion Race would know about this matter.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen’s left forefinger twitched. It baffled him. Then, it began to tremble faster. It was the Saint Bone in his finger, which had been unresponsive. But today, it started to shake all of a sudden.

As his forefinger trembled, he immediately sensed something. His eyes turned to look at a room in the second floor.

Chapter 835 - Desolate Ning

“My bone finger is twitching, meaning that one of my bone finger is near.”

Jiang Chen was slightly shaken by the sudden sensation. The feeling inside him was crystal clear. It came from a room on the second floor. There must be a bone that belonged to him inside in one of those rooms. It even made his soul convulse as there was a blood connection between him and the bone. He wouldn't feel secure, especially his soul if one of his bones was in another person's possession.

Jiang Chen's expression looked grim. Back then, in the Saint Cliff, he was sure that his body had been smashed into pieces. He had no idea how many body parts or fragments were left after he died, but as long as his bones were near, he could automatically sense it. Once he fused his current bone with the Saint Bone, it would be highly advantageous to him.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen spread his soul power into the room and saw eight men sitting in a room. Three of them were elders and the other five were youths. The youth who stood in front was wearing the same white robe as Jiang Chen's. He was wearing a golden waist belt. He had a thick black hair and a good-looking face. His cultivation was Seventh Grade Minor Saint, the highest grade in that room as well. These so-called elders were no match to these young people. If they engaged in a fight with the old people, the distinction would be clear despite their age. One could

straightaway distinguish how much talent these young men had. The youngest man had the highest strength among the group. His right forefinger was clearly different than the rest of his fingers. It exuded a trace of energy wave.

“Huh?”

The young man knitted his eyebrows. His fiery eyes looked down at the ground floor. Jiang Chen quickly kept his soul power when the young man found him.

‘This man’s senses are sharp. He can even sense my soul power. I was emotionally affected by the Finger Bone just now, it prompted me to exert my soul power to locate the bone. If I used Great Soul Derivation Technique, he wouldn’t be able to detect me even he has a very sharp senses.’

Jiang Chen said. By using his soul power across the room, he was able to determine that it was actually his Finger Bone. After that, an indistinct murderous intent instantly rushed out of Jiang Chen’s body, someone had fused Jiang Chen’s Finger Bone into his body. That was a blasphemous act to the Greatest Saint, this alone could get that young man killed.

At any rate, Jiang Chen had to get back the thing that belonged to him. That meant that he would need to fight with that young man sooner or later.

“Big Yellow, can you ask Blue Lion what race of people is in that room?”

Jiang Chen said.

“It’s the Desolate Race.”

Big Yellow paused for a moment and said. He was communicating with Blue Lion just now via divine sense. The entire room was occupied with the geniuses of the Desolate Race.

“Desolate Race.”

Jiang Chen knitted his eyebrows once more. Out of the eight families, the one who had a wider sphere of influence wasn’t the Dan Family, Bin Family or the Demon Race, it was this Desolate Family. Some said that they inherited the bloodline of an ancient foreign race that consisted of incredible and special abilities. Although the eight families had very strong forces, the one at the very top was the Desolate Family.

“What happened brother Chen?”

Yan Chenyu asked when she sensed Jiang Chen’s change of expression.

“Big Yellow, help me ask Blue Lion again, what’s the name of that leading youth?”

Jiang Chen said.

Big Yellow communicated with Blue Lion again. He then said. “That man is called Desolate Ning, a rare genius in the family. He has already reached the Seventh Grade Minor Saint, even before reaching thirty years old. He is the talent that the Desolate Family focused on training and cultivated heavily. Blue Lion said that he has defeated an Eighth Grade Minor Saint elder before coming here.”

“No wonder the Saint Bone is in his possession. He is a highly valued talent in their race. Humph!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. He wasn't in good terms with the Desolate Family in his previous life. It was an outrageously arrogant group of people, but after they encountered Jiang Chen, they suffered great losses. That year, even the old ancestor of the Desolate Family was killed by Jiang Chen. So basically, the resentment between Jiang Chen and them was deep.

“Little Chen, why do you pay so much attention to that guy?”

Big Yellow sounded confused.

“His body has something that belongs to me.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk. In this trip to Void Triangular Domain, he didn't plan to start a conflict with the Desolate Family, but it seemed like the situation has left him no choice. If someone as powerful as Desolate Ning returned to the Saint Origin World, it would be very difficult for Jiang Chen to lay his hands on him. As

such, now that he was in Void Triangular Domain, it would be Jiang Chen's best shot.

It was his Finger Bone and he must retrieve it back. He had already gotten one Finger Bone in his body, but it would be totally suppressed when he transforms into the human-dragon form. In other words, Jiang Chen wasn't able to use the power of his Finger Bone everytime he transformed. However, if he could obtain his Finger Bone and fuse it with his bone, he might be able to use the power of this finger bone after he transformed. Also, his combat strength would definitely be enhanced.

Most importantly, after refining the Finger Bone, he could use the origin of his bloodline to enhance his dragon transformation art. The Finger Bone would be absolutely enough for him to advance another grade.

Furthermore, the biggest reason that he came here was to improve his cultivation. It was a big surprise for him to discover his Finger Bone in this place. How could he possibly miss such an opportunity?

“Chen Er, the people of the Desolate Family is not someone that you would like as an enemy. They are a lot stronger than the Dan Family.”

Dan King reminded.

“Initially, I did not want to create any conflicts with the Desolate Family, but since I already have a conflict with the Dan and Fire

Family, it wouldn't really matter if I add one more.”

Jiang Chen smiled bitterly. He had no intention of offending the Desolate Family if his Finger Bone wasn't in that youth's possession. Despite the number of enemies that he had already made, it was important for him to do this. His dragon transformation art path was destined to be a supremely powerful path. Although he was still far away from the top, he was given with a very tenacious heart. If he didn't make any moves or plans to retrieve what belonged to him, it would hinder his dragon transformation art's advancement. Once a powerful cultivator had been mentally affected, the cultivator's path wouldn't reach very far.

Meanwhile, in the guest room of the Desolate Family, Desolate Ning was gazing at Jiang Chen's back and said in a flat tone. “Who is that man? He dared to inspect me using divine sense?”

“Don't recognize him. Possibly just an insignificant man. You don't have to worry about him.”

A youth who stood beside Desolate Ning said, totally disregarding Jiang Chen.

Dong *Dong* *Dong*

At this time, three rings of bell was heard from the auction stage. Three silhouettes flew down from the open sky and landed on the stage. The one who stood at the very front was a woman in sexy attire. She was of the Dark Generation. Besides her sexy attire, she

had a very charming look, her figure was attractive and her skin was snowy white. A simple gesture from her exuded an elegant demeanour. A woman like her was a very attractive force to any man.

She must be the auctioneer for this event. Behind her were two elders who were squinting their eyes, their hands crossed behind their backs. Their cultivation alone gave people an undescrivable pressure. Both of them were Eighth Grade Minor Saints. Their existence was enough to scare almost everyone in attendance.

“Welcome, friends from the three worlds. My name is called Wei Er, the auctioneer for today’s auction.”

The woman sounded sweet. It made everyone feel comfortable. She then bowed towards the people in front of her to show her courtesy.

“I believe some of you have already been to Void Triangular Domain before, while some you are here for the first time. We will do it according to the usual rules. Wei Er is going to tell you all the rules in this auction. During the auction, high grade True Meta Stones is the only currency. When the auction is over, you all can pay using your treasures. Pills would be the best. A specialist would be assigned to value the worth of your treasures.”

Wei Er said. Her explanation was easy for anyone to understand. When bidding, they would use high grade True Meta Stone as the standard price. Due to humans having very little of these stones, they need to use their items to represent the currency.

Of course, the items that would be auctioned here wouldn't be anything like a mere high grade True Meta Stones, it was too common in the domain. If they wanted to exchange for high grade True Meta Stones, they could go to any city and do it.

Besides the Dark Generation's special collection of treasures, many merchants from the three different worlds had also placed their items here in the auction. Say Jiang Chen wanted to make his treasures more valuable, he would need to place his valuable treasures in this auction to achieve a higher price. From there, he would be able to gain a huge profit.

An item which had the base price of ten thousand high grade True Meta Stones could be raised to two fold or more after the auction. This was the reason that the auction was so crowded with people.

“In order to let you all gain a better understanding about our currency, I will give you all an accurate measurement. Here, one high grade True Meta Stone would be equivalent to one Heavenly Rank Restoration pill. Alright, that should have settled all of your major doubts. We will begin now. Let's start with the first treasure.”

Wei Er flipped her palm and a head-sized crystal appeared and floated on it. It was illuminating brilliantly. Everyone could sense the vigorous energy coming from the crystal even at a distance.

“This is a True Meta Crystal, a crystal collected from a True Meta

ore mine. The energy contained in this crystal was equal to ten thousand high grade True Meta Stones, not to mention, its quality is higher.”

Wei Er said.

Chapter 836 - Conflicted

Almost all of their eyes were fixed on the True Meta Crystal. Some revealed a burning desire and interest in this crystal. All these interested people were humans. Fundamentally, none of the people from the Dark Generation was interested in the crystal.

“True Meta Crystal is a rare item, I’m afraid this can only be found in Void Triangular Domain.”

“That’s right. This is a large True Meta Crystal that contained a huge amount of energy. The benefits will certainly be huge if I can get that crystal.”

“Beauty, quickly spill out the base price of this crystal.”

.....

Someone shouted.

“The base price of this Crystal is 5000 high grade True Meta Stones, you all can start bidding now.”

Wei Er said.

“What? The base price of this thing is merely 5000? Is there something wrong with it?”

“Yeah, the price is just too low but it is also understandable. An item like this is undeniably valuable to us but it’s only a common item to the people of Dark Generation.”

When the price was announced, many of them started to exclaim because they thought that it was undervalued. Like Wei Er said, the price of a high grade True Meta Stone was only worth a single Heaven Rank Restoration Pill, but in a human’s point of view, a high grade True Meta Stone was worth a Saint Rank Restoration Pill. This might be the reason that she set it low.

“I will bid ten thousand.”

“Ten thousand is too little, I will go for fifteen thousand.”

“Thirty thousand.”

.....

“Fifty thousand...”

In the end, the True Meta Crystal was taken by the one who bid fifty thousand. Wei Er’s face was full of smile when she heard the last bidding price. She realised that luck was with her today. It was really a big surprised that the crystal was auctioned off for 50000.

The following treasures were relatively ordinary. None of the guests on the second floor bid except for the people below. They were aiming for treasure worthy of them. Anyone present would

know that this was just the beginning of the auction. The truly valuable treasure wouldn't appear at this time.

The auction continued for another half an hour before it ended. Since the beginning until now, Jiang Chen had never call out a bid while everyone around him was yelling out their bids. Jiang Chen ignored them because he was not interested in those item.

“What are you all here for? Not even calling a single bid once? Did you all come here just to watch the show?”

“He's right. If you don't bid now, you won't have a chance later, any item that is auctioned later would be bid by the people in the guest room only. At that time, we can only watch.”

“Enough talking. I can see that they are flat out broke. They just came here to watch the auction because they have nothing to do.”

.....

The people around Jiang Chen and his friends immediately stopped talking about them. Jiang Chen only smirked on their reactions.

“The following treasures are incidentally acquired by our City Lord. Everyone can take a look at it.”

Wei Er spoke. She turned her palm and another treasure appeared. A scrap metal drifted in the air. It has rusty surface and

looked like a piece of broken sword - it was too ordinary. No extraordinary Qi was exuded from it, making it hard for anyone to make sense that this was a treasure.

Swoosh

Yet, Big Yellow's eyes shot out two beams of brilliances with a swoosh. Jiang Chen who was beside him widened his eyes. At the time in Xuan Yang City of Qi Province was a vault. There was a treasure similar to this – broken sword. It also looked very ordinary but Big Yellow treated it like a real treasure. As a matter of fact, the broken sword that he got last time was a rare treasure. Unimaginable power was unleashed from it when it was in Big Yellow's hands. Big Yellow had used that broken sword to save Jiang Chen's life twice. First was from Prince Xue Yue, the second time was from the master of Asura Palace, Li Tian Yang.

“Dammit! I didn't notice this treasure when I stole the demon soul in the prefecture.”

Big Yellow sounded frustrated when a great treasure like this slipped through his eyes. It gave him the feeling to spurt out blood.

“Haha! Miss Wei Er, are you trying to make a joke here? A scrap metal is treated as a treasure by your prefecture? Don't you have a better thing to offer in this auction?”

“Agreed. It's still a scrap metal after a thorough analysis. It is no doubt an absolute scrap metal. Did your City Lord think that we are stupid enough to bid for an item like this?”

“No one would want this scrap metal.”

.....

Everyone’s emotion was stirred. Many people started to laugh and mock at the prefecture’s decision for auctioning this treasure. They all thought that the prefecture was just trying to deceive them.

“Ladies and gentlemen, don’t get too excited. This broken sword has been valued by a master. Although our generation can’t determine the exact nature of this treasure, it is absolutely a valuable treasure. It is only for the people who can see the real value of this treasure. I will announce the base price now. It will start from a hundred thousand.”

Wei Er said.

“What the hell?! That tattered toy is worth a hundred thousand? Isn’t this just extorting money?”

“I’m sure that no one’s going to call out a higher bid, unless that person is an idiot.”

But as soon as his voice faded, another voice sounded. “A hundred and ten thousand.”

It wasn't another stranger, it was Jiang Chen. After that, it created a commotion of mock and snicker.

“What the f*ck?! I can't believe there is really such an idiot.”

“What? You have kept your silence for so long because you are waiting for this scrap metal?”

“We should just stop sneering him. I suppose his intelligence must have been corrupted, wasting a fortune on a piece of trash.”

.....

Jiang Chen's face was carrying smile. The other participants were scrutinizing him curiously and surprisingly. It was good that no one competed the bid. He was going to get one of the best treasure at the lowest price.

Wei Er revealed a smile when she heard someone giving a bid. She felt relieved in her heart for that. As a matter of fact, this broken sword had received numerous reproach for being placed in the auction because no one could determine what type of treasure this was. Ultimately, they still decided to put it in the auction just in case someone was willing to bid a higher price for it. From the current response, it seemed like that it was true after all.

“This prince is calling a hundred and ten thousand, anyone else going for a higher bid?”

Wei Er scanned the crowd.

On the second floor, in the guest room of the Desolate Family, an elder was gazing at the broken sword while pondering about the value of it before he said, “Desolate Ning, there is something different about this broken sword. It could be a real treasure.”

“Uh?”

Desolate Ning exclaimed and immediately turned over to look at the broken sword but saw no distinction. Anyway, he had to pay attention to it because the remark was from an experienced elder. The status of an elder was exceptional in Desolate Family. They had specialised knowledge in certain aspects. Since the elder was able to determine the uniqueness of this item, he would need to get this item.

“A hundred and twenty thousand!”

Desolate Ning shouted.

The crowd was stirred once more after hearing this. Even Wei Er’s eyes looked stunned. Clearly, not even her had anticipated that there was another one who would bid for this broken sword.

“Even the people from the guest room had started to call out their bid, could this really be a treasure?”

“Nope, it’s absolutely a piece of scrap metal. Given the

knowledge that I have on rare treasures and weapons, I couldn't see anything special from that piece of metal.”

.....

“A hundred and fifty thousand.”

Jiang Chen shouted another bid without much consideration.

“Two hundred thousand.”

Desolate Ning added another fifty thousand in the bid.

“A million.”

As soon as Desolate Ning's voice faded, Jiang Chen raised his bidding price to a million.

“What? Is this brat out of his mind?”

“Darn! We really can't judge a book by its cover. I couldn't see that he was a rich guy before this. However, his brain must have been fried to spend a million on this thing.”

“His brain must have hit something hard.”

.....

A commotion was created amongst the people. Even the auctioneer, Wei Er, was petrified but she quickly returned to her usual smile. Before this, she was worried that no one else would want this broken sword because that would spoil her reputation. Despite that, she would never have thought that someone was really willing to bid a million for this piece of metal.

Hong

At this moment, a raging aura rushed down from a room on the second floor. Desolate Ning glared at Jiang Chen from above with his raging eyes. A brat that came from nowhere dared to compete with him? That was equivalent to seeking death.

“A million and a hundred thousand.”

Desolate Ning called for another bid.

“Two million.”

Jiang Chen's tone was flat. He called for two million bid right after Desolate Ning's bid.

“He is mad! This brat must be mad! Putting aside the true value of this item, is he trying to compete with the people in the guest room? Isn't this just seeking death? He should know that only the people with a very strong power are allowed to go upstairs.”

“That’s right. This brat doesn’t understand the rules here. Normally, when the people on the top started bidding, the people below will keep their mouth shut. First, we can’t afford that amount, second is to show respect to them.”

“That is from Desolate Family. He must have gotten angry. This brat wouldn’t get any advantages by calling such bids.”

.....

The relaxed atmosphere in the area turned into solemnness as soon as the price rose to two million. Desolate Ning’s rage lingered in the air openly, frightening many of them below.

The happiest people right now were Wei Er and the two elders behind her. Competition was a good thing. It was better when someone in the audience section competed with someone in the guest section. Wei Er was now looking at Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Two million and three hundred thousand.”

Desolate Ning gritted his teeth and bided.

“Three million.”

Jiang Chen shouted without a pause after Desolate Ning.

Chapter 837 - The Relic

Hua

A wave of commotion was heard from the audience. The person from Desolate Family had obviously been infuriated. They thought that this youth in white would back off after seeing Desolate Ning's reaction. However, Jiang Chen defied their expectations by continuing to bid. Putting aside the shocking price of the item, his courage to challenge the people of the Desolate Family alone could win everyone's approval.

But, plenty of them viewed Jiang Chen's action as foolish. How could a person who sat in the audience section dare to infuriate the Desolate Family?

"Dammit! Could it be that there is really someone who can see the true value of this treasure? Anyway, it won't be useful in their hands because only Master Dog can wield it."

Big Yellow felt very annoyed. He initially thought that no one would be interested in this broken sword, in which Jiang Chen could easily obtain the item by bidding the cheapest price. He hadn't thought that the people of Desolate Family would cut in to bid.

"It doesn't matter; money is what I have the most now. I'm interested to see how long can Desolate Ning sustain. I will certainly get this broken sword."

Jiang Chen's tone was flat. There was no turning back now because he knew too well how powerful this broken sword was. Big Yellow had gotten one last time. If he could get this broken sword, Big Yellow's power would be unimaginable. The broken sword was akin to the fragment of his Heavenly Saint Sword, it could bring numerous benefits to the owner.

How could Jiang Chen let go of this powerful item?

More importantly, he could take this opportunity to obstruct Desolate Ning's interest. Since Jiang Chen's Finger Bone was in Desolate Ning's possession, the both of them would clash sooner or later. But once Desolate Ning entered King City, he would regroup with the other members of Desolate Family, and it would become extremely difficult for Jiang Chen to get his Finger Bone back. Currently, it was no doubt a very good opportunity. Given Desolate Ning's arrogance, he would never let Jiang Chen go. It was very likely that after the auction, Desolate Ning would take his revenge on Jiang Chen as soon as he stepped outside Dark Surge City. In truth, this was what Jiang Chen was hoping for. He wanted Desolate Ning to initiate the fight. In that case, he would be able to decide where the battlefield would be in advance and eventually retrieving back his lost Finger Bone.

Thus, the bigger the conflict becomes, the better it was. He wanted to arouse Desolate Ning's murderous intent so that he could set a trap for him.

"F*ck! Who is that bastard?! He dares to go against me?!"

Desolate Ning raged.

“Desolate Ning, I think we should just let it go. We are not even sure whether this piece of scrap metal is a real treasure. Its price could be overvalued.”

An elder whose face was already darkened beside Desolate Ning said.

“No, how could I, Desolate Ning, lose to a small figure in bidding? I really want to see how much more he is willing to bid.”

Desolate Ning gritted his teeth. Now it wasn't a matter of money but a matter of reputation, his face. He was a member of the great Desolate Family, how could he be compared with an insignificant person?

“Five million!”

Desolate Ning shouted another bid. At this time, everyone could sense the fiery anger from his tone. People knew that he was doing this just to regain his face.

“Dammit!!! Let Master Dog get rid of this prick.”

Big Yellow could no longer sit quietly. He barked his words at the Desolate Family's guest room. He was a being who didn't know how to speak in low tone. His resounding voice was clearly heard by everyone in the auction event. Adding his gesture, it was a direct challenge to the Desolate Family.

Hiss

Quite a lot of them gasped in cold air. Some had the urge to faint when they heard him call Desolate Ning ‘prick’ openly. His audacity was heaven defying.

“Son a of b*tch, I will skin you off!”

A sound of anger came from the guest room of the Desolate Family. It was lawless for a dog to challenge the Desolate Family.

Big Yellow wasn’t affected by the usual threat that the people made and responded in a more arrogant way. He raised his dog leg and bellowed at the guest room. “Prick of the Desolate Family, listen to what Master Dog is going to say, Master Dog dominates the entire world. Master dog has unlimited power. If you dare to oppose Master Dog, you will only receive the fate of death. Master Dog will play with you pricks from the Desolate Family, I bid 10 million.”

Flop

Someone fell down from their seat. This dog was totally defying the heavens by openly cursing at the people of Desolate Family. The ones who were affected the most were the people who came from Saint Origin World. Their eyes almost came out from its sockets. Perhaps the people from the other worlds didn’t know how strong Desolate Family was, but they had no doubt about it. No one would dare to scold the Desolate Family as pricks. Besides,

Big Yellow wasn't just scolding a single person, he called the entire Desolate Family prick.

Moreover, he just bid 10 million like it was as easy as shouting an ordinary number. Wei Er and the other two elders gaped at him. They wouldn't have thought that today's most insignificant scrap metal would be auctioned at such a heavenly price because these two parties were fighting with each other.

Hong

A powerful energy spilled out from the guest room. The two elders' faces changed instantly because it seemed like a fight was going to occur.

“My friends from Desolate Family, could you follow the rules of the auction event? You two can settle whatever conflict you have after the event.”

These two elders were both Eighth Grade Minor Saint and had quite a strong deterrence. Clearly, the Desolate Family didn't want to cause any trouble here, so they kept all of their Qi.

However, each of their faces was dark green and full of murderous intent, particularly Desolate Ning, he had never received such rude remarks from anyone until now.

“Kill! We must kill them!”

“When the auction is over, it is their time to die. They won’t receive a pleasant ending for offending our family.”

.....

The atmosphere in the guest room of Desolate Family was filled with a murderous aura.

They started to fix their eyes on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They wouldn’t let anyone who dared to go against them go.

In the guest room of Fire Family, Huo Miao smiled coldly. “What a fool, he doesn’t even know the rule! It seems like I don’t have to waste my effort, Desolate Ning is going to rip them to pieces.”

“Is he the one who possessed the powerful flames?”

Standing in front Huo Miao was a youth in red robe. His Qi wasn’t any weaker than Desolate Ning. He was the leader of Fire Family in this trip. He is called Huo Yuan, a rare genius his family. He was a Seventh Grade Minor Saint.

“That’s right, it’s him. His flames were very powerful, it contained the Qi of heaven and earth, more powerful than the psychic fire of our Fire Family.”

Huo Miao said.

“After the auction event, we’ll follow Desolate Ning and make a trade with them. We want them to extract his flames out before he is killed.”

Huo Yuan smiled.

“Yes, his flames should only be used by the people of our family.”

Huo Miao also smiled.

In the guest room of Dan Family.

“I heard that this man has killed our people before the gateway of Void Triangular Domain. It seems like he really is audacious.”

A genius of Dan Family gazed at Jiang Chen.

“Yeah, killing the people of our family has only one conclusion – death. However, it seems like we are no longer needed.”

Someone said.

Meanwhile, in the guest's room of Bin Family, Gu Family, Demon Race, Narang Family and Shi Family, all of them were fixing their attention on Jiang Chen. None of them would have thought that such an audacious young man would emerge in this auction.

“Miss Wei Er, don’t delay any longer. Quickly ask whether there is anyone who is willing to call for a higher bid.”

Jiang Chen said to Wei Er.

“Yes, prince.”

Wei Er bowed at Jiang Chen pleasantly. Anyone who could spend 10 million was definitely one of the people that belong to the second floor.

“About this scrap... *cough* *cough*, this broken sword, does any one willing to bid a price higher than 10 million?”

It seemed like Wei Er was too excited, she almost spat out the word scrap metal.

There was silence in the guests’ room of the Desolate Family, it seemed like they had already decided to give up bidding as their financial resources were limited. It wasn’t worthwhile to spend 10 million to bid for an unknown metal. There was still a major auction event in King City.

Besides, Jiang Chen was already a dead man in front of them. They no longer want to compete with a dead man.

In the guests’ room of the Desolate Family, the elder looked at the enraged Desolate Ning, fearing that he would charge forward. He quickly said, “Desolate Ning, there is no need to continue

clashing with them.”

The elder was worried for him because the price of the broken sword had gone out of his expectation. They would suffer losses if Desolate Ning continued to call for a higher bid. They shouldn't take such unprofitable risk

“The treasure would be ours after I killed them.”

Desolate Ning gritted his teeth.

“Since no one called for a new bid, I will announce that 10 million is the final bidding price of this item. He will be the owner of this broken sword. Congratulations.”

Wei Er smiled at Jiang Chen again. Instead of giving the broken sword to Jiang Chen, she kept it. She would only give the items to the owner after receiving the appropriate sum of money. In other words, they would need to calculate the worth of their pills for the item.

“Ai! 10 million just to buy a scrap metal...This is crazy.”

“And offended Desolate Family as well, I guess he won't be able to get out of Dark Surge City alive. He sure is a weirdo.”

“He is just a young man after all. Young men are always hot blooded.”

.....

Plenty of people were sighing. But no one mocked or snickered at Jiang Chen. They weren't qualified to laugh at a person who could simply spend 10 million to buy a scrap metal.

“Alright, the next item will be the main treasure of this auction. Everyone, please look closely.”

Wei Er announced once more. She clapped her hands and a treasure appeared. It was a palm-sized crystal box . The treasure wasn't the box, but the item inside it.

While everyone was looking attentively at the box, she lightly opened it. Instantly, a pure energy of light spilled out of the container. It consisted of the purest Yang Qi. A fist-sized bead could be seen by everyone. The surface of the golden bead was covered with talisman patterns, making it look extremely divine. The moment the box was opened, a lot of them could hear the singing of a mantra. It made them feel purified in their souls.

“The Relic!”

Tyrant exclaimed.

Chapter 838 - Deliberately Provoke You

There was no doubt about it, the golden bead held by Wei Er was the relic that belonged to Buddha Sect. It was fully covered with some sort of patterns or symbols: they were the Sanskrit of Buddha Sect. There were illusions of Buddha rippling on top of it. Most importantly, there was the smell of lightning lingering in the relic: the energy that contained inside the relic must be very great.

“This is a relic left by a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. It was filled with lightning energy. It was probably because this Ninth Grade Minor Saint had failed in his attempt to breakthrough to the Great Saint realm, leaving this relic behind. Within the relic contained all the essences left behind by a great Ninth Grade Minor Saint monk. Adding the lightning energy in it, it is unimaginably more powerful than any relic of any great Ninth Grade Minor Saint monk. I have never thought that Dark Generation would be able to obtain such a powerful treasure.”

Jiang Chen was amazed.

“Someone must have asked the auctioneer to auction this item here.”

Dan King said.

Tyrant who was standing at the side wasn't speaking, he had lost his interest in speaking since the appearance of the relic. His eyes had never turned away from it, and were blazing with thirst.

“We must get this relic. Tyrant has improved his abilities further after being imparted with the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus. If he can get the aid of this relic, his cultivation would certainly be able to make an extraordinary leap.”

Jiang Chen’s expression became stern. It was out of his expectation that Dark Surge City would auction these great items to the public. He had also found his Finger Bone in this place and even Big Yellow had managed to find a broken sword, and now, an exceptional relic was found, as if it was specially crafted for Tyrant.

However, Jiang Chen and Tyrant were very clear that it would be impossible to get this item without spending an extravagant sum. The competition in this bidding would be a lot fiercer than before. In other words, this was the main part of the auction that could bring exceedingly good benefits to anyone, including the people of devil religion as they could utilize the energy in the relic to purify their minds and enhance their cultivation further.

“This is the relic of Buddha Sect, it was left by a powerful Ninth Grade Minor Saint monk during his time of tribulation. I assume that all of you have already seen through the value of this item. There is energy of lightning contained in this relic. As for the price, I think everyone should already have an estimated value.”

Wei Er’s sweet voice resounded throughout the entire auction area, entering into everyone’s ears.

Hua

As soon as Wei Er's voice dropped, a commotion erupted from the audience. Most of them were merely guessing about the origin of this relic until they heard what Wei Er said. It was a relic left by a great monk, the price of it was inestimable. Not just to the monks of Buddha Sect, it was beneficial to everyone. To put it bluntly, even a pig would be able to absorb the energy from the relic and become a peerless genius.

“This relic is mine. Which of you is thinking of taking it away from me?”

An arrogantly spoken word came out from a guests' room on the second floor. It was the genius from a major power of Boundless World.

“This is a joke, a treasure like this would only naturally fall into the hands of the person who is capable enough. Before claiming it yours, can you offer the highest bidding price?”

“That's right. Anyone can claim that the relic is his or hers, but one needs to know himself or herself first before making such claim.”

.....

Before the auction even began, the guests' room on the second floor was already filled with atmosphere of feud. The geniuses from the three different worlds were arguing about the matter of this relic. This bidding process was destined to be a very intense

competition not only among the eight families of Saint Origin World, but also among the unknown major powers from the other two worlds. The current scene was hard to come by in a normal day.

Wei Er revealed a satisfied smile upon seeing the responses and interactions of the audience. Clearly, this was what she had hoped for.

“Alright, everyone, please settle down. I will announce the base price of this relic, it’s 5 million.”

As a matter of fact, 5 million wasn’t a high price for a relic like this. Of course, this was only the base price. According to the responses of the crowd, the price of the relic would certainly skyrocket to a heavenly price and would be incomparable to the scrap metal before.

“Six million!”

“Seven million!”

“Eight million!”

.....

“Fifteen million!”

It was merely a few breaths of time but the price of the relic had already reached fifteen million. Every bid made was worth a million or millions more than the previous. Now, the second floor was getting pretty lively than before. None of them were willing to let this kind of seducing treasure go.

At this very moment, those cultivators who were seated on the ground floor had basically lost their right to speak. They understood their own limitations, even if they call for a bid now, the relic would soon slip out of their hands later. The difference between them and the major powers on the second floor could not be compared. Furthermore, the competition among them on the second floor was notably fierce. If they raise a voice, they would probably offend them and receive a slap that would send them straight to hell. That meant they would die in vain.

“Twenty million!”

“Twenty five million!”

“Thirty million!”

In just a few blinks, the price had already soared to 30 million. Silence started to fill the atmosphere on the second floor, making the entire auction area silent. Although 30 million represented the number of Heaven Rank Restoration Pills, 30 million of it wasn't a low number as Heaven Rank Restoration Pill was not the same as Earth Rank and Human Rank Restoration Pill.

On the ground floor, Tyrant looked a little nervous because the

benefits of this relic were too obvious to describe. Similarly, his desire for this relic was also too obvious for anyone to see it. If he wanted to get this relic with his own capability, he wouldn't get a desirable result. It was already more than difficult for him to compete with those geniuses in the guests' rooms. As such, he needed Jiang Chen's help.

“Tyrant, I suppose you wouldn't just sit here tight, wouldn't you?”

Big Yellow licked his face while walking towards Tyrant.

“Don't be nervous. I will present this relic as a gift to you.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone. Currently, he had vast amount of pills, Combat Weapons, Devil Souls and Demon Souls. So, what he had the most now was fortune. At least, he was richer than those geniuses in the guests' rooms. Besides, 30 million wasn't a real deal yet and it would continue to rise.

“Fifty million.”

The people of Desolate Family called out their bid, it was Desolate Ning again. His bid rendered everyone in the scene silent, including the geniuses on the second floor. Some of them were even starting to count how much 50 million was worth, but they were very sure that it wasn't a small figure.

“We have to get this relic. If Desolate Ning could refine it, he will

be able to advance to Eighth Grade Minor Saint or even the peak of Eighth Grade Minor Saint.”

An elder beside Desolate Ning said.

“Brother Ning has already bid 50 million, I think no one is going to compete with this price.”

A youth said. Despite the fact that he was older than Desolate Ning, he had to call Desolate Ning ‘Brother Ning’ as courtesy. It indicated the high status of Desolate Ning in his family. This was a world that only valued the strongest. Anyone would respect you if you are strong and powerful enough.

“Sixty million.”

Yet as soon as Desolate Ning’s voice faded, another voice was heard and another 10 million was added into the bid.

“What?!”

Desolate Ning’s eyes suddenly turned fiery red when he heard that the voice was coming from the ground floor. Then, his eyes saw Jiang Chen seated in a very calm manner. If eyes could kill someone, Jiang Chen would have died a thousand times by now.

It’s him again!

Desolate Ning had the urge to murder him. Each of their faces turned ugly, their fury soaring up to the sky. It seemed like that guy was deliberately confronting their family. There were no geniuses on the second floor that bid except for him. And, this happened right after Desolate Ning's call. Wasn't this a direct provocation from him?

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

At this time, countless of eyes were staring at Jiang Chen, they were all astonished even more compared to the bidding process of the broken sword previously.

“My god! Why on earth is there such a man? It's 60 million, can he really afford that?”

“Haven't you seen it through? This kid is doing this on purpose, he was waiting for Desolate Family to call out their bid before he actually called his. Clearly, he is deliberately provoking the family.”

“That man's head must be fried badly. We should stay farther away from him. The consequences that he will face will surely be nothing good, he has offended the people of Desolate Family consecutively.”

.....

The entire scene was in a mess because of the foolish kid that

came from nowhere. He was certainly a grunt from some kind of places. Besides, a lot of people thought that Jiang Chen would not be able to take out 60 million worth of fortune. So, they concluded that Jiang Chen was only doing this because he wanted to provoke Desolate Family and let them fall into a trap. He would provoke them to the point where Desolate Family would bid a very high price and then suffer excessive losses.

“This is getting interesting, I think that Desolate Ning would be enraged to death today.”

A genius of Narang Family who was crossing one of his leg on his seat felt that a good show was going to occur.

“Seventy million!”

Desolate Ning gritted his teeth as he had already reached the limit of his budget.

“Eighty million!”

Sure enough, Jiang Chen didn’t stop. He yelled out a new bid the second after Desolate Ning’s voice dropped. His tone was plain, as though 80 million wasn’t anything for him at all. His expression and his gesture was always in a carefree manner.

“As*h*le! Ninety million!”

Desolate Ning yelled out the figure with a hoarse voice. Everyone

could hear it. Cracks were heard from the guests' room of the Desolate Family, spider-web like lines of cracks appeared in all glass-made items.

It was imaginable the degree of anger that Desolate Ning had reached. If it wasn't for the auction's rules, he would have dashed forth to Jiang Chen and sliced him to pieces to express his anger and frustration.

As for Jiang Chen, the angrier Desolate Ning became, the happier he was because this was the result he wanted.

The atmosphere in the auction area had reached the freezing point. Today, Desolate Family was controlled by a rogue cultivator from an unknown background. It would become a joke for many people. Now, everyone noticed that Desolate Ning was about to explode from his rage.

Yet, while everyone was thinking that Jiang Chen wouldn't bid anymore, he gracefully shouted out a 100 million bid.

Chapter 839 - All of Us Want Some Benefits

Instead of becoming unexpectedly noisy after the 100 million bid was called, it became unexpectedly quiet and oppressive. All of them looked at Jiang Chen as if they had seen a monster. ‘Damn, did he think that 100 million was a piece of trash?’

“This is too fierce for an auction. This is more exciting than a fight. I think that there would be a real show soon.”

“Yeah, anyone knows where did this youth in white came from? This time, Desolate Family is really mad because someone has just out bid them. If we were not obliged to follow the rules of this auction, I’m afraid that they would have already attacked the man in white.”

“I really don’t know what he’s thinking for directly challenging Desolate Family in bidding. Didn’t he know the consequences of offending that family?”

.....

Everyone was sighing, they were unable to understand Jiang Chen’s actions. Today’s incidents weren’t only about competing for the treasures. These people were not that stupid to believe that. It was obvious to them that this youth was deliberately provoking Desolate Family. Someone guessed that this man must have harboured some kind of deep grudge against the family, otherwise he wouldn’t confront them directly.

Ka *Ka*

Desolate Ning clenched his fists hard, green veins popped out under his skin. He had reached the point where he could no longer hold his fury. Of all these years, no one had ever defied him like this youth in white. No one would dare to go against him openly in public. Although he and Jiang Chen hadn't clashed directly, Jiang Chen's action was no different than slapping his face.

“Brother Ning, that bastard just bid 100 million. Does he even have this fortune? Do we have to continue? You should know that it is a relic that was left behind by a great monk who wanted to break through to Buddha realm. If you can obtain it, the benefits would certainly be huge.”

A youth said.

“There is no need for that. We'll let him get the relic first for now. The relic belongs to me, I will get it sooner or later.”

Desolate Ning's tone was cold. He decided not to continue bidding. He would only get more enraged challenging such a mad man, and in the end, the one who would get all the profits would be the auction authority. As for the relic and the broken sword, he would need Jiang Chen to spit them out later.

“It seems like Desolate Ning isn't going for another bid.”

“We have met a mad man today. Desolate Ning must be

extremely frustrated right now. But this brat's cultivation is too weak, a mere Third Grade Minor Saint. I don't think he has the ability to protect his treasures once he left Dark Surge City. Desolate Ning wouldn't be able to swallow this grudge. He would definitely give that brat a good lesson after this auction is over.””

“The fact that he can bid a 100 million proved that he has a great fortune. Since he has killed the people of Dan Family, he has already offended us. When Desolate Family deals with him, we will join them. We can't let Desolate Ning to get all of them.”

.....

Many geniuses in the guests' rooms had set their target to the mad youth, they wanted to interfere during their fight and scavenge the leftovers. They could clearly see that the youth in white was certainly a rich person, he was able to spend a 100 million just for the relic.

“Okay, since no one is calling for a new bid, this relic will be owned by this prince.”

Wei Er looked over at Jiang Chen in an excessively courteous manner. They wouldn't have thought that the main bidder for this auction was a youth in the audience section instead of the guests on the second floor. This was what they called, don't judge a man by his looks.

For the following moment, the treasures were revealed in an endless flow, but Jiang Chen didn't make a single bid because they

were useless for him. However, it was a different case for the others. The bidders this time around were not the rogue cultivators on the ground floor but the privileged cultivators on the second floor as the competition among them was too fierce for the rogue cultivators.

The auction continued for another hour before it ended.

“Everyone, the auction has ended. Privileged guests in the honourable section, please stay in your room while waiting for our staff to bring you the auctioned items. Guests in the audience section please come forth to the platform to receive your treasures.”

Wei Er said. Then, her eyes shifted to Jiang Chen. “Prince, I will specially prepare another guests’ room for you. Wei Er will bring you there personally.”

This was an exceptional hospitality from the people of the prefecture. They had specially found a new guests’ room for their main client – Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen stood up and walked towards the direction of the second floor. He could feel that divine senses of different people had already surrounded him. These divine senses comprised of rage, murderous intent, greed and the likes. They all viewed Jiang Chen as prey.

Dan King couldn’t help but exude beads of sweat when he realised that the matter had intensified to such an extent. He never

imagined that Jiang Chen made so many enemies in this short period of time. He was currently thinking how to resolve this matter.

However, Jiang Chen looked as calm as usual, as if those concerns weren't a big deal. He strode towards the second floor.

“Prince, this way please.”

Wei Er gestured and led Jiang Chen and his friends to the new guests' room. Then, Jiang Chen said, “Miss Wei Er, we are in a hurry. Please quickly bring those treasures to us.”

Wei Er said, “Prince can take a seat first.”

Jiang Chen nodded and found a seat for himself.

“Little Chen, what should we do after this? I think those bastards won't go easy on us, particularly the people of Desolate Family.”

Tyrant sounded slightly worried.

“I have my ways to deal with them. Big yellow, be prepared. The plan may have been executed in advance.”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

Swoosh

After hearing this, Big Yellow's ears stood erect with a swoosh. He became very excited.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen was moving the dark spirits, demon souls and devil souls in his Qi Sea, slowly refining them for absorption. He was going to deal with Desolate Ning soon to retrieve his finger bone back. Desolate Ning was a genius of his family, a powerful Seventh Grade Minor Saint. He would absolutely not be an easy opponent even for a normal or a transformed Jiang Chen, as he was merely a Third Grade Minor Saint. Furthermore, if he transformed into a dragon, he would attract the attention of the people of the Dark Generation, ultimately exposing his true identity.

Thus, Jiang Chen had no choice but to use an extreme way to enhance his cultivation to Fourth Grade Minor Saint. The amount of dark spirit he collected from killing those princes was enough for him to reach the Fourth Grade Minor Saint. The reason that he didn't attempt this advancement technique was because it could easily affect his foundation.

In spite of that, he still needed to quickly boost up his cultivation in order to defeat Desolate Ning. If he refined the new finger bone, it would be able to make up for the loss that he would make from the advancement.

Weng *Weng*

The souls inside Jiang Chen's Qi Sea started to ripple. Due to the control of his willpower, the people from the outside would not be able to find out that he was trying to advance his cultivation. Every dark spirit was quickly refined under the circulation of the dragon transformation art. Blood-red dragon marks started to condense in his Qi Sea.

Seconds later, an elder in grey robe walked in, carrying a smile on his face. He was an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. After entering the room, he held his fist at Jiang Chen and said, "My apologies for the extra wait, I am the valuation master for the items of this auction."

When the elder appeared, Wei Er immediately took out the broken sword and the relic but she didn't give it to Jiang Chen yet.

"En, I don't like the stains of ink. The total value is a hundred and ten million. I suppose that all of my things here should be enough for that amount."

Jiang Chen said. He waved his palm and different kinds of pills came out with a swoosh in front of the elder. These pills were resplendent with variegated colouration. The entire room was filled with a medicinal aura.

"Profound Rank Restoration Pill, Five Elemental Pill, Recuperation Pill and Jade Dew Pill..."

The elder's eyes reflected the same colours as the pills. He was able to spell out the names of all these pills with just a single look.

“Alright, every pill here is deemed high grade pill and of 100% effectiveness. It seems like prince is a powerful alchemist but with these pills alone, I’m afraid that it isn't worth a hundred and ten million.”

As soon as the elder’s voice faded, he saw Jiang Chen’s hands wave. Exactly twenty Minor Saint Weapons appeared. It made the elder and Wei Er widen their eyes in astonishment. Minor Saint Weapons were the weapons that the Dark Generation badly needed and lacked of.

“After adding these, it should be enough.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Most of these Minor Saint Weapons were obtained from killing those young princes of the rich families. He wouldn’t feel hurt at all for using these seized items to exchange for treasure.

“Enough, it’s enough. Prince is really a straightforward person. I’m very glad to see that our trade went so smoothly.”

The elder waved his hand to keep all those pills and Combat Weapons before he spoke to Wei Er, “Wei Er, quickly hand over the treasures to this prince.”

Wei Er responded with a smile and passed the relic and the broken sword to Jiang Chen before she saying, “Prince can have your rest here for a while before you leave.”

After she finished speaking, Wei Er and the elder turned to leave, closing the door before they left.

Big Yellow wasn't trying to be courteous. He took the broken sword and kept it. On the other hand, Jiang Chen took the relic and brought it to Tyrant. "Tyrant, this is for you."

"Alright, thank you."

Tyrant knew Jiang Chen's personality, so instead of acting polite in front of him, he quickly kept the relic up. His current cultivation was too weak compared to Jiang Chen, so he wouldn't be able to assist him in the battle. Upon refining the relic, his cultivation would have a dramatic improvement. As for Jiang Chen's kindness, he would remember it in his heart. Receiving a gift from your brother didn't need an excessive amount of words or remarks, or else the brotherhood would seem distant.

Chapter 840 - Fourth Grade Minor Saint

Big Yellow had gotten the broken sword and Tyrant had gotten hold of the relic. Now, the auction was officially over. The next thing that awaited them was a huge problem. Countless of divine sense that harboured evil intentions were sweeping their room openly. All of these divine sense was locked on Jiang Chen. They already thought that Jiang Chen would be finished as soon as he stepped out of Dark Surge City.

“Brother Chen, what are you going to do next? It seems like a lot of people are going to harm you.”

Yan Chenyu sounded worried.

“That’s right, we have offended the Dan Family before the gateway of Void Triangular Domain. We have offended the Desolate Family just now. We have offended a total of three families among the eight, especially the Desolate Family. They will never forgive you. Due to out bidding them in the auction just now, many other major powers like the Dan Family, Hou Family, the major powers of Boundless World and Black Yellow World would certainly be willing to join in the hunt for you, so that they can also have a share of your fortune. It is hard to imagine the battle. You are no more than a prey in their eyes now.”

Dan King was worried. Thinking of the event that would happen later alone could make anyone’s skin crawl. Whether it was the eight families of Saint Origin World or the major powers of the other two worlds, they weren’t easy to handle. Anyone of these major powers had an unimaginable overall strength and power.

These major powers were people that Jiang Chen and his friends could not mess with.

“It doesn’t matter, since we have already offended them. We would eventually clash with each sooner or later, even if we didn’t offend them now. As for the people of the Boundless and Black Yellow World, they shouldn’t come and provoke me, otherwise I will make them suffer unimaginably.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes revealed a cold light. He was destined to go to the Pure Land in the future. So it was only a matter of time before he got into conflict with the people of the eight families. As Desolate Ning possessed Jiang Chen’s finger bone, it became impossible for the two of them not to clash. As for the Hou and Dan Family, it no longer concerned him since he had already offended them even before the auction.

As for the major powers from the two worlds, Jiang Chen certainly didn’t put them in his eyes. If they had offended Jiang Chen, he would absolutely have returned the favour as none of their Great Saints would be able to get into this domain. Once he returned to the Saint Origin World, none of them would be able to find him.

Thus, the group of people that he wasn’t afraid the most was the people from the Boundless and Black Yellow World. He would kill them without hesitation even if his opponents were very strong and had very strong forces behind because none of them would be able to find Jiang Chen when they wanted to have their revenge.

“However, that Desolate Ning wasn’t easy to handle. Not only

Desolate Ning, but also those powerful geniuses from the eight families. There was none among them who can save your effort. Every one of them is a gifted talent with powerful techniques, and exceedingly more powerful than the peers who are same grade as them. To deal them with your Third Grade Minor Saint grade's power, I'm afraid that it would be very difficult."

Dan King said.

"I am advancing to the Fourth Grade Minor Saint."

Jiang Chen spoke, he then closed his eyes and stopped talking.

Dan King rolled his eyes. He had utmost respect for Jiang Chen's advancement method. One should know that this was the advancement within the Minor Saint realm. Every advancement would be extremely difficult. In other words, every Minor Saint would reach a bottleneck in every grade. But, it seemed like this bottleneck didn't exist in Jiang Chen's case. After a series of contemplation, Dan King found out that it only made sense for a monstrous genius like him. There were some matters beneath the heavens that couldn't be explained using common sense. Jiang Chen's existence itself was a miracle.

Jiang Chen casted the five elemental sphere to encompass his entire body. In which case, no one would be able to detect his advancement, even if he was scanned by the divine sense of the other geniuses.

His killings of Minor Saints in the Dark Mulberry City, mostly

the princes of the rich families, had gotten him a lot of dark spirit. Although none of them were above Eighth Grade Minor Saint, the total energy of these dark spirits was enough for him to advance to a Fourth Grade Minor Saint.

As Jiang Chen's cultivation continued to rise, his dragon transformation art would only become more terrifyingly powerful. Under the circulation of his dragon transformation art, each of the dark spirit was refined and absorbed one after another. The dark element within the spirit was refined by dragon transformation art into the purest energy for him to absorb.

From the start until the end, it took roughly ten minutes. An even stronger energy spilled out from Jiang Chen's body, but it was quickly pulled back. That was the excess Qi that burst out from his body after his advancement. If he released this Qi out, it would be powerful enough to demolish the entire auction compound.

“That is very fast.”

Dan King was astonished once more. The time taken was less than twenty minutes. He wouldn't be able to believe it if he didn't see it with his own eyes. However, he felt relieved after seeing Jiang Chen's advancement. When Jiang Chen was only a Third Grade Minor Saint, he could already kill a Seventh Grade Minor Saint in his human-dragon form. After advancing to the Fourth Grade Minor Saint, killing an Eighth Grade Minor Saint was a piece of cake after his transformation. As such, the difficulty of killing Desolate Ning had significantly decreased.

‘This is undeniably good. The dragon marks in my body have increased from sixty five thousand to sixty seven thousand, which pushed my peak to Third Grade Minor Saint grade to the peak of Fourth Grade Minor saint. My combat strength has been enhanced unimaginably.’

Jiang Chen’s Qi shook and his eyes flashed with brilliance. After reaching the Fourth Grade Minor Saint, his confidence was boosted once more. His current demeanour was so natural that it had become part of him. The superior aura that is exuded from his body made people not dare to look at him directly.

“Father, Xiao Yu, Tyrant, you all have to wait in Dark Surge City first. Big Yellow and I will leave the city to meet those geniuses.”

Jiang Chen said to Dan King and the others.

“Brother Chen, I will follow you.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“Negative. This battle has too many unforeseen variables. I don’t know how it would develop. When I have lured Desolate Ning and the others out, you all must leave Dark Surge City at once and head for King City. Find the Demon Race and ask for their support.”

Jiang Chen said in a heavy tone. He could not determine the result of the battle. It was high likely that his dragonman identity would be exposed. At that time, Yan Chenyu and the other two

would need the protection of the Demon Race. All their powerful experts were situated in King City. According to Big Yellow, the leader of the Demon Race for this trip was the elder of the Lion Race. He would provide protection to Jiang Chen's three friends on Big Yellow's behalf.

As for Big Yellow, Jiang Chen knew that this dog would follow him no matter what to accomplish this major task. Furthermore, given Big Yellow's current strength and his innate special ability, keeping his own life wasn't a problem.

Presently, Desolate Ning had already made up his mind on eliminating Jiang Chen, which was the best chance for Jiang Chen to retrieve his finger bone and further enhance his strength. His cultivation would surely advance to the Fifth Grade Minor Saint once he obtained the bone. At that time, any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint would be no match for him after he transformed into a human-dragon. That advancement would also fortify his foundation as well. As such, there wouldn't be anyone who could kill him in Void Triangular Domain.

“Alright, you have to be careful while you are on your own.”

Yan Chenyu nodded. She knew that Jiang Chen was doing this for their sake. Plus, they wouldn't be much of help if they followed Jiang Chen to the battlefield and would only create distractions for Jiang Chen instead. Tyrant was merely a Second Grade Minor Saint, he would need time to refine the relic for him to advance. And, with the protection of the Demon Race, they would surely be fine.

“Don’t worry about it, all of them are within my control. Dealing with Desolate Ning is the most important element in my plan.”

Jiang Chen said before he turned to leave the room. He had Big Yellow flew outside the city frantically. Jiang Chen was right, he needed sufficient power to deal with the Dark Generation’s army, the Void Triangular Domain would be closing soon. Desolate Ning’s finger bone was his best chance to improve, probably the only chance. If he missed it, his ultimate plan could not be executed.

Furthermore, putting aside the ultimate plan, Jiang Chen’s current cultivation needed further enhancement, or else he would lose control of his life in front of his enemies.

“Not good, that brat is trying to flee.”

In the guests’ room of Desolate Ning, someone sensed that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were moving speedily out of Dark Surge City

“Relax, he won’t be able to run away from us. Let’s go.”

Desolate Ning smirked. In just a few blinks, the guests’ room of the Desolate Family became empty. All of them were moving to the direction where Jiang Chen disappeared.

“It seems like that brat know what fear is. He is trying to slip away from us. How can we let that happen? Move, we will join in the fight.”

“The people of the Desolate Family are on the move. We will go there and watch the show. That brat has a lot of treasures in his possession and since he is going to die, we can’t miss this opportunity.”

.....

For a moment, silhouettes flew out of the auction compound like lightning and appeared outside of the city in a twinkle.

“Look, those are the geniuses of the different major powers. They must be going after that youth in white. We should follow and find out.”

“This will be a major fight. Let’s go and watch the show.”

“I am sure that, that brat would certainly die and Desolate Ning won’t let him die so easily.”

.....

The scene and shaken up plenty of people. Most of them who took part in the auction also flew in the direction where Desolate Ning was headed. They weren’t there to take part in the battle as they weren’t capable enough to do that. However, it was certainly an event that they couldn’t miss out. A lot of people would like to see how the youth in white would die.

The auction compound was very quickly emptied. At this time, Dan King and the others were silently leaving the city and was headed towards King City. As Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had become the center of attention, no one noticed their movements.

Chapter 841 - Kong Yu

A two thousand miles radius from Dark Surge City was a desolate area. It was a barren area stretching out to hundreds of miles – a natural battlefield. With Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's speed, getting here was merely like blinking.

“This place is not bad. We'll use this place.”

Jiang Chen stopped above the sky of this desolate land. Big Yellow turned back and saw a wave of powerful Qi shimmering in the air. These Qis were coming in maximum speed.

“This group of bastards is really fast.”

Big Yellow said with a smile. In fact, they didn't travel in their full speed, otherwise, they would have slipped away from the radar of these geniuses.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

In a few twinkles, silhouettes emerged above the desolate land one after another. The group who arrived first was the people of Desolate Family. The leader was a youth in white. His face was boiling with rage and murderous intent. He was Desolate Ning.

Their arrival was followed by a cluster of people. All of them stopped in the sky above the desolate land. They were in different uniform. Besides the experts of the eight families, there were also

experts from the other two worlds. Fundamentally speaking, those major powers in the guests' rooms had all arrived. Some major powers like Dan Family and Fire Family came here to take their revenge on Jiang Chen. Some came here in hopes of scavenging some of the fortune of Jiang Chen. Some were here just to watch the show. How could they miss the chance of watching such an excited show?

“Run now! Why aren't you running anymore?”

Desolate Ning's eyes were like that of a poisonous snake. He sneered at Jiang Chen.

“Run? Or perhaps it is me who intentionally waited for you to catch up to my speed?”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms. His facial expression remained unchanged while facing numerous experts and someone as strong as Desolate Ning.

“You puny rogue cultivator! Who gave you the boldness to go against the Desolate Family?”

A Sixth Grade Minor Saint youth pointed at Jiang Chen and scolded him. They felt the impulse to rush forward to rip this bastard to pieces when they thought of their confrontation that happened during the auction. Desolate Family was a high and mighty family. They couldn't believe there was someone who wanted death so badly.

“Puny? The people of Desolate Family are really proud but have intelligence deficiency. Before you start saying someone puny, judge yourself in terms of your own strength first. I hope that you are still able to spell out that word when I crush your skull with my foot.”

Jiang Chen’s gaze reached the youth like a sharp blade. He would never show any courtesy to people like this. There was only one consequence for calling ‘puny’ to the Greatest Saint.

“Humph! You don’t need to use your acute tongue. Tell me, what’s your name? I, Desolate Ning, won’t kill a nameless ghost.”

Desolate Ning let out a cold humph.

“Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen replied in a flat tone.

“Alright, Jiang Chen, I will give you one more chance to live if you hand over the relic and the broken sword and then kneel to kowtow nine times before me. Then, I will disable your cultivation, so that you will be a disabled cultivator and stay a puny being for the rest of your life. This is the chance which I will only give once. If you refuse, I will grant you a graveless death.”

Desolate Ning was like a lord. In his eyes, a rogue cultivator like Jiang Chen was the lowest of all beings that didn’t even have the right to speak to him. It should be Jiang Chen’s greatest honor to

be able to converse two words with him.

“Alas!”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but sigh. This type of family was born with superior pride. It was the attitude they would show whenever they were in a fight. In order to deal with such people, any extra conversation would be deemed unnecessary, only knuckle sandwiches could crush their snobbish pride.

“Go and f*ck yourself, you must be the brat named Desolate Ning. You still dare to brag arrogantly when you are standing at the edge of your death? I'm not sure whether you've been kicked at your brain or not. Master Dog will be giving you the other alternative that you said. You just have to come over to kowtow nine times, and then, present all your valuables to me, and perhaps that will keep you alive. This Master Dog will only say it once. If you don't do as I say immediately, you just have to wait for your death.”

Big Yellow could no longer take Desolate Ning's arrogance and had to act more arrogantly than him by returning the words that he said.

Many of them wanted to faint when they heard his words. This dog was too outrageous. Was he blind towards the situation in front of him? This was the only being across Saint Origin World which dared to ask Desolate Ning to kowtow in front of him. The bystanders couldn't help but feel impressed by his boldness.

“This dog is finished!”

Majority of them felt that Desolate Ning would certainly rush forward to peel of the dog’s skin given his hot temper.

Without a doubt, the other members of Desolate Family had already lost their temper. A Sixth Grade Minor Saint genius bellowed, “Where did this dog with such a dirty mouth come from? You should die!”

Hong Long

A rumble was heard as the youth struck out with his palm seal with incredible brilliance which smashed the void to pieces before it reached Big Yellow in a twinkle.

Big Yellow faced the incoming attack with total disdain. A reddish-gold light glowed from his head before he slammed against the huge palm attack with his head. Many of the bystanders sighed when they saw Big Yellow’s action, they thought that this dog must be really an idiot for using his head to take the impact directly.

Bang

The collision from Big Yellow’s head pulverized the huge brilliant palm seal. That Sixth Grade Minor Saint genius received a strong backlash and staggered a few steps backwards before stabilizing himself.

“What?!”

The bystanders exclaimed and looked at Big Yellow again but with a different and surprised expressions.

“The dog’s head is really powerful. It seems he only has Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint grade but he can defeat a Sixth Grade Minor Saint in the first round of the battle. He must have some exceptional bloodline”

“Awesome! No wonder he was so arrogant. So he does have reliable strength.”

“But the dog and the youth in white still can’t be compared to Desolate Family as they are way too strong for the two absurd beings.”

.....

The number of people who joined to watch the show was increasing. Many of them were amazed by Big Yellow’s power, especially Huo Miao and Duan Rong from Black Yellow World when they thought about chasing after this dog on the street yesterday. After the impact, it seemed that Jiang Chen’s words were right. They were absolutely no match for the dog like the Sixth Grade Minor Saint of Desolate Family just now if the dog decided to engage in a battle with them.

“A mere piece of garbage, you still dare to act arrogantly despite your incompetence? So this is how strong the genius of Desolate Family is. How could they claim that someone is puny?”

Big Yellow’s comment was acute. If anyone wanted to pick a fight with this dog, the person was fated to have tragic ending or die because of infuriation.

Among the group of Demon Race, the leader was a man wearing seven-coloured feather clothes. On his forehead was imprinted with peacock talisman symbol. He had an uncommon demeanor and a peak Seventh Grade Minor Saint. The twitch of his eyes exuded radiance of seven colors.

“He is worthy of possessing a divine beast bloodline. That explains why he is highly regarded by my father and patriarch.”

The man in feather clothes nodded. Clearly, Big Yellow’s attack just now had satisfied him.

“Before coming here, I remember Big Yellow was only a Third Grade Minor Demon Saint, but now, he has advanced to the fifth grade. Plus, the genius of Sixth Grade Minor Saint has no match for him now. His divine beast bloodline is certainly exceptional.”

Blue Lion who was standing beside the man in feather clothes nodded.

“Courting death!”

Desolate Ning raged and his Qi fluctuated before charging at Big Yellow. This man and this dog were too infuriating. He decided to get rid of this dog first before killing Jiang Chen.

“Stop!”

The moment Desolate Ning unleashed his Qi, a bellow was heard. The man wearing feather attire took a step forward. He then said to Desolate Ning, “Desolate Ning, you dare to kill the people of my race?”

“Kong Yu, this is none of your business. I hope you won’t interfere in this.”

Desolate Ning frowned.

“This is must be a joke. Big Yellow plays a very important role in our Demon Race. If you dare to touch him, you will have to go through me first.”

Kong Yu’s demon Qi soared to the sky, it wasn’t weaker than Desolate Ning.

“It’s Kong Yu, the son of Peacock King. He has the powerful Peacock Bloodline, and a rare genius in Demon Race. If the two fight, Desolate Ning wouldn’t have a chance to defeat him. These explains why this dog is so arrogant. This dog is in fact a member of Demon Race.”

“If this dog is backed by Demon Race, I’m afraid Desolate Ning will need to rethink his decision to finish Big Yellow. Desolate Family is no doubt powerful but Demon Race isn’t weak, not to mention they are frenzied. Demon Race will never follow any rules once they have determined their enemy or enemies. They aren’t an enemy you would want.”

.....

After seeing Kong Yu’s action, people around started to understand why this dog was behaving so arrogantly. The reason was that the dog had a strong backer. Kong Yu was the son of Peacock King. Across the entire Pure Land, the name of Peacock King was widely known. Those powerful Great Saints would automatically retreat when they heard of the name ‘Peacock King’.

“Kong Yu, do you think I will be afraid of you? When I, Desolate Ning, wants to kill someone, no one will be able to stop me.”

Desolate Ning’s fiery aura spilled out his body. If his unexpressed anger continued to be kept in his body, it would explode from the inside.

“Is that so? Then you should try and see.”

Kong Yu’s demon Qi fluctuated. Sounds of flutter were heard from his feather clothes. His combat aura filled the atmosphere. It seemed the battle was going to start in seconds. This was the natural instinct of the people of Demon Race, let alone the son of

Peacock King, who had inherited most of the Qi and demeanor of Peacock King.

“Desolate Ning, don’t clash with Demon Race today. Our target is Jiang Chen.”

An elder talked to Desolate Ning via divine sense. If the battle between these two major powers started, it wouldn’t do Desolate Family any good. Kong Yu alone was going to be a very hard enemy. The battle would make both sides suffer large losses. At that time, Huo Family and Dan Family would take this chance to deal with Jiang Chen. In which case, all of Jiang Chen’s treasures would fall into their possession.

“Humph! Kong Yu, we will settle our score in the future. Quickly leave along with his dog in front of me. I want to kill Jiang Chen now. Anyone who tries to stop me now, do not call me cold-hearted later and put the blame on me.”

Desolate Ning said in a serious tone.

Chapter 842 - A Battle Against Desolate Ning

Kong Yu smirked when he saw Desolate Ning's cold smile. He quickly kept his Qi and turned over to Big Yellow and said, "Big Yellow, come to me. With my presence, no one will dare to touch you."

"Big Yellow, you go to Demon Race first. I will handle them alone."

Jiang Chen immediately talked to Big Yellow via divine sense. Otherwise given Big Yellow's temper, he would refuse to listen to Kong Yu. The current situation wasn't only about Desolate Ning. Dan Family and Huo Family were all included in the battle as well. A genius like Desolate Ning was very hard to be dealt with. Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to care about Big Yellow as he was merely a Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint. Jiang Chen basically wouldn't have anything to worry about if Big Yellow was Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

"You should be careful then. You don't have to show any quarters to them in the battle. Slaughter this group of pricks like hell!"

Big Yellow said loudly to Jiang Chen, undisguisedly. This was the second time they were scolded using the word 'prick'. The people of Desolate Family had already spurted out flames in their eyes. If he wasn't an important figure in Demon Race, they would dash forward and peel this dog's skin off.

As a matter of fact, Desolate Family would never let go of Big Yellow despite being a member of Demon Race, but the priority was Jiang Chen now instead of the dog.

Big Yellow walked to Kong Yu's side with dissatisfaction. He didn't ask Kong Yu to help Jiang Chen because Big Yellow had yet to earn the right to speak in Demon Race.

To Kong Yu, despite knowing Jiang Chen was Big Yellow's friend, he couldn't interfere in his matter because the current scenario would involve different major powers. Besides the other seven families of Saint Origin World, the major powers of Boundless World and Black Yellow World weren't someone they wanted to make enemy. He was sure that it wasn't Desolate Ning alone who wanted Jiang Chen. He didn't have the capability to simultaneously make so many major powers retreat.

Furthermore, Desolate Ning was about to go berserk. Kong Yu had already stopped him from engaging in a fight with Big Yellow. If he protected Jiang Chen as well, he believed that Desolate Ning would certainly fight him. At that time, the entire Demon Race would be dragged into the conflict.

“Jiang Chen, I am giving you one last chance. Hand over the relic and the broken sword!”

Desolate Ning bellowed.

“I guess you don't have to say any of those sh*tty words again. If I

hand over these two items to you now, why should I compete the bid with you during the auction in the first place? Since I dared to start a competition with you, it means I don't fear you. If you want to fight me, there will only one result for you – death.”

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly. He totally didn't put Desolate Ning in his eyes.

“This guy is really arrogant, more arrogant than the geniuses of eight families. But how can he fight and defeat Desolate Ning with his current grade? I really have no idea what he is thinking.”

“He may have a serious brain injury or brain problem, but his boldness is impressive. If he were me, I wouldn't do this even if I was forced to die.”

“Just wait and see, Desolate Ning will definitely show him something good before he dies tragically.”

.....

Many people were sighing. They had already witnessed Jiang Chen's boldness and arrogance in the auction. Due to the rules in the auction, Desolate Ning couldn't find the chance to strike. Seeing how arrogant Jiang Chen was, could it be that he was confident to fight Desolate Ning?

“I will make sure you know how to die. Since you don't hand over your items, I will get it myself.”

Desolate Ning's body produced sounds of cracking. Dense murderous aura had almost coagulated the void.

“This man has humiliated the member of Huo Family, I won't let this matter slip away.”

Before Desolate Ning attacked, someone from Huo Family spoke. He was Huo Yuan. It seemed he was going to interfere in this battle.

“And my Dan Family. This Jiang Chen has killed our new disciple before the gateway of Void Triangular Domain. This is a direct challenge and insult to our family. Today, we are here to get justice for our family.”

The leader of Dan Family walked out. He was wearing a body of yellow dan robe. He was also a peak Seventh Grade Minor Saint. He was called Dan Yuanchong, a scarce genius of the young generation.

After seeing this, Jiang Chen smirked. Dan Family and Huo Family joined in the fight as he anticipated.

“Huo Yuan, Dan Yuanchong. Are you two here to join in the ‘fun’? This man is mine.”

Desolate Ning said coldly.

“This man has a type of fire which is needed by Huo Family. He insulted the genius of my family and he must pay for that. His fire will be treated as the compensation.”

“Our family wants revenge.”

Dan Yuanchong said.

“That’s enough. You thought I don’t know what you all want? And the other major powers as well. I am your intention know very well. There is one thing which I have to inform you. This brat’s life belongs to me. None of you will take him away from me. Just wait until I kill him and I obtained the relic and broken sword. As for the rest of the treasures he has, they will be given to you all accordingly.”

Desolate Ning yelled without looking at Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong. All of a sudden, he rushed forth to Jiang Chen. It was only a blink of an eye for Desolate Ning to reach Jiang Chen with a punch that created gusts of wind.

This knuckle strike carried boundless rage. In his point of view, Jiang Chen was going to die instantly under this strike but he didn’t want to kill him first. He wanted to torture him slowly.

“You come at the right time.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated, his body was encompassed with domineering combat intent. The natural instinct of the cultivator

of dragon transformation art was their innate ability to combat. It was rare to meet an opponent like Desolate Ning and many other geniuses as well today. As such, Jiang Chen had to make sure the battle was an intense one.

He struck as fast as electricity with a simple punch glittering with golden colour, colliding with Desolate Ning's punch.

Bang!

The two fists carried boundless of energy. When they collided, a large hole was produced in the void and huge fiery sparks were created.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Jiang Chen was forced over ten steps backwards by the impact before finding his stability. He could feel his Qi and blood racing in his body and other unpleasant sensation which he couldn't put in words. However, all of these disappeared very quickly after circulating dragon transformation art. His speed of recovery had reached an unimaginable state because of the help of Mulberry Divine Wood essence. Any ordinary backlash or injuries wouldn't do him any harm as he could heal within seconds.

“What?!”

Desolate Ning's eyes widened as if he had seen the most unimaginable incident. In his imagination, his punch would at

least destroy all Jiang Chen's combat strength even if it couldn't kill him. He didn't imagine that Jiang Chen only received some backlash from his strike. And, Jiang Chen looked perfectly fine and uninjured. How could this possibly happen?

Judging by his opponent's Qi, he was only a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. It was impossible for him to be so powerful even if he had made a leap from third grade to fourth grade in the auction house.

"Very powerful... Why haven't I heard about this Jiang Chen before? He can actually fight equally with Desolate Ning with his current grade. One should know that Desolate Ning is a powerful Seventh Grade Minor Saint and a genius of Desolate Family. Some say that he has defeated an Eighth Grade Minor Saint before."

"That's right. It's absurd. It seems like this guy does have some abilities to be able to have a draw in the first round. Won't Desolate Ning be instantly killed if he were to be at the same grade with Jiang Chen? This is no doubt very monstrous."

"Agreed, but his cultivation grade is too weak. There is a three grade difference between him and Desolate Ning. The first round was a very clear indication. The two of them still varies considerably in strength. In fact, Desolate Ning didn't strike with his full strength just now. It was just an attack to test his enemy."

.....

Jiang Chen's ability to handle Desolate Ning's attack amazed everyone. Their gaze for Jiang Chen had changed dramatically as

well.

The current Jiang Chen was calm; it seemed the backlash didn't affect any of his psychology.

‘The genius of Desolate Family is surely exceptional. My advancement to Fourth Grade Minor Saint makes me capable to kill any ordinary Seventh Grade Minor Saint. But if my opponent is Desolate Ning, I won't be able to hurt him. Now it seems only dragon transformation can help me on this.’

Jiang Chen said to himself. After measuring the difference between the both of them, he would certainly fail to defeat Desolate Ning with his current condition. But if he used dragon transformation, he would have ten times his current combat strength. The gap of difference would be shortened immediately. When he was in human-dragon form, he was confident that he could take down Desolate Ning and retrieve his long lost finger bone.

“But, due to the advancement depending highly on dark spirits, my foundation and base has become unstable. Now it's the good time to use my current strength to fight Desolate Ning and use the pressure he gives me to fortify my base.”

Jiang Chen had decided that he wouldn't use dragon transformation. A battle like this would definitely bring him great benefits.

“Jiang Chen, it seems I have underestimated you. You can

actually bear my attack with your current grade. You are the first who can do this. But unfortunately, you have offended me and so you're destined to be killed as your cultivation grade is too weak. Killing you is as simple as raising my hands. The strike just now was merely a test for my opponent. If you kowtow before me right now, I will honour the agreement I said just now."

Desolate Ning spoke loudly.

"It's enough."

Jiang Chen could no longer bear it anymore. He struck with his True Dragon Palm, a scary blood-red dragon claw appeared above the sky and reached Desolate Ning's head in a second. True Dragon Palm pressed against Desolate Ning down like the weight of Mount Tai.

"A very powerful combat skill, but you are destined to be weaker than me."

Desolate Ning's murderous aura soared to the sky. With a second word, both of his palms released brilliant light that looked like millions of sharp swords piercing through the void. Then, his both palms struck forth with a boundless energy equivalent to that of a mountain falling from the sky, which could destroy everything.

Chapter 843 - Heaven Breaking Finger

Hong Long

Desolate Ning's attack collided with True Dragon Palm, producing a world-shaking sound. The void was shattered once more and a massive amount of energy spilled out like ocean. Despite battling in the sky, the combat wave rippled downwards to the desolate area, leaving a great big pit on the ground, and mist and dust in the air.

Many people's faces changed. Some turned ugly and retreated at once as they were the nearest to the battlefield and could feel the ripple of the excessive combat wave. The after-effect of the rounds of battle between these two was too terrifying and out of their imagination. Some people who had very weak combat strength didn't even have the right to watch the show.

True Dragon Palm was pulverised and Jiang Chen was sent flying away again. But he didn't receive a single injury this time thanks to his scary regenerative skill. Immediately, he charged forth to Desolate Ning once more like a tiger.

“Good, Jiang Chen. Good! You have really surprised me. I don't think I can't harm you.”

Desolate Ning raged for battling a Fourth Grade Minor Saint for so long. It was an insult to him as many experts and geniuses were watching this battle. If he couldn't take Jiang Chen down soon, he would lose all his face.

Hong Long

Desolate Ning and Jiang Chen had battled for several rounds. Jiang Chen was the one being sent away in every round. In his opinion, his attack was supposed to cause damage to Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen looked unharmed and as good as new after every round of their battle. It had frustrated him very much.

To Jiang Chen, this type of battle was what he needed. Every clash of their attacks would fortify his foundation a little, which was currently the thing he hoped to achieve.

“Is this brat a cockroach that can’t die? How can he be reaching a draw in every round? It seems we have underestimated him.”

“This man must be cultivating some sort of abnormal cultivation method that can help him regenerate at such a quick pace. That’s why he looked unharmed every time when his attack clashed with Desolate Ning’s. The damage done to his body was healed in the matter of seconds. A cultivation method like this is truly scary. If I can obtain it, my grade will be further enhanced.”

“My initial thought is that the battle between them won’t have any suspense. Now it seems it has become a difficult thing for Desolate Ning to kill this brat.”

“This Jiang Chen does have amazing power and strength. But if you compare him with Desolate Ning, killing Jiang Chen won’t require a lot of Desolate Ning’s effort because he is a rare genius of

Desolate Family. There are still many techniques that aren't used yet."

.....

Everyone was astonished that Jiang Chen was in fact this powerful, including Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong who had dramatically changed their facial expression. They started to focus on Jiang Chen, because his powerful strength was relatively equivalent to powerful items. Many of the experts were having the same kind of thoughts. In their point of view, Jiang Chen's body must be as valuable as treasure because of the cultivation method he practiced. Otherwise, there was no explanation as to why he was that powerful given the fact that he was merely a rogue cultivator.

"No wonder Big Yellow and Jiang Chen are close friends. Big Yellow does have sharp eyesight in making friends."

Blue Lion of Demon Race nodded and said. Kong Yu who was standing at one side nodded too. The way he looked at Jiang Chen had totally changed.

"That is of course. But let me tell you this, Jiang Chen still has a great deal of techniques. Now that Desolate Ning has offended him, his ending is only death. Besides that, I want to correct some of your preliminary thoughts. We are close not because he is strong, it is because we are sworn brothers. So, regardless of how strong or weak he is, he will always be the brother of Big Yellow."

Big Yellow said proudly.

“Jiang Chen, it seems that I can’t kill you without performing some powerful techniques of mine. Take my Heaven Breaking Palm!”

It was imaginable how infuriating it was in Desolate Ning’s heart that he was not able to take down Jiang Chen for so long. He no longer wanted to hide Desolate Family’s powerful skill – Heaven Breaking Palm.

He saw Desolate Ning’s both palms facing upwards. Countless of golden light shot out and condensed into a layer of golden cloud. It was inestimable how much the energy was contained in the hill-like cloud. As Desolate Ning shouted, the cloud started to transform gradually, followed by a thunder-like rumble before it turned into a golden palm that was roughly three hundred meters large in area – Heaven Breaking Palm.

“Haha! Desolate Ning has casted Heaven Breaking Palm. That brat is going to die undoubtedly. This skill is named as Heaven Breaking because it is boundlessly powerful and can cause shocking damage. Once it is launched, the entire sky above will shatter. I don’t believe that this Jiang Chen can withstand it.”

“That’s right. Heaven Breaking Palm originated from Desolate Family, it is a true killing technique. Desolate Ning’s progress in Heaven Breaking Palm is near perfection. One single palm will be able to slap that brat to pieces.”

Two geniuses who saw Desolate Ning using Heaven Breaking Palm laughed confidently. In their point of view, Jiang Chen couldn't escape from his death once the palm strike was sent. And, he would be totally defenceless and vulnerable.

Hong Long

Panic was created as the sky shattered. Unlimited golden storm was continuously swirling under the large palm like a cyclone. Under this palm, all beings would be ripped and then crushed to powder.

“Humph! What’s so great about this technique? It’s a mere Heaven Breaking Palm. What are the other skills that your Desolate Family are proud of? Show it to me. Let me see your true killing technique. Golden Seal, come out!”

Jiang Chen bellowed. The image of a dragon glittered in between his palms. A powerful Yang Qi shot out from it. It was the soul of divine gold essence. A powerful dragon seal was condensed by Jiang Chen very quickly.

“Go!”

Jiang Chen palms waved. Three reddish-golden dragons let out world-shaking roars and rushed from three different directions towards Heaven Breaking Palm.

Golden Dragon Seal had formed a golden dragon that looked like

a real dragon. The imposing manner that it exuded made the people to not dare to look at it directly. The brilliant and golden light had shone at the sky and earth, temporarily blinding the people around.

“My god, this is scary. What kind of combat technique is this?”

“It’s a very strong murdering combat technique. It seemed to carry the aura of a murder king. The rank of this combat technique is certainly higher than Heaven Breaking Palm. It is imaginable that if Jiang Chen were at the same grade with Desolate Ning, this skill alone could instantly kill Desolate Ning. This is too scary to think about.”

“Jiang Chen’s skill is really extraordinary. I guess he must have gotten some kind of treasure left during the ancient times. His body must be a mystery. Nanrang Family will obtain boundless benefits if we unlocked his mysterious body.”

.....

Everyone was shocked by Jiang Chen’s skill -- Golden Dragon Seal. It was true that Desolate Ning’s Heaven Breaking Palm was a true murdering combat technique, but Jiang Chen’s combat technique was the king among the murdering combat techniques. Heaven Breaking Palm wouldn’t be able to match it even if Desolate Ning trained harder. It was lucky that Desolate Ning had higher cultivation grade, otherwise, he was no match to Jiang Chen.

Roar *Roar* *Roar*

The golden dragons roared, entangling themselves on the huge Heaven Breaking Palm. Boundless energy collided from two directions. Then, the three golden dragons and Heaven Breaking Palm exploded simultaneously, followed by roars and explosions.

Hong Long

The explosion released tremendous energy that covered the entire sky above and created a large cavern in the void. The battlefield was turned into a primeval scene. It was conceivable how strong the force of impact was.

“Fire Dragon Seal!”

After striking his Golden Dragon Seal out, he quickly struck with the powerful Fire Dragon Seal. This time, three fire dragons rushed towards Desolate Ning. Every place which the fire dragons passed through was burnt, including the primeval air. The temperature of the battlefield rose significantly as the three fire dragons appeared.

“Look, this is the flames that I talked about. It carries a high and mighty Qi and some aura of heaven-and-earth, Saint Fire.”

Huo Miao, who was standing from afar, exclaimed as he saw the Fire Dragon Seal.

“It is undeniably powerful. That kind of precious, high and mighty Qi is definitely more powerful than our family’s psychic fire. Also, this flame has reached a very terrifying extent. How can a precious flame like this end up in the hands of a rogue cultivator? This is literally akin to a reckless waste of grain. A flame like this should be possessed only by Huo Family.”

Huo Yuan’s eyes let out a scorching radiance. When he heard it from Huo Miao, he didn’t quite believe it until he saw it with his own eyes. The flames were the combination of True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire. Any one of them was a true Saint item, a sacred and mighty item that wasn’t comparable to any ordinary flames. So, how could the people of Huo Family feel uninterested in these flames?

Desolate Ning bellowed with rage as he saw the three fire dragons charging towards him. His rage was spilling out due to his unexpressed anger. His fury had accumulated since the auction. He was waiting for this chance to express it all out but didn’t think that the rage would stay unexpressed after every round of battles. This Jiang Chen was so hard to deal that he couldn’t even harm him until now.

In the beginning, Jiang Chen was undoubtedly no match for him but Jiang Chen’s techniques became stronger every round, making him like a hard-to-kill cockroach. This was the first time Desolate Ning encountered such opponent. It was impossible to say that he wasn’t frustrated.

Hong Long

Desolate Ning made another strike of Heaven Breaking Palm, pulverizing Jiang Chen's Fire Dragon.

“Jiang Chen, I will see how long you can endure. I will no longer hold my power back. I want you to know what the truly terrifying attack is, Heaven Breaking Finger!”

Desolate Ning raised his right hand and pointed his right forefinger that exuded tremendous golden light and scary Saint aura. He felt that this battle could no longer continue like this. If he didn't take him down as soon as possible, he would lose his all his face.

Chapter 844 - Exposing The True Identity

Desolate Ning had decided to use his strongest combat technique – Heaven Breaking Finger. In the aspect of grade in combat techniques, Heaven Breaking Finger was no different than Heaven Breaking Palm. It was similar, but when the Heaven Breaking Finger was combined with Jiang Chen's forefinger, the power would be truly devastating. It was akin to the situation when Jiang Chen used his Saint Bone to cast Profound Nine Solar Finger.

Jiang Chen's eyes shimmered with a brilliant light as he saw Desolate Ning using his bone finger. It was something that belonged to him. His forefinger started to twitch while Desolate Ning was using it. Although Desolate Ning had fused Jiang Chen's forefinger into his by using some kind of method, it still did not belong to him, according to the nature of the bone.

How could the bone of the Greatest Saint be so easily refined? Jiang Chen's soul in the bone wasn't eradicated. It meant Desolate Ning hadn't truly refined Jiang Chen's Saint Bone. He only used the bone to launch a powerful attack. It could create a much more powerful impact force for the skill named Heaven Breaking Finger. As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen could realistically extract his Saint Bone out from Desolate Ning at his own accord.

“Look! Desolate Ning is infuriated. I heard that his forefinger is fused with a very powerful Saint Bone that was obtained by Desolate Family in the Saint Cliff.”

“That is the Saint Bone of the Greatest Saint. It can tell how much Desolate Family adores Desolate Ning for giving him the

Saint Bone.”

“Desolate Ning is a rarely seen genius of Desolate Family. He has achieved so much at this young age. Someone predicts that Desolate Ning can advance to Ninth Grade Minor Saint within two years. I am afraid the Sky Ranking in Pure Land will have to rerank again.”

“It can tell that Desolate Ning has truly been enraged. He is using his Saint Bone to launch the attack, an instant-kill attack. I’m afraid Jiang Chen doesn’t have much more techniques left. He will certainly die to Desolate Ning’s Heaven Breaking Finger. But he should feel very proud for Desolate Ning to launch such great attack.”

.....

Desolate Family had found a finger bone that belonged to the Great Saint in the Saint Cliff. To the eight families of Pure Land, it wasn’t a secret. So people wouldn’t be surprised to see Desolate Ning’s attack with the finger bone. In addition, it was normal for people as talented as Desolate Ning to have the Saint Bone.

Weng *Weng*

Desolate Ning’s entire palm was producing buzzing sound. The Saint Bone was moved. Brilliant light lingered around the Saint Bone. The Qi had already filled the atmosphere in the sky and became a formidable pressure that shivered people’s soul even before the casting of Heaven Breaking Finger.

“Finger seal, I haven’t used that for a long time.”

Jiang Chen showed a smirk at the corner of his mouth. The numerous rounds of battles by Desolate Ning had fortified the foundation of peak Fourth Grade Minor Saint by filling up all the loopholes caused by the extreme advancement using refined dark spirit. Initially, he wanted to finish Desolate Ning off , but now he was interested to see how powerful his opponent’s finger seal was.

Saint Bone could have been used to raise Desolate Ning’s combat strength, it would have the same effect at Jiang Chen. Normally, Jiang Chen didn’t use his Saint Bone much because under his human-dragon form, the power of his Saint Bone would be fully suppressed by the status condition. But, in his current human form, the Saint Bone could have been used freely.

Weng *Weng*

In the eyes of every person, Jiang Chen raised his left palm where his left forefinger was situated. It produced the similar buzzing noise and a powerful Saint aura that was akin to Desolate Ning’s.

“What?”

Desolate Ning exclaimed with shock after witnessing this. He doubted his own eyes. ‘The exact same Qi, how’s that possible? How can his body possess the finger bone of the Greatest Saint?’

He couldn't control his astonishment that was mixed with fear. He felt that he was losing control of his finger bone the moment Jiang Chen unleashed his finger bone, as though it was attempting to leave his own body. This is a scenario which is too terrifying. Desolate Ning had never felt such condition since the refinement of the Saint Bone. This was the first time.

“Quickly, look! Jing Chen also has a finger bone in his hand. Do you all feel that? His finger bone and Desolate Ning's have the same Qi.”

“Damn! This brat actually has the finger bone of the Greatest Saint? This is truly heaven defying! How did he do that? The year when the Greatest Saint fell through after slashing open the heaven gate, the eight families have swept empty all the things left on the Saint Cliff. According to them, there was only one finger bone among the remains left. Why was there another bone that was found by him?”

“My god! It's another Saint Bone. If we can get this Saint Bone, it definitely will enhance our cultivation grade by folds.”

“This brat surely has a precious body. Even the Saint Bone can be found in his body. But when an innocent man like him consists of so many precious mysteries, it will arouse and attract the attention of many. He just doomed himself by drawing the inevitable disaster.”

.....

Jiang Chen casted the same Saint Bone at the crucial time when Desolate Ning had casted his. This was no doubt a scene that had amazed everyone but this had also stirred up people's greed and envy. Now, Jiang Chen was a huge treasure house in many people's eyes.

“Jiang Chen, you lowly human, who gave you the right to possess the Saint Bone? That Saint Bone shall be mine as well. By killing you today, I shall possess your Saint Bone. Heaven Breaking Finger, kill!”

It was true that Desolate Ning was feeling astonished, but he also felt surprised. He thought that Saint Bone of Jiang Chen was his. He knew too well how powerful the Saint Bone was. If he could obtain Jiang Chen's Saint Bone, his strength would be improved drastically and pushing his current grade to the Eight.

However, the finger bone in his hand was shaking uncontrollably. So, he immediately struck out his Heaven Breaking Finger.

Hong Long

An intense explosion was heard from the void, as the Heaven Breaking Finger was sent out. A huge golden finger, the size of the pillar of heaven appeared in the sky. The name of this skill was akin to its power. The sky above was ripped, while the golden finger was charging at Jiang Chen. The power of this finger was enough to crush mountains that spans thousands of miles.

“Profound Nine Solar Finger.”

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen struck out his finger strike. This was one of his famous combat techniques when he was the Greatest Saint. If it was a full-fledged finger strike, not even the ancestor of Desolate Family could withstand it, let alone Desolate Ning. His Saint Bone, as well as his combat technique were surely stronger than Desolate Ning. But, it was still impossible for this to defeat Desolate Ning with its advantage as the gap in strength was still wide, unless he transformed into the human-dragon form.

Nine brilliant golden large fingers appeared simultaneously. Each and every one of them was moving at maximum speed, towards Desolate Ning’s Heaven Breaking Finger. In mere split seconds, nine golden fingers had fused into one while they were moving, becoming a large finger, larger than the pillar of the heaven.

Hong Long

As Nine Solar Profound Finger collided with Heaven Breaking Finger, it created tremendous damage and destruction. Cracks of the broken void were falling like rain. The bystanders were gaping with pale faces. A battle like this shook a person’s soul. They were lucky that they weren’t in the destruction area, otherwise they would disintegrate into powder in an instant, it was the case for even a Fifth Grade Minor Saint.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Jiang Chen still failed to dominate in the battle of finger seals.

However, he only staggered three steps backward, which was a lot better than being bounced 1 hundred meters away. This scenario was enough for one to tell that Jiang Chen had successfully fortified his foundation as a Fourth Grade Minor Saint grade.

People were sighing while watching the battle, because the result differed from their expectations. Desolate Ning had already sent the strongest attack that he had but he still failed to take down Jiang Chen, a mere Fourth Grade Minor Saint who could invent such a shocking combat technique. How could there be such an abnormal genius like him under the heavens?

No matter what the result would be, Jiang Chen's name was destined to stick in everyone's head. After this battle, Jiang Chen's name would spread quickly, not only across the eight domains but also the entire Saint Origin World.

Furthermore, the fact that Jiang Chen was still alive and becoming stronger had no doubt hurt his self-confidence. His emotional state had fallen into the state of fear and anger. He wasn't able to release the frustration without getting Jiang Chen killed.

“Jiang Chen, I will kill you, and your Saint Bone will be mine.”

Desolate Ning said coldly as he still had a stronger technique.

“Unfortunately, you have already lost the chance for that. Let me tell you something, I was merely toying with you before this. Now that I have gotten fed up with it, I will kill you. Your Saint Bone

will be mine. You have taken something that doesn't belong to you. You have to pay a price for what you did, and this price will be your life."

Jiang Chen said loudly. His demeanor was like an emperor that had descended from the heavens.

Many people were shocked to hear this. After witnessing Jiang Chen's techniques, they would no longer think of it as a joke. Now, their eyes shifted to Jiang Chen again. Could this brat really have a stronger technique or trump card?

"This must be a joke. You have been suppressed by me all along and now you are saying that you want to kill me? Is this a seriously a joke?"

Desolate Ning smiled coldly.

"Is this really a joke to you? Because I don't feel that way. Perhaps you will change your viewpoint a while later. I will show you my true technique."

Jiang Chen said. A tidal-like energy erupted from his body, causing his body started to change. When the sound 'bang' was heard, his body structure changed into a blood-red dragonman.

That was right. Jiang Chen was transforming into his human-dragon form, because he knew that in order to kill Desolate Ning, he would need to be a dragon. He could no longer hide his true

identity, because he needed to obtain the Saint Bone.

“This is?”

“Dragonman... look! The dragonman reappeared once more. So the dragonman was actually him.”

“The dragonman hasn’t been found for so long. So he is the dragonman.”

The entire scene was boiled with emotions in an instant. There were quite a number of people of Dark Generation, who were watching the battle. The matter of the dragonman had been spread to every corner of the domain. Because of this news, many cities had lost their peace of mind when Dark Mulberry City was destroyed. They didn’t expect the dragonman to appear again today. Once this news was spread to the others, the true experts of Dark Generation would be here very soon.

Chapter 845 - Draw the Sword to Kill

The reappearance of the dragonman boiled the emotions of the entire scene. Not only the people of Dark Generation, but also the people from the major powers of the three different worlds. Despite them arriving later, they were pretty clear about the news of the dragonman, but they hadn't thought that the dragonman was actually Jiang Chen.

“This is a terrifying transformation skill.”

Kong Yu couldn't help but feel amazed.

“That is of course. After the transformation, his combat strength would be enhanced by tenfold. The only option that Desolate Ning has right now is to be slaughtered.”

Big Yellow shook his head with excitement. In fact, he always enjoy watching Jiang Chen in action.

The dragon transformation would boost Jiang Chen's combat power by tenfold; not only would it fill the gap, he would gain the upperhand as well. Now, even if Desolate Ning was a very extraordinary genius, he wouldn't be able to withstand a single attack from Jiang Chen. One should know that a transformed Jiang Chen was able to kill a Seventh Grade Minor Saint and even an Eighth Grade Minor Saint – the Third Prince with ease when he was just a Third Grade Minor Saint. Presently, his grade had already reached the Fourth. So it was imaginable how powerful he would become after he transformed.

Desolate Ning's face turned into an ugly one. He could feel a gush of combat strength rushing out of Jiang Chen's body, it made him feel pressured. But he wouldn't just back away because of this, as it would not only shame his reputation but also the reputation of the Desolate Family. Today, he had come after Jiang Chen, if he was scared off by his prey, he would no longer be able to stay in the Pure Land.

“Jiang Chen, you thought you have become powerful enough to fight me after transforming into something? Let me tell you that, that is impossible. You could not imagine the gap between me and you.”

Desolate Ning bellowed. He struck out with the Heaven Breaking Finger, a terrifying golden finger appeared above the sky and rushed violently towards Jiang Chen. However, this time, Jiang Chen didn't use his Nine Solar Profound Finger to counter it. He only made a simple move, sending a knuckle to the golden huge finger.

Hong Long

Jiang Chen's punch had the force that was strong enough to lift a mountain, it ran into the huge golden finger. That indestructible huge golden finger was pulverized by Jiang Chen's punch.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Desolate Ning felt an enormous backlash from the impact. He

was sent 300 meters away before finally regaining his balance. He could feel that his Qi and blood rolling in his body. An impact like this would greatly affect Desolate Ning's combat strength. One should know that he didn't have the ability to heal like Jiang Chen.

But comparing his physical injury to his mental state, his current psychological status was like a river or sea that had been overturned. He who was a high and mighty person was defeated by his enemy with just a single skill. After fighting for so long, he was always the one who gained the upper hand. Even if Jiang Chen had a very powerful combat technique, he was supposed to lose to Desolate Ning. But then, the scenario changed, it changed too quickly that Desolate Ning couldn't accept it.

Could it be that Jiang Chen was merely playing with him in the fight just now? And, this was his true strength.

No, Jiang Chen needed to be killed. Otherwise, his face would be lost forever. Besides, this man could exert so much of power despite him being only a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. He would definitely become a future threat if he was kept alive.

"You can't even withstand even a single blow. Desolate Ning, say, who's the puny one now?"

Jiang Chen threw his remark and sneered at him. Desolate Ning could feel his rage burning on his face.

However, he was not a fool. He knew that he was no longer the opponent of Jiang Chen. In order to kill Jiang Chen, he needed to

get the others involve. He shifted his gaze at Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong.

“Huo Yuan, Dan Yuanchong, we will attack together. Kill Jiang Chen and we will divide the treasures.”

Desolate Ning said.

Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong frowned. They lost the gauge on Jiang Chen’s power after the sudden transformation.

“What are you two hesitating? Both the Dan and Huo Family have already made conflicts with Jiang Chen. If you don’t kill him today, he would kill the both of you some other day in the future.”

Desolate Ning continued.

This word had triggered Huo Yan and Dan Yuanchong. Desolate Ning was right about that. The two families have already viewed Jiang Chen as their enemy. Besides, the both of them were going to have their revenge on Jiang Chen. In that case, they should just attack together and finish him.

Most importantly, Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong opined that their combined attack would make Jiang Chen vulnerable regardless of how powerful he was. So, they no longer worry about Jiang Chen’s new form.

“Alright, count me, Huo Yuan in. I will kill Jiang Chen on behalf

of the Huo Family. I only want his flames besides the other stuff.”

Huo Yan clarified.

“This man has killed the people of my Dan Family, he must die.”

Dan Yuanchong stood out.

“Haha! reserve a slot for the people of Narang Family.”

“Shi Family too. This brat has too many treasures that made people envious of.”

The Narang and Shi Family stood out after Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong participation. Currently, five families out of the eight have allied into a team. The remaining three were the Demon Race, Gu Family and Bin Family. Narang Family was a clan of people that has a powerful bloodline and exceptional combat strength. Otherwise, they wouldn't be included into the eight families of the Pure Land. As for the Shi Family, their members had a special and hard physique, which made them a troublesome enemy to deal with.

The Narang and Shi Family weren't fools as well. They could discern that there are secrets hidden in Jiang Chen's body. They couldn't let these things fall into the Desolate and Huo Family's hands. In their point of view, even if Jiang Chen had already transformed, he wouldn't be able to deal with so many geniuses at the same time.

“Excuse me, Tianming Sect is joining as well.”

“And Hen Ro Sect too.”

“Huang Pu Family of the Boundless World is also feeling unoccupied.”

.....

For a moment, the major powers of the Boundless and Black Yellow World had all stood out. They had surrounded Jiang Chen. These were the people who wanted to gain benefits when someone faced a trouble, like robbing a house that was on fire. It was all because of Jiang Chen’s possessions. They all hoped that they could obtain a portion of it after killing him.

Most importantly, they all thought that, with so many experts attacking simultaneously, Jiang Chen would be a dead man for sure regardless of how heaven defying he was. Since Jiang Chen was guaranteed to be a dead man, naturally, they also want to join in and gain some benefits after the treasures have been divided. Otherwise, they wouldn’t get a tiny percentage from the treasure.

“Humph! Narang Ying, Shi Yun and people of the Boundless and Black Yellow World, what kind of conflicts do you have with Jiang Chen? Isn’t this like trying to rob someone’s house which is on fire? This is truly contemptible. You all are considered popular figures, but all of you are besieging a Fourth Grade Minor Saint. Don’t you all know how to write the word ‘shameful’?”

Kong Yu could no longer let the incident develop itself. Jiang Chen would surely die if he fell into such a predicament.

“That’s right, such lowly actions give my Gu Family no choice but to disdain you all.”

A youth who was crossing his arms said disdainfully.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh of relief when the Gu Family didn’t join their alliance. Among the eight families, the family which he didn’t want to make an enemy of was the Demon Race because Wu Ningzhu was still in the Gu Family.

People of the Bin Family didn’t speak or joined the alliance. It seemed like they were just watching the show.

“Kong Yu, since you have such a warm-hearted thought, what can you do with just your words? Why not have a one-on-one fight with me?”

Desolate Ning said with a cold smile when he saw that so many of them wanted to kill Jiang Chen. It pleased him very much to think that Jiang Chen would really die for sure.

“Fine, I don’t fear you.”

Kong Yu’s Qi fluctuated. His demon Qi rose to the sky. As the son

of the peacock king, he had never been challenged before.

“Kong Yu, don’t be hasty. Jiang Chen should be able to handle them. We just need to wait here and watch the show, these people wanted to die so badly.”

Big Yellow pulled Kong Yu to stop him. He had never seen Jiang Chen’s techniques before, so he didn’t know how terrifying Jiang Chen could be. If these geniuses thought that they have already won because of ganging up on Jiang Chen, they would only end up in a tragedy. The best proof of that was during the time when Nan Bei Chao attacked Nebula Sect.

In this instant, murderous intent soared high up to the sky. Many wanted to interfere in the matter as they wanted to gain some benefits from Jiang Chen as well, especially the people from the Boundless and Black Yellow World. Initially, they didn’t care about this matter but because of greed, they have changed their minds. Only Big Yellow knew how awful their consequences would be for making such mistakes.

Jiang Chen was in the centre of the geniuses. His expression was cold. He darted a glance at those geniuses and said in a cold tone. “If someone wants to retreat, now is the time. If you attack, you will die. I will only say this once.”

“Haha! Jiang Chen, how could you give such a shameless boast? Did you really think that you can deal with all of us with your strength alone? Everyone, now, kill him! Then, we will divide his possessions.”

Desolate Ning laughed happily. Although he sounded arrogant, he wasn't as arrogant as before. In fact, the 'shameless boast' should be referring to himself, in the beginning, he didn't want anyone to interfere in his fight. Now that many had come to assist him, it had no doubt become a sarcasm.

"You people of Saint Origin World really sounded like scholar. I will attack first."

A youth from the Black Yellow World launched an attack. A powerful Combat Weapon had appeared in his hand. He moved in an extremely fast speed, appearing before Jiang Chen in a blink and slashed at him. At the same time, the other experts followed his actions. In this attack, it not only included the leaders of the major powers but also the other disciples of major powers. Most of them were Seventh Grade Minor Saint.

"Die."

Jiang Chen's dragon eyes flashed with a cold light. The Heavenly Saint Sword instantly appeared in his hands. He didn't want to waste any more time. Since this group of people wanted death so much, there was nothing much that he could say.

Xiao

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced an ear-stinging sound and reached that man's head in a twinkle. That man's expression changed. He finally felt Jiang Chen's fearsomeness. He quickly

used his Combat Weapon to defend himself.

Chapter 846 - A Massacre

The face of the genius from Black Yellow World darkened when he felt the boundless and mountain-like killing intent and divinity unleashed from Heavenly Saint Sword. He started to realise that he had made a regrettable decision. No one would ever know how scary Jiang Chen was without a direct confrontation.

Keng

The combat weapon of the genius that received the strike of Heavenly Saint Sword was thrown off his hand. The Heavenly Saint Sword didn't slow down and slashed within seconds. The scary sword intent was condensed into a web of sword that contained the genius. In truth, it wasn't a confinement at all because the genius couldn't even withstand this strike. It moved too fast and left no room for a counter attack or escaping.

“No...”

That genius let out reluctant wails of pain and was slashed into half, dead.

Hua

A commotion was created due to it. Those geniuses who were about to charge forward started to change their facial expression. Those geniuses of Black Yellow World were only Seventh Grade Minor Saints. Although they weren't as powerful as Desolate Ning, it was still unlikely they would be killed instantly.

“He has killed brother Huang. Everyone, attack!”

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen ignored everyone and focused his attention on Desolate Ning who was from afar. Today, everyone who attacked must die, but Desolate Ning must be the first to die. Currently, Jiang Chen’s cover had been blown off. He was afraid that the experts of Dark Generation would be here soon. In order to prevent any accidents, he must finish Desolate Ning quickly and retrieve his finger bone.

Swoosh

The dragon wings flapped. Jiang Chen turned into a red wind and appeared before Desolate Ning in a blink. His Heavenly Saint Sword slashed over after that.

“Not good!”

Desolate Ning exclaimed. He knew that he had totally underestimated Jiang Chen. He didn’t think that Jiang Chen would become this powerful after becoming a human-dragon. Just a strike gave so much pressure to him. Today, Jiang Chen had locked his position, leaving him feeling helpless. Despite the many helpers besides him, he still felt that if Jiang Chen wanted him killed, no one would be able to stop him. It was similar to a guaranteed death.

‘Dammit! How can the bastard be this powerful?’

Desolate Ning cursed but Jiang Chen’s attack was already a few inches away. The only thing he could do now was to defend.

Desolate Ning moved very quickly as well. A long spear appeared in his hand. It was a high grade spear carved with talisman symbols. The tip of the spear was illuminating and releasing murderous aura. It then impaled at Jiang Chen’s direction.

Bang!

Two combat weapons collided with one another. Desolate Ning was sent flying away and his long spear almost slipped from his hands. But before he could react, another slash reached him.

Pu Chi!

This sword strike was faster than before and moved in an artful and unpredictable way, cutting of his palm with a ‘Pu Chi’ sound. That was Desolate Ning’s palm holding the spear. Then Jiang Chen grabbed the long spear as it fell from Desolate Ning’s broken palm.

Bang!

A surge of energy rushed out of Jiang Chen’s body, crushing Desolate Ning’s detached palm, leaving a finger bone that glowed

with gold colour. As for the long spear, Jiang Chen kept it. He finally felt relieve after getting his finger bone but the current occasion wasn't suitable for the refinement of the bone because these geniuses wouldn't give him a chance for that. In that case, he needed to start a massacre.

Argh

Desolate Ning let out a howl that made people's skin crawl after losing his palm and finger bone. The howl consisted full of disappointment. He was a rare genius of Desolate Family who had all the great future awaiting him but it had all turned dark and distant. That was a despair and mental blow that was beyond anyone's imagination.

“Kill, kill, kill him!”

Shouted Desolate Ning with his red eyes.

“Kill? Can you do that?”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly and strode forward, lunging at Desolate Ning once more.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

The people of Desolate Family rushed over, surrounding Desolate Ning. He was an important genius in their family, they would suffer a major loss if he was killed.

“Whoever defends him will die.”

Jiang Chen's tone was cold as ice. He kept his Heavenly Saint Sword and struck with his dragon claw, gripping a Seventh Grade Minor Saint elder like a small chick.

“Argh...”

The elder felt like he was pressed against by a huge mountain. He let out a wail before he exploded.

The Desolate Family was in shock. At the present moment, Jiang Chen was like the clone of god of murder and devil, invincible.

“Huo Yuan, Dan Yuanchong, what are you two waiting for? We will all die if you don't attack.”

Desolate Ning yelled at Huo Yuan and Dan Yuan Chong. Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong clearly weren't as powerful as Jiang Chen. They only regained their senses when they were called by Desolate Ning. Without replying, they lunged at Jiang Chen. At the same time, Narang Ying and Shi Yun attacked along with geniuses of the other two worlds. This time, no one dared to underestimate Jiang Chen. They knew that he had become very powerful after his transformation, he had surpassed Desolate Ning in terms of power. It was only possible to kill him if they stick together, especially the people of the eight families, as they had allied with Desolate Ning to kill Jiang Chen before this. So if Jiang Chen was still alive, he would definitely seek them and kill them. A genius like Jiang Chen

should never be left alive to avoid any future threat.

“Haha! Everyone has stayed... If that’s the case, all of you have to die today. None will be kept alive. Five Elemental Sphere!”

Jiang Chen laughed. His body was full of dense bloody light. At this moment, he seemed like the god of murder that could not be stopped by anyone. With a ‘swoosh,’ the Five Elemental Sphere spread open. It was large enough to confine all of them. The composition of this Five Elemental Sphere was unprecedented. Only people who were trapped inside the sphere could feel it.

“This is a very powerful power sphere. It consists of five elements. I can feel that it is the combination of a few power spheres.”

“How could his power sphere be this powerful? Not good, I can feel the powerful containment force now.”

“Everyone, attack! Destroyed his power sphere! He is finished once his power sphere is destroyed.”

.....

Everyone’s face changed instantly when they felt Jiang Chen’s extraordinary power sphere. Every genius no longer held their attacks. They started to launch their strongest attack.

“It’s not up to you to decide once you are in my Five Elemental

Sphere. Try my Eternal Immortal Wind!”

As soon as Jiang Chen’s voice dropped, countless of powerful gusts of wind rushed out of his body. Every wind was like a cyclone with the shape of a dragon. It let out howls that shivered all of them.

In a few blinks, Eternal Immortal Wind had induced countless of wails. Those weaker geniuses couldn’t stand the blow of the wind and was instantly turned into powder. Eternal Immortal Wind was a special and powerful combat technique. It would rise in grade along with Jiang Chen’s advancement, the same went to the attack power of the wind. Those people who were trapped in the Five Elemental Sphere could never stand the wind. Even a genius like Huo Yuan would be tortured by it horrendously.

“My god, this is...”

Blue Lion was stupefied. Kong Yu, who was standing at one side, widened his eyes. He had a feeling that the scene was like a dream to him. In fact, he wouldn’t be able to dream of this scene even if he was dreaming. Before this, he was worrying for Jiang Chen, but now it seemed Big Yellow was right. This Jiang Chen was indeed a very abnormal being. Despite the fact that he was surrounded by so many geniuses, all his enemies had fallen one after another. Who could believe this without witnessing it?

“This is too cruel and violent. This Jiang Chen is too strong!”

“Why is he this powerful? He also has a great boldness that defies

the heavens. One should know that each of these geniuses have a great backer behind them, a major power. Has he ever thought of the consequences that he would be hunted by all these major powers for the rest of his life? Boundless World and Black Yellow World can be omitted from the concern, but he has offended five out of the eight families. Even if he didn't die in this domain, will he still be alive when he returns to Saint Origin World?"

"This group of geniuses wanted to gain a portion of Jiang Chen's treasure but didn't know that they have hit the wall. Let's see whether Jiang Chen dares to massacre them all. If this group of people dies, the repercussion will be serious."

.....

None of them wasn't astonished. The battle had gone beyond their imagination and expectation. At this time, the people of Bin Family and Gu Family too were amazed. They felt lucky that they didn't ally with the geniuses to fight Jiang Chen. Otherwise, instead of achieving their objective – killing Jiang Chen – they would lose their lives.

Three silhouettes were focusing on the battle from afar. When Nan Bei Chao saw the Eternal Immortal Wind, his face changed instantly.

"Eternal Immortal Wind? How can this bastard know my Eternal Immortal Wind?"

Nan Bei Chao was stupefied. It was an exclusive technique that he

wouldn't simply use, his biggest trump card. He didn't imagine to see the other people using his skill, this is truly shocking.

“Brother Nan Bei, we never thought that this man is this powerful. Should we kill him now?”

A person beside Nan Bei Chao said.

“No need for that. I can see that his Eternal Immortal Wind isn't enhancing his combat strength. Don't forget about our main objective. Besides, do you think this man can continue to live after killing so many people? Those major powers will deal with him even if we don't.”

Nan Bei Chao said. He too was shocked to see his skill being used by Jiang Chen. It was impossible for him to think that Jiang Chen would have such skill.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

The inside Five Elemental Sphere was filled with bloodshed and wails. Jiang Chen's actions were aggressive and quick. There were deaths every place he went.

Chapter 847 - Killing God

The scene was massive. All of the geniuses were falling. This was undeniably a tragedy. Many people had died because of the Eternal Immortal Wind. Although some geniuses were still alive, they were dazed. Their bodies were full of injuries, from top to bottom. Currently, besides the fear they had, they also had regrets for their actions. If it wasn't because of greed, they wouldn't attack Jiang Chen. Following that, if they didn't attack Jiang Chen, they wouldn't fall into such a predicament.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen took a step forward and came before the confused Desolate Ning. As for the other members of Desolate Family, they were all dead because of Eternal Immortal Wind. Jiang Chen caught Desolate Ning on his neck and slammed him against his leg.

Pa!

Jiang Chen stepped on his face continuously.

“Desolate Ning, you are now under my leg, making you look worse than a dog. So, tell me, who's the puny one here?”

Jiang Chen's sneer pierced Desolate Ning's soul like a knife. It was a great humiliation. Since he was young, he had never been humiliated before. He was a genius of Desolate Family who had a high and mighty status. It was him who said that Jiang Chen was a puny human, but now, he was lying under Jiang Chen's legs,

totally defenceless against any humiliation.

“Jiang Chen, if you kill me, Desolate Family will rip you to pieces.”

Desolate Ning threatened.

“You won’t be able to see whether I will die or not because you are going to die now.”

Jiang Chen hated a useless threat like this. He stepped with his leg, crushing Desolate Ning’s skull. A young genius of Desolate Family who possessed a Saint Bone had fallen. From now on, the conflict between Jiang Chen and Desolate Family had become irreparable.

Hiss

Desolate Ning was trampled to death, making everyone gasped in a breath of cold air. This Jiang Chen was very audacious. There was nothing that he didn’t dare do. He wouldn’t hesitate to kill the genius Desolate Ning once he had decided to. This decisive personality had the charisma that made many of them admire him.

The death of Desolate Ning had severely lowered the morale of those geniuses who were inside Five Elemental Sphere. This guy was a mad man. It seemed their fate was going to be definite.

“Everyone, attack! Kill him!”

People of the Boundless World shouted. They were unwilling to see their comrades die as they charged towards Jiang Chen simultaneously.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and a powerful Water Dragon Seal was struck out. Five geniuses were frozen into icy statues, before turning into a bulk of ice frozen to death.

It was too cruel and terrifying. Regardless of who the opponent was, Jiang Chen would have no problem killing them straight away, not to mention that he had innumerable techniques. Many people started to realise that they had underestimated Jiang Chen. Unfortunately, it was too late for them to have such a realisation.

Jiang Chen was like a god of murder. He came before Huo Yuan and said plainly, “You all desire to have my flames. I will fulfil this wish now: you will die under my flames.”

“Jiang...Jiang Chen, killing me won’t give you a slightest benefit. You have offended Desolate Family. Do you want to offend Huo Family as well? If that’s the case, you can never find a place to stay across the Divine Continent. You have to reconsider your decision. As long as you don’t kill me, I can guarantee that Huo Family will never harm you.”

Huo Yuan was so scared that his tone was shivering. Jiang Chen was too strong, like a shapeless huge mountain that gave them

boundless pressure.

“It’s too late.”

Jiang Chen spat four words and struck his Fire Dragon Seal, surrounding Hou Yan completely. Not only the fire dragon had the powerful flames, but also a very powerful attack power. Huo Yuan wouldn’t be able to withstand it. He was incinerated as he wailed.

Jiang Chen was ruthless because he had gained a great understanding about this world in his two lives. This was a world in which the big fish eat up the small fishes. He would never show compassion to his opponents. If he was the one who was being contained, he would face the same consequence. So, why should he let them go? He never liked to give a chance for his enemy to stay alive.

Presently, there were only a few remaining in the Five Elemental Spheres. Dan Yuanchong, Narang Ying and Shi Yun were still breathing, but they felt worse than being injured. They knew very clearly that Jiang Chen would never let them go. What happened to Desolate Ning and Huo Yuan would happen to them as well.

There were still three geniuses of Boundless World and Black Yellow World. Their bodies were shuddering badly. They regretted joining the battle endlessly because they were going to pay it with a high price – their lives.

Hong *Hong*

At this time, powerful Qis of different people flew towards the desolate area from Dark Surge City. The Qi belonged to a group of powerful experts, the true experts. There were roughly thirteen of them. There were three Ninth Grade Minor Saints while the rest were all Eighth Grade Minor Saints. They were the people of Dark Generation. They quickly rushed to the location once they heard the news of the ‘dragonman’.

When they saw the ruined scene, their faces greatly changed. It seemed there had been intense battles here not long ago, but it didn’t concern the Dark Generation because the battles only involved the people of the three worlds. It was very likely that the battles were caused by the conflicts among themselves, but not with Dark Generation.

However, it was the first time in Void Triangular Domain that such an intense battle had occurred. Nothing as large as this had happened in the domain every time it was open for trading. The visitors were the major powers of the three worlds. Most of them wouldn’t offend the people of Dark Generation because they were here to trade for benefits. But, this year, a dragonman appeared and had made the entire domain unpeaceful and started a large-scale battle.

“The experts of Dark Generation have come. They are here for Jiang Chen.”

“That’s right. I have heard about the dragonman’s doings before this. He had destroyed a city of Dark Generation and killed many of the princes of rich families. It’s possible that Dark Generation now viewed him as a public enemy. The presence of so many experts

tells us that they aren't going to let Jiang Chen slip away from this again."

"It is really becoming livelier. The news of these intense battles will spread to King City very soon. At that time, the major powers of the three worlds won't be able to stay calm. How can they possibly ignore Jiang Chen killing so many of their geniuses?"

.....

The experts of Dark Generation had come.

They shifted their gaze to Jiang Chen. One of the elders yelled, "Jiang Chen, I didn't think that you are the dragonman. Instead of hiding yourself, you revealed yourself and begin a massacre here. You must not know what the difference is between life and death."

The man who spoke was a Great Elder of a prefecture. He had met Jiang Chen on the street yesterday but he hadn't thought that that youth in white was the dragonman.

"Save us!"

When the geniuses saw the experts of Dark Generation, they shouted for help.

Pa

As the genius of Boundless World's voice dropped, he was slapped by Jiang Chen to death. They obviously had thought too much when they thought that they had found a chance to stay alive. Not even their comrades could save them now, let alone the people of Dark Generation.

Domineering, ruthless, these two manners were clearly portrayed from Jiang Chen's actions. It was truly frightening.

“Attack! Taken him down!”

A middle-aged man beside Great Elder shouted. He was the City Lord of Dark Surge City and a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. If he could capture the dragonman today, Dark King would certainly reward him greatly for such a huge contribution.

But, as the experts of the prefecture were about to strike, Jiang Chen summoned a small human in his hand. It was the Third Prince who didn't look good and was stained with blood but was alive, albeit barely.

“Third Prince!”

The City Lord and Great Elder exclaimed at the same time. They immediately connected the dots of the Third Prince's disappearance.

“Save me City Lord!”

The Third Prince yelled as he saw the City Lord.

“Jiang Chen, release Third Prince now. Don’t make a serious mistake.”

The City Lord shouted.

“People of Dark Generation, listen to me. If you dare to move a bit, I will immediately kill your Third Prince. I don’t mind if we become enemies as I have a lot of them now.”

Jiang Chen replied loudly. Finally, he had found the chance to use the contained Third Prince. Status was a very important factor in Dark Generation. The imperial kinsmen were all high and mighty. Although the Third Prince was not far away from his grip, the City Lord would stay put. He could never bear the responsibilities of the Third Prince’s injuries.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen only lacked the time to refine the finger bone. After the refinement, he would reach Fifth Grade Minor Saint and he wouldn’t stand here to converse with the people of Dark Generation anymore. He would straightaway massacre all of them. After reaching Fifth Grade Minor Saint, he was capable enough to finish off any Ninth Grade Minor Saint in his human-dragon form, unless, of course, he was dealing with a Ninth Grade Minor Saint genius from the eight great families. As for Dark Generation, he could definitely erase them off this domain.

However, he didn’t have the time to refine the finger bone. He

could only use the Third Prince to hold his opponents first.

“City Lord, what now?”

Great Elder looked over at the City Lord.

“Don’t make a move first. Third Prince is in his hands. The news must have reached King City by now. I believe that Dark King will appear very quickly as Third Prince is his adored child. If anything happens to Third Prince, Dark King will put the blame on us. We can’t afford to bear that responsibility.”

The City Lord said, feeling reluctant to move.

“Jiang Chen, release Third Prince. We may show some quarters to you if you do that.”

Great Elder shouted at Jiang Chen.

“Cut down the crap. If you want Third Prince back so badly, I will let you try.”

Jiang Chen wouldn’t be affected by the offer. Currently, he was contemplating a way to deal with the current scenario. There must be a lot of major powers coming here. At that time, he would become the common target of all. But the scene would be very chaotically messy as well, which might provide an opportunity for his escape.

Hong *Hong* *Hong*

A very loud bang was heard from the sky. As Jiang Chen's voice dropped as he sensed the powerful Qi of experts coming from afar.

Chapter 848 - Disdaining the Group of Experts

Everyone turned their attention to the direction where the Qi was coming. It formed into a large bulk like a huge cloud. Despite the far distance, people could feel the pressure affecting their souls. It was actually coming from King City.

Just by judging by the Qi, no one could tell how many experts were coming but, without a doubt, each of them was the expert of the experts. The trading event in King City was only three days away. So, at this time, all the major powers of Saint Origin World, Boundless World and Black Yellow World would gather and stay in King City while their geniuses would participate in the auction event in Dark Surge City. However, every one of them was surprised to hear the latest news. As such, they quickly rushed to the source of it.

“Look, many major powers have come. I never thought that today’s event will be this lively. And, Jiang Chen has killed so many geniuses of different major powers. He is truly insane for doing this. Those major powers will never let him go.”

“There are also some imperial kinsmen here. Jiang Chen isn’t going to escape this even if he had the fastest wings.”

“Even if he dies, his name will be spread across all regions. Whatever he did today has never happened before in the history of Void Triangular Domain.”

.....

Everybody was shaken. They all thought that it was just going to be a lively scene. No one would have thought that it would turn into a big incident. Too many of them had died under Jiang Chen's hands. The entire group of Desolate Family who came to Dark Surge City was wiped out. A scene like this was pretty hard to imagine. Now, even if Jiang Chen had three heads and six arms, he wouldn't be able to escape his death today.

“Jiang Chen, I suggest you to release me now. The experts of Narang Family have come. Releasing me may provide you some chances to live.”

Narang Ying could feel a powerful surge of Qi coming over. Narang Family must be one of them. He didn't believe that Jiang Chen wasn't afraid of them.

“Whether I will live or not, it's not your concern. Due to your excessive talking, I will take away your life.”

Jiang Chen gripped with his hand and crushed him to death.

At this time, a loud explosion was heard from the void. Those experts from King City had finally arrived. When they saw the miserable scene, their facial expressions' turned ugly before they got infuriated.

“Bastard! You dare to kill all of the people of Desolate Family?

This is detestable. Brat! I don't care where you will go after you die, but I am certain that you will die!"

"My god, the genius of Huo Family is killed as well. Huo Yuan is dead. I will rip you to pieces...rip you to pieces..."

"Ying Er... son of a b*tch! Narang Family will kill you for sure."

.....

Every expert was boiling with rage, whether it was the expert of Saint Origin World or the other two worlds. Their rage was rushing up to the sky. As the leader of their groups in this trip to Void Triangular Domain, they bore the responsibility to take care of their respective geniuses. Today, which was still before the major trading event, their geniuses had been killed. How could they possibly accept this? They wouldn't be able to provide a good explanation for the unacceptable loss.

"Save me elder!"

Shi Yun was currently controlled by Jiang Chen. He hadn't died yet, but was extremely scared. He had never encountered someone as ruthless as Jiang Chen who killed people without blinking, and at the same time, ignoring the existence of the major powers behind them. Jiang Chen was totally insane.

"Bastard! Release Shi Yun."

The leader of the group of Shi Family was their great elder. He was a plump old man who was a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. Shi Family brought the same amount of Ninth Grade Minor Saints as the other major powers. They had five Ninth Grade Minor Saints in their group.

“Release him? It’s easy to say it in words. This man wanted to kill me just now. If I were the one who falls into his hands, I’m afraid he wouldn’t spare my life. So, why should I release him? I always do things with reasons. For those who wanted me dead, I will return the favor to them.”

Jiang Chen spoke and killed Shi Yun instantly in front of the experts of Shi Family. It was mad, it was audacious. It seemed that it was only Jiang Chen under the heavens who would dare to do such a thing.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen killed the remaining three geniuses from Boundless World and Black Yellow World without the slightest hesitation. Even though the backers of these geniuses were very powerful, they wouldn’t be able to take their revenge. After the major trading event, Jiang Chen was going to destroy all the linking portals to the domain. From that point onwards, there wouldn’t be a major trading event anymore that would occurred once every three years.

“Outrageous!”

“Beast!”

.....

The experts of the major powers raged. These weren't just killings but a direct challenge to all of them. Despite their presence, Jiang Chen still dared to kill their genius member. It was like slapping their faces directly, which was unacceptable.

“My god, this is too violent. How can there be such crazy human under the heavens? Do you all see that? His expression did not change even he is facing so many experts. He has been composed since the start. I really admire him because of this.”

“By counting the number of Ninth Grade Minor Saint alone, there are a hundred of them. Every one of them is from a major power with huge army. But, this Jiang Chen killed their geniuses in front of them. He is totally not putting them in his eyes. I have no idea how he did that.”

.....

None of them wasn't in shock. At this moment, no one dared to underestimate and sneer at Jiang Chen. Their gazes were now full of admiration because they could imagine that if they were Jiang Chen, they wouldn't dare do such world-shaking actions even if they were given a hundred guts.

Hong *Hong*

Countless of powerful murderous intent erupted. Those experts

of major powers could no longer handle the challenge. They wanted to besiege Jiang Chen.

“Everyone, stop!”

At this time, a voice was heard. It was the voice of Dark King, the king of Dark Generation. Those experts of major powers slowly lowered their Qi when they saw that it was Dark King, but their murderous aura wasn't reducing. It's because they needed to humor Dark King no matter what. Plus, Third Prince was in Jiang Chen's custody now, so they didn't believe that Dark King would help Jiang Chen. Since Jiang Chen was going to die today and many experts had surrounded him and locked his position, he wouldn't be able to escape even if he could resist their attacks.

Dark King made a step forth. His eyes were like icy blade in darkness, gazing at Jiang Chen and the shivering the Third Prince in Jiang Chen's hand, and said, “You're called Jiang Chen? Very well. Dark Generation has never face such losses before all along. You have destroyed one of our cities, killed so many of our princes, but I decided not to seek for compensation for all these. As long as you release my son, Dark Generation will never harm you and never interfere with the battle among you human race.”

Of course Dark King couldn't let Jiang Chen go freely but the hostage was still in his possession. Dark King was concerned about his son's life. And, he had already seen through the scenario. It wouldn't require his effort to have his revenge. These experts of major powers were going to crush Jiang Chen into powder. So, Dark Generation could choose to exclude them from the conflict. They would let the human race to do the job as a way to save some

face for the major powers.

“I’m sorry to tell you that Third Prince is my only hostage. He can’t be released.”

Jiang Chen replied and immediately kept Third Prince into his spatial ring.

“Jiang Chen, you should reconsider what you are doing now. You have already offended so many major powers. Do you really want to make the entire Dark Generation your enemy?”

Dark King raged.

“Since I have offended so many of them, it doesn’t matter to include you as one in the list. But it isn’t an easy thing for you all to kill me today.”

Jiang Chen was calm. There was no sign of nervousness on his expression. With his dragon wings, it wasn’t easy for a Ninth Grade Minor Saint to kill him. Given his ability, it wouldn’t be a problem for him to flee if he couldn’t fight them. Although it was a gamble, he would need to bet that he could refine the finger bone and advance to Fifth Grade Minor Saint and kill all of them. But he didn’t intend to do that now. Firstly, it was because the refinement would take a certain period of time. Secondly, it wasn’t the time yet as the major trading event hadn’t started. He was sure that the treasures that were going to be auctioned on that day would be much more than the auction in Dark Surge City. Due to his thirst for greater treasures, he couldn’t miss out this opportunity. So, he

needed not to make the bet. He just needed to see how Big Yellow and Demon Race interfere in this incident.

In the current situation, only one major power was standing on his side and that meant hope. Dark King must be hoping that the major powers wouldn't fight. Putting aside the effects it would affect the auction day, the explosion of attacks from so many Ninth Grade Minor Saints were unimaginable. To Void Triangular Domain, those attacks were going to be a destructive blow.

“Dark King, do you see that? This brat is insane. You don't have to talk to him anymore. Kill him straight away!”

The Great Elder of Desolate Family said. The other experts started to fluctuate their Qi once more. They intended to take Jiang Chen down now as it was a necessary action. Besides that, Jiang Chen's body was full of treasure. He had stolen the things in the vaults of the three cities and an ore mine.

“Humph! Desolate Nanyang, I, Gu Mu is the first who disagree with you if you want to kill Jiang Chen.”

At this critical moment, a voice sounded. Everyone turned and saw an elder in grey robe standing up and came before Jiang Chen. This elder was very powerful. Judging just by his Qi, he wasn't weaker than the Great Elder of Desolate Family. Furthermore, his body was fluctuating with red flares. His eyes were full of anger. Clearly, this elder didn't have very good temper.

Chapter 849 - Everything Is Under Control

Gu Mu came before Jiang Chen and held his fists. “Does Prince still remember me?”

Jiang Chen recognized Gu Mu the moment he stood out. This was the elder who went personally to Dan Yuan City to bring Wu Ningzhu back to the Gu Family. He still remembered that Gu Mu was a peak Seventh Grade Minor Saint at that time due to his cultivation being inhibited by the virulent fire. However, after Jiang Chen’s guidance, he immediately advanced to Eighth Grade Minor Saint. What surprised Jiang Chen was that Gu Mu had already reached Ninth Grade Minor Saint not long ago. Logically speaking, it made sense. It was because Gu Mu had fortified his foundation very much when he was stuck at the seventh grade, thus allowing him such a rapid advancement. The more surprising thing was Gu Mu took the initiative to stand out for Jiang Chen.

This was absolutely beyond Jiang Chen’s expectation. Before this, he assumed that Big Yellow would be the one who stood out. It was without a doubt, a good thing for Jiang Chen.

“Of course. Congratulations on your advancement to Ninth Grade Minor Saint.”

Jiang Chen greeted back with his fists.

“It was all because of Prince’s guidance. Otherwise, I won’t have today’s achievement. Today, I, Gu Mu is here for Prince. Anyone who has an intention to attack you would have to go through me

first.”

Gu Mu’s voice wasn’t low. He had no intention of hiding his identity. He had a mighty demeanour. He was a man who would never forget his benefactor’s kindness. He understood that if it wasn’t for Jiang Chen’s guidance, he would not be as strong as he is today, let alone being the leader of Gu Family in this trip. Also, his status had been promoted to a higher rank in the Gu Family. This was also because of Jiang Chen’s guidance back then. In the future, it was very likely that he wouldn’t be able to advance to the Great Saint realm.

The more important thing was, Gu Mu had locked on Jiang Chen’s potential. He had never seen a genius who could reach such heaven defying extent. Befriending this man would definitely bring benefits to the Gu Family. He could feel something extraordinary from Jiang Chen.

The fact that Gu Mu suddenly stood out to help Jiang Chen had also petrified everyone, including the other members of the Gu Family. Seconds later, a few other Ninth Grade Minor Saints stood out behind Gu Mu as well. As Gu Mu was the leader of their group, they would naturally support his decision unconditionally. Their family was one of the eight great families in Saint Origin World. They had never feared anyone and wouldn’t fear anyone. Those geniuses who were present at the auction in Dark Surge City were already stunned back then, they felt lucky that they didn’t join the Huo and Dan Family in dealing with Jiang Chen.

The experts of the Gu Family understood that the main factor in Gu Mu’s rapid advancement was this young man’s guidance. Gu

Mu didn't hide this fact from them. Now, Gu Mu wanted to repay Jiang Chen's kindness, so the other members naturally wouldn't stop him.

“Gu Mu, do you know what you are doing? You want to help this little monster? Try to look around and see how many people want him dead now. I'm afraid that the Gu Family alone won't be able to protect him.”

Desolate Nanyang said loudly. Many people thought that it was a stupid idea for the Gu Family stand up for Jiang Chen at this time.

“Desolate Nanyang. Cleanse your mouth a little. I, Gu Mu, always mean what I say. Today, Gu Family is going to protect Jiang Chen. A large battle would be inevitable if anyone of you chooses to strike.”

Gu Mu's tone was powerful. It was enough to portray the demeanour of a big family.

Jiang Chen looked at Gu Mu and nodded silently. A representative like him would never harm the reputation of the Gu Family wherever he went. Now, it seemed like he really made a good decision to guide Gu Mu at that time. Gu Family's initiative to protect him not only provided a great help to his current situation, but had also given him the chance to establish a relationship with the Gu Family, which would save a lot of troubles if he went to find Wu Ningzhu one day.

“You want to have war, then let's have war. Since your Family

wants to interrupt our business. I would like to see whether the few of you could stop us.”

The elder of the Huo Family was infuriated. The other major powers’ emotions were also stirred up, it seemed like they were going to attack any time. Gu Family’s emergence didn’t reduce the slightest bit of their rage and murderous intent.

“Haha! Fight them! It would be Master Dog’s favourite. The Demon Race would also spare no effort to protect Jiang Chen. Let’s have a life-and-death battle today.”

Big Yellow laughed and pleasantly walked into Jiang Chen’s side. He was clear in his words and it represented the will of the Demon Race as well.

“Where did this dog come from? You want to represent the Demon Race with your sole existence? Are you qualified to do that?”

Desolate Nanyang sneered.

“Who said that he can’t represent the Demon Race?”

At this time, a yell was heard. A stalwart elder walked out. He had a blonde hair while his face was full of golden beard. Demon Qi encompassed his entire body, making him look like an ancient lion. As soon as he stood out, the other demons of the Demon Race followed suit and appeared in front of Jiang Chen.

“Golden Fur Lion King, does your Demon Race really want to interfere in this business?”

The elder of the Huo Family yelled.

Golden Fur Lion King smiled bitterly. Initially, he really didn't want to get involved in this business but Big Yellow had already stood out, they had no other choice. They had already known the relationship of Big Yellow and Jiang Chen. Before they came here, Peacock King had personally told them that they had to ensure Big Yellow's safety in Void Triangular Domain. Golden Fur Lion King was connected to the Patriarch, so he would never neglect the task given by Peacock King.

The members of the Demon Race knew why Big Yellow was brought back from afar. It was likely that the Demon Race's future would fully depend on this dog. Also, Jiang Chen had an extraordinary bearing. A genius like this was most welcomed in the Demon Race. They wouldn't feel reluctant to befriend such a human.

Since Big Yellow had already stood out, the other members of the Demon Race should do the same.

“Golden Fur Lion King, you have made a very good choice. When we return, I would immediately find old Peacock and say a few good words for you, so that you can advance to the Great Saint realm soon.

Big Yellow said to Golden Fur Lion King. He was stunned for a moment before feeling delighted. There were too many Ninth Grade Minor Saints in the Demon Race. As Peacock King had a paramount status in the Demon Race, it was extremely difficult for any of them to meet him normally, but this dog was the favourite disciple of Peacock King. If Golden Fur Lion King would be able to gain something from Peacock King, it would certainly help him tremendously.

The sudden interference of the Demon Race gave the other clans of Saint Origin World a headache. The strongest among the eight was the Desolate Family but their reputation didn't give them the confidence to offend the Demon Race. The Demon Race was a group of beings that do things unreasonably. If they engaged them in battle, there would be countless of troubles in the future. Judging from how the Golden Fur Lion King treated Big Yellow, it indicated that Big Yellow had an exceptional status in the Demon Race. Big Yellow must be close to Peacock King because he was the only one who could call Peacock King 'old Peacock' across the entire Saint Origin World. Thinking about Peacock King, it petrified them.

However, they would never let this matter slip away, Jiang Chen had killed a lot of their geniuses. If they backed away because of the involvement of the Demon Race and the Gu Family, it would certainly put the reputation of their respective families to shame.

“Since the Demon Race and the Gu Family really wants to interfere in this matter, we have nothing else to say. This brat must die today! No one can stop us from doing that! Let's just fight to decide then.”

Desolate Nanyang's murderous intent soared to the sky.

“Kill! Make the ground and heaven shake! Today, with so many experts present here, I want to see how the Demon Race and the Gu Family would defend this brat.”

“That brat must be killed!”

“Humph! Just two groups of people, but want to stop us? This must be a joke. Our Huang Pu Family could care less about the major powers of Saint Origin World.”

.....

The atmosphere was becoming restless. The battle could start at any time. With so many experts fighting together, the result would be unimaginable.

“Let's fight! I haven't been in a fight for a long time. Now, my hands are itching for a fight. The Demon Race would not fear you even if you have a greater number of people.”

A Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint from the Demon Race's Qi fluctuated. This was the natural disposition of the Demon Race. They wouldn't fear anything. Not even a very strong expert could make them back away.

At this time, Jiang Chen smirked as he gazed at the Dark King. He must be the one who was most worried about an outbreak of a

war. Jiang Chen believed that Dark King could definitely differentiate the weight of the matter. If so many major powers started a war here, the Dark Generation would be the one to suffer the most.

“Cut your crap! Let’s battle!”

A Ninth Grade Minor Saint from the Desolate Family drew out his combat weapon with a clatter, readying for the battle.

“Hold on!”

As Jiang Chen expected, Dark King stopped them. As the king of the Dark Generation, he had to take the Dark Generation into consideration. If the war really began, not only would the Dark Generation suffer but the major trading event a few days later would also be affected greatly. Lastly, the Third Prince was still in Jiang Chen’s hands.

“Everyone, listen to what I have to say first. I think we should temporarily put this incident aside for today.”

Dark King said.

“Dark King, what did you just say? This bastard has caused so much damage to the Dark Generation yet you still chose to stand on his side? Is your brain badly fried? Also, this is a matter between us, humans, it isn’t related to you at all.”

Desolate Nanyang looked over at Dark King.

“Everyone, I have a stronger desire than any of you to kill his man, but don’t forget about your main intention of coming here – the major trading event. If a war really starts before the trading event, I’m afraid that the result will be unimaginable. I believe that the end result wouldn’t be something that everyone would wish for. In my opinion, we could just get rid of this brat after the event. With so many experts here, he won’t be able to flee even if he is given eight pair of wings!”

Dark King shouted. It was important that today’s war would be prevented. Void Triangular Domain had limited space and had never held any large scale battle. An outbreak of a war would bring unimaginable consequences. It would be very likely that this world would turn chaotic after that.

“Don’t worry. I won’t run. I want to join your auction as well.”

Jiang Chen smiled bitterly. This was all within his calculation. The Demon Race and the Gu Family had already stood up for him; so, the Dark King wouldn’t want to see so many of them fighting today. Dark King was the only one who could control the situation today. To the other experts, they agreed because Jiang Chen would still die sooner or later, it didn’t really matter if he was given a few more days to live. Jiang Chen would have nowhere to run with so many of them keeping an eye on him. As a matter of fact, this was what Jiang Chen wanted. A few days of time were more than enough for him.

Chapter 850 - Entering King City

Dark King's words had put all the experts of major powers in contemplation. The current situation was clear. If it wasn't for the interference of Gu Family and Demon Race, any one of them could instantly kill Jiang Chen. With these two families helping him, especially the Demon Race and given the fact that they were all violent beings, casualties would be unavoidable if a war broke out despite their huge number of experts. In which case, it would turn into bloodshed. Besides, it wasn't easy to kill a Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

Because of that, the consequences were hard to imagine or predict. It was very likely that even the major trading would be affected. As a matter of fact, their main purpose of coming here was for the major auction event to exchange for mass amount of True Meta Stones.

Dark King was right. This brat wouldn't be able to escape whether he was in his human-dragon or human form. From now on, all the major powers would be constantly keeping an eye on him. Besides, Void Triangular Domain had a very limited area and was patrolled by so many people of Dark Generation, where could he flee? In which case, it didn't concern them to give Jiang Chen a few more days to live. After the trading event, the major powers would gain huge benefits, and thus reaching their main objective in the trip to Void Triangular Domain. Afterwards, they could get rid of Jiang Chen.

"Alright. We will follow Dark King then. This brat's life is worthless. We can't let this battle destroy the auction trading event. His death will be right after the auction. If Gu Family and

Demon Race stop us again at that time, they better prepare their life to be delivered in the battle.”

Desolate Nanyang kept his Qi and said coldly while staring at Jiang Chen.

“Fine. We will let this little being live for a few more days. Gu Mu, Golden Fur Lion King, take this few days to reconsider your decision. If you all insist to stand on that brat’s side and go against us, you will create the consequences which you all can’t bear.”

“That’s right, if all your corpses are buried here, it will be a great loss to Demon Race and Gu Family.”

The leader of Huo Family and Shi Family said.

At this time, Narang Family and Dan Family kept their Qi as well, including the people of Boundless World and Black Yellow World. They weren’t doing this because they wanted to pay their respect to Dark King. It was because Dark King’s words were reasonable and makes sense. If the war was started, it would be in no one’s favour. Killing one person—Jiang Chen—but ending the major trading day? Furthermore, Dark King wanted to kill Jiang Chen so badly. After knowing Jiang Chen’s real identity and that the Third Prince was in his custody, Dark King would certainly secretly send someone to stalk Jiang Chen’s movements, not allowing him to escape. In this case, Jiang Chen would become the tortoise in the jar and his day of death was on the day of the major auction.

Nevertheless, they would find today’s decision a very bad

mistake a few days later. It would make them regret or they wouldn't even have the chance to regret. A few days later, Jiang Chen's growth would become the eye opener to every one of them.

Seeing the current situation, Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King kept their Qi. They made the sensible reaction—keep silent. At any rate, a war wouldn't bring any good to any major powers or Dark Generation. Judging by their manpower and overall strength, they wouldn't be able to gain the upper hand against the large group of opponents.

“Everyone, please return to King City to prepare for the auction event three days later.”

Dark King held his fists at the experts and flew towards King City. The others followed after him and disappeared. They wouldn't worry about Jiang Chen's escape because there were people of Dark Generation everywhere. There was in fact nowhere else he could hide in the domain. His movements could be tracked by Dark King at any time.

Everyone could see it very clearly, including Dark King, the only thing Jiang Chen could do right now was to stick with Demon Race and Gu Family. He would follow these two families wherever they went because his life would be in danger once he left the groups. As Gu Family and Demon Race would join the major auction, he would follow them back to King City. The other experts wouldn't need to worry about Jiang Chen's possible escape after he reached King City.

An outbreak of war was prevented. Jiang Chen had offended

many major powers after killing so many geniuses but he was unharmed. A situation like this really made the bystanders sigh but they knew this was just a temporary situation. After the major trading event was over, not just the other major powers, Dark King too would hunt Jiang Chen down. At that time, Jiang Chen would certainly be dead. Many of them had similar thoughts, including Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King. None of them would expect Jiang Chen to advance one grade within these three days and become invincible.

Jiang Chen kept his human-dragon form, turning into his human form. He greeted Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King and said, “Elder Gu Mu, Golden Fur Lion King, I have to thank you two for standing up for me. Jiang Chen is very grateful for it. I am always a man who will remember people’s kindness. I will repay kindness to the one who has given me a hundred times bigger or better. This is 100 million True Meta Stone here, each of your family will take 50 million.”

Jiang Chen said. He took out two spatial rings and sent it to Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King’s front. Those True Meta Stones were the ones he stole from the vaults’ of two cities. Currently, he had 200 million of True Meta Stones in his possession, so he decided to give half of them to these two families.

“What?!”

Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King’s faces changed dramatically. Not only them, the other people of Gu Family and Demon Race change their facial expression as well. Each pair of eyes had fixed on these two spatial rings with fiery excitement. It was 50 million,

50 million of True Meta Stones! How great this fortune really was? One should know that a True Meta Stone is equivalent to a Saint Rank Restoration Pill.

Jiang Chen's precious gift had made the other members in these two families convinced to help Jiang Chen. Their impression of Jiang Chen changed instantly. They now thought that he was a generous man and it was good to make friend with him.

“Prince Jiang Chen, how can I take such precious items?”

Gu Mu said.

“Elder Gu Mu, I, Jiang Chen is a forthright man. I will definitely build a relationship with Demon Race in the future whether you and I like it or not. This items which I present to you isn't a thing at all.”

Jiang Chen said.

After hearing Jiang Chen's word, Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King stopped the friendly arguing anymore and quickly kept their special rings. If Jiang Chen was blunt and direct, they should be like him as well or else it would be awkward.

“I like Brother Jiang's attitude. Follow me back to Demon Race, we will help you kill those group of bastards three days later. I am the first who disagrees with their actions against you.”

Golden Fur Lion King patted his chest in assurance.

“That’s right, I, Gu Mu have today’s result all because of your guidance. If someone wants to kill Prince, that person will have to step across my corpse first.”

Gu Mu’s expression was sincere and clear. He wanted to give his sincere help to Jiang Chen.

“Haha! Thank you. But after three days, it will no longer be that easy to deal with me. At that time, I can handle all of them alone. You all have aided me a lot today.”

Jiang Chen laughed. His objective had been this. Everything was under his control and anticipation. The matter that followed wouldn’t require Demon Race and Gu Family’s involvement.

Gu Mu and Golden Fur Lion King thought that Jiang Chen was lying to them but judging by his very confident look, they were convinced. If they wanted to help Jiang Chen, they must help him with sincerity. After the auction was over and when the experts were going to deal with Jiang Chen, they might not participate but they would be alert of the scenario.

As a matter of fact, they weren’t needed in the battle as Jiang Chen’s sole strength could handle everything.

“What’s Prince’s next plan?”

Gu Mu asked.

“I’ll follow you all back to King City to participate in the major auction.”

Jiang Chen said evenly.

“Alright. I am impressed by Brother Jiang’s exceptional courage.”

Golden Fur Lion King praised Jiang Chen. He started to grow very fond of Jiang Chen as he was a young man who did not fear the heaven and earth or wouldn’t be defeated by anything in the world. Jiang Chen intended to go to King City with them knowing there were plenty of people there that wanted him killed. This audacity alone made people raise a thumbs up for him. In fact, Jiang Chen’s audacity had been fully portrayed previously.

After that, Jiang Chen flew towards King City along with Gu Family and Demon Race.

The King City had hundreds of miles in radius. It was a huge city. Jiang Chen could feel the grandeur and luxury of the atmosphere of the city from afar. Gu Family and Demon Race were considered very powerful major powers. They had their own stronghold in the city. Jiang Chen walked into the stronghold of Demon Race ,without any disguises, he wanted everyone to know that he wasn’t trying to flee.

After returning to Demon Race's stronghold, Jing Chen and Big Yellow had stayed in separate accommodation. Jiang Chen had given the orders he needed secluded period within these three days. No one should disturb him within these three days.

After entering the compound, Yan Chenyu, Dan King and Tyrant, who were sitting in the courtyard, let out a sigh of relief when they saw Jiang Chen returning unharmed. They had heard about the incidents that happened outside Dark Surge City. That kind of scene would give anyone a sense of unlimited fear. It must be a miracle that Jiang Chen returned alive.

“Little Chen.. you have created a world-shaking matter again...”

Tyrant stammered. To him, it seemed only Jiang Chen could create such incidents.

“Chen Er, although you are safe for the time being, those major powers will never let you go after the major auction, so how are you going to tackle this problem?”

Dan King asked worriedly.

Chapter 851 - Fifth Grade Minor saint

“There is no need to worry, father. I was able to gain great benefits this time. I will start my seclusion now. Before the major trading event, I will be able to break through Fifth Grade Minor Saint. And then, when I am in my human-dragon form, no one will be able to stand against me.”

Jiang Chen’s face was beaming with confidence from his core. He was very clear about the current situation. Once he had done refining the finger bone, he would have no problem hitting the Fifth Grade Minor Saint mark. Then, his power would be invincible across the Void Triangular Domain.

“I also want to go seclusion to refine the relic. It will provide great help with my advancement. My cultivation grade will advance by folds and bounds after the full refinement of the relic.”

The Tyrant said. He couldn’t wait to start refining the relic since he obtained the relic, but he couldn’t stay calm as he was worried for Jiang Chen’s safety. Now that Jiang Chen had returned safely, he could go into a seclusion state to refine the relic to reach another level improvement and advancement.

“Big Yellow, when I am in seclusion, you have to help me to complete an arduous task.”

Jiang Chen looked over at Big Yellow.

Big Yellow’s ears stood right up when he heard the word

‘arduous’ and his face was full of excitement.

“Say it, what’s the task? Master dog will complete it.”

Big Yellow said.

“Secretly leave King City and go to find the locations of all the ore mines. You must locate all of them. If I am not mistaken, there is going to be a war when the trading event is over. Once we have all the locations of the ore mines, we can extract them easily. This mission only can be done by you.”

Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow. Once the war had begun, many unexpected and unpredictable incidents would happen. As Jiang Chen wanted to minimize the risk of failure of his plan, he needed Big Yellow to locate the ore mines before the day of the clash. It was Jiang Chen final objective. The 100 million that he presented to Gu Family and Demon race was to build rapport with the two families. Comparing this figure to Jiang Chen’s estimated fortune in his plan, it was nothing significant.

“Don’t worry, I will guarantee the completion of the task. As long as I, Big Yellow want to find it, it will not be able to leave my nose. By the way, why not let Master dog extract the ore mines directly? I can keep them for you.”

Big Yellow said happily.

“No, you can’t. The auction hasn’t begun yet and we can’t afford

to alert any of them now. Plus, there are high grade experts manning every ore mine. The larger the ore mine, the more powerful the experts are. I'm afraid there are some of them whom even you can't defeat. So, you have to be careful while you are exploring those locations. Don't expose yourself."

Jiang Chen gave a personal reminder to Big Yellow because this dog could be too reckless sometimes. If he really did extract the ore mines, it would mess up all Jiang Chen's plan. Clearly, it was something which Jiang Chen didn't see.

"Don't worry about it. I know what to do. Master dog will leave now."

Big Yellow bode farewell to Big Yellow and vanished. Jiang Chen was quite confident in Big Yellow's capability. Although he was merely a Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint, no one would be able to find him if he hid himself. This explained why Big Yellow was able to steal the demon soul of Soul Eater Demon King from the prefecture that guarded tightly. It would be a misfortune when someone underestimated this dog.

Jiang Chen's plan had reached its final phase. It's safe to say that everything was under his control. Finding the ore mountains by own senses only could be done by Big Yellow. Jiang Chen didn't have doubts about Big Yellow's ability on this.

After Big Yellow had left, Jiang Chen and Tyrant went into seclusion. Yan Chenyu also went into seclusion in one of the rooms. The Ten-Thousand-Year-Old-Cold Crystal that she received would benefit her tremendously after the refinement. Probably it

would push her to Fifth Grade Minor Saint.

In the courtyard, Dan King looked delightful. He glanced at the door of the room of Jiang Chen and imagined it was only a matter of time before the new generation monstrous genius stirred up the Saint Origin World that had been in peace for over a hundred years. It was like the time before the Greatest Saint had died.

Inside the room, Jiang Chen was sitting on a large hassock cross-legged. Moments later, he adjusted his condition to the perfect state before taking out the Saint Bone.

Weng *Weng*

The Saint Bone was letting out buzzing sound, as though it was responding to its master. Then it trembled intensely. That was the feeling when two things were connected. The bone had belonged to him, was a part of himself. No one other than him would be able to refine it.

Although Desolate Ning could fuse the Saint Bone into his own bone with the help of experts of Desolate Family, it was merely a fusion instead of a completion. As such, it only could enhance the power of his finger strike.

With the circulation of the dragon transformation art, the finger bone integrated with Jiang Chen's right finger at quickest speed, smoothly and without pain. This was mainly due to the blood type connection Jiang Chen had with the finger bone.

The stimulation of the Saint Bone was equivalent to the stimulation of the Heavenly Saint Sword. These stimulation could quicken the circulation of dragon transformation art and also igniting Jiang Chen's inner potential strength. Jiang Chen's pool of energy was improving under the stimulation of the Saint Bone. New dragon marks started to form rapidly.

Currently there were sixty seven thousand dragon marks There was only a thousand more to achieve the Fifth Grade Minor Saint. One thousand dragon marks was condensed very quickly due to the stimulation of the finger bone. His Qi started to roll inside of him. That was the indication of Fifth Grade Minor Saint advancement. Sixty eight thousand dragon marks were the threshold of Fifth Grade Minor Saint.

Jiang Chen could feel the changes in his body strongly. The requirement of energy for every advancement was enormous. This time, Jiang Chen straightaway refined the high grade True Meta Stones to use the pure energy in it for his advancement. After a number of True Meta Stones were refined and absorbed, his cultivation grade had risen to a new level.

The consumption of high grade True Meta Stones allowed him to feel the terrifying energy of his dragon transformation art. His thirst for the stones would be greater than before as the time went on. As such, he must make sure that his trip to Void Triangular Domain was beneficial, he must ensure that he would obtain as many high grade True Meta Stones as possible.

After breaking through the Fifth Grade Minor Saint, the number of dragon marks didn't stop condensing until another thousand

dragon marks were produced. At the present moment, Jiang Chen's body had already reached sixty nine thousand dragon marks. It was only a thousand more dragon marks to go to reach Sixth Grade Minor Saint. It's safe to say that the cultivation grade of Fifth Grade Minor Saint had been fortified. And, his pool of energy had enhanced drastically and his foundation had become stronger because part of his potential strength was ignited.

Ka *Ka*

As Jiang Chen moved his body, sounds of cracking were heard. Every inch of his bone released a powerful energy wave. His current Qi could only be described by the word 'mighty'. More importantly, his right forefinger and left forefinger were radiating golden light and exuding strong Qi of Saint. If he used his Profound Nine Solar Energy, the damage inflicted would be a lot greater than before.

"Good. Not only have I advanced to Fifth Grade Minor Saint, but also allowed the use of the strength of my finger bone in my human-dragon form. The combination of two finger bones makes the finger strike useable even when I am a human dragon. When I have transformed into a human-dragon, not only my combat strength will increase by tenfold, my finger strike will also improve – more powerful than the tenfold increment of combat strength. This is perfect."

Jiang Chen exposed a smirk at the corner of his mouth. He felt very confident and satisfied at his current condition. After transforming into a human-dragon, he could kill any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint instantly. Only those who were peak

Ninth Grade Minor Saint could engage in a battle with him.

If his newly advancement was spread to Desolate Nanyang, it was likely that he would spurt out blood. They had missed the good chance to eliminate Jiang Chen before this. Today, Jiang Chen has grown beyond their imagination. Although he was still considered weak as compared to the eight families, in Void Triangular Domain, there was no one who could stop him.

Despite of all these, Jiang Chen didn't ease himself. Although all factors were according to his plan, there was one person who would be the dangerous and unpredictable factor of his plan. It wasn't the imperial kinsmen of Dark Generation and the major powers of the three worlds, it was Nan Bei Chao.

In the remaining time, Jiang Chen didn't come out of his seclusion room. He continued to fortify his cultivation grade. Since the eradication of Nan Bei Chao until now, it was true that he had advanced at a very fast speed and had very large pool of energy, but it was necessary for him to repair any loopholes in his cultivation grade, as a preparation for higher grade advancement.

In these three days' time, the atmosphere in King City was never livelier. As the prefecture was preparing for the major trading event, every corner of the city was filled with discussion and conversation about the battle in the desolate area. All of them called Jiang Chen a mad man. The battle was too shocking. Nothing like this had happened before in Void Triangular Domain. It absolutely would be recorded into Dark Generation's history book. It was also an astonishing incident to the major powers of the three worlds. They were overlords of certain cities or in the

domain. In the normal days, they would be regarded respectfully by other people. Their simple cough could shiver any ordinary people. So, Jiang Chen's actions and manners towards them had gone far worse than just shaming them.

Hence, when the auction was over, the first thing they wanted to do was to eliminate Jiang Chen.

Three days passed very quickly. The night before, Jiang Chen walked out his room. At this time, Big Yellow had returned. He looked delightful and excited. His eyes were radiating with brilliant light and almost popped out because of overexertion.

“Big Yellow, how is it going?”

Jiang Chen asked impatiently.

“Haha! We are going to get rich! We are going to get rich!”

Big Yellow was bouncing up and down.

Chapter 852 - All Set For A Showdown

“We’re getting rich? What’s that about?”

Tyrant opened the door of his room and breezed out. His present cultivation grade had reached Fourth Grade Minor Saint. He had advanced two grades in three days’ time. However, Big Yellow and Jiang Chen didn’t feel surprised about it. Anyone who was in the auction knew that it was a relic left by a Ninth Grade Minor Saint great monk breaking through to the Great Saint realm. Besides, Tyrant himself was a rare genius in the Buddha Sect. As such, it was very common to learn that he had advanced two grades in this short period of time.

As a matter of fact, Tyrant had only refined a part of the relic. He would keep the remaining portions of the relic for future advancements.

Creaking

Yan Chenyu’s door was open. She walked out of her room wearing snowy white clothes. Sure enough, she had pushed her grade to Fifth Grade Minor Saint as Jiang Chen had expected after refining the Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Cold Crystal. When Dan King saw their improvements, he couldn’t help but shake his head. There was nothing that he could comment about these few geniuses of geniuses.

“Big Yellow, quickly, tell me. How many ore mines have you found?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Void Triangular Domain is truly a place with fortune everywhere. I have gone to every corner of the domain and found a total of thirty three ore mines. There is a large-scale ore mine not far away from King City. I’m afraid that this large-scale ore mine alone consists of one billion True Meta Stones.”

Big Yellow was beaming with joy as he spoke. The gains this time would be enormous.

“Whoa, so many ore mines?”

Dan King exclaimed. There were thirty three ore mines, and the largest ore mine consisted of one billion high grade True Meta Stones. If they were to add all of the True Meta Stones together, the figure would be innumerable. It would be a heaven defying figure. Although the other ore mines weren’t as large as the largest one, the number of high grade True Meta Stones wouldn’t be very far away from one billion. The ore mine near Dark Mulberry City was perhaps the smallest ore mine of them all, but there was fifty million high grade True Meta Stones.

“Nice, Big Yellow. Good job. Once we have extracted these stones, you’ll be able to consume as much as you can.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head. The fortunes here were too amazing. If they could really obtain these high grade True Meta Stones, Jiang Chen’s advancement in the Great Saint path

wouldn't be a problem. With so many True Meta Stones, it was very unlikely for Jiang Chen to finish them, even if he was cultivating dragon transformation art.

If he couldn't finish them, he could give them to those who needed it. So, he would never miss the chance of getting such a great fortune.

“When are we going to start?”

Big Yellow asked. He couldn't wait to begin the extraction of those minerals.

“Don't rush it. We'll see what items are going to be auctioned tomorrow. Since we have already located all of the ore mines, we can dig them up at any time.”

Jiang Chen exposed a smile. There was a last step in his plan. It was the ultimate plan that would be executed tomorrow.

“Father, Xiao Yu and Tyrant. Tomorrow, all of you will follow Demon Race. Be with Demon Race as well as Gu Family, wherever they go.”

Jiang Chen said. When the war began tomorrow, he wouldn't be able to care for the safety of Yan Chenyu and the others. But as long as they were with Golden Fur Lion King and Gu Mu, they would be safe. Those major powers and experts of Dark Generation weren't targeting Jiang Chen, but Yan Chenyu and the other two.

“En, brother Chen, you have to be careful.”

Yan Chenyu nodded. She knew very well that she couldn't provide any help in the battlefield tomorrow. So, keeping herself safe was the greatest help she could provide to Jiang Chen.

“Don't worry about me. With my current cultivation grade, they will face unbearable consequences for wanting me dead.”

Jiang Chen said in an even tone. The confidence in his expression was enough to relieve Yan Chenyu's worries for him.

The next day, early in the morning, Kong Yu had come to Jiang Chen's courtyard.

“Brother Jiang, Big Yellow, the auction is going to start soon. Let's go together.”

Kong Yu held his fists at Jiang Chen. As the son of Peacock King and a genius of Demon Race, it was rare for him to respect someone. He was truly impressed by Jiang Chen's battle in the desolate area. As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen's name had spread to all the people, across the domain since the battle in the desolate area. Kong Yu was a young generation genius, but he couldn't find a reason to not admire Jiang Chen.

Powerful cultivators would always be respected and admired by the others. This applied to anywhere and was part of nature.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He had wanted to go to the auction all along. He should've attacked the ore mines when Big Yellow had found them. However, due to his desire for better items, he decided to do that after the auction.

Golden Fur Lion King and Gu Mu's forces had already gathered outside the Demon Race and Gu Family's strongholds. Although they didn't have any conflicts, they didn't communicate much with each other. Today, Jiang Chen's appearance had brought these two clans closer. At least they were in an alliance for now.

The auction was going to commence soon, but the faces of the members of Gu Family and Demon Race were full of worries. They couldn't help it. Although King City was in peaceful state for three days, today wasn't going to follow that trend. They had no idea how many major powers wanted Jiang Chen's life now.

As Golden Fur Lion King and Gu Mu were frowning, Jiang Chen and his friends walked over. At this moment, everyone's eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen. Due to Jiang Chen not concealing his Qi, everyone could sense his cultivation grade clearly. Their eyes sparkled when they learnt that Jiang Chen had advanced to Fifth Grade Minor Saint.

“Brother Jiang, you have advanced to Fifth Grade Minor Saint?”

Golden Fur Lion King didn't dare to believe it. This was too far

from what they had expected. Advancing a grade in three days' time? When had advancement become so simple? They wouldn't have believed it if they hadn't witnessed this with their own eyes.

“That's right. I have already advanced to Fifth Grade Minor Saint. After transforming into a human-dragon, I can easily kill a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. So, the two seniors don't need to worry about my safety. Those major powers who wanted me dead will only end up like those geniuses in the desolate battlefield that day; dying under my hands.”

Hiss

Everyone gasped in a breath of cold air. If it was another person who said this in front of them, they would look at the person with contempt, some would even send a slap to the person. But when these words came out from Jiang Chen's mouth, it didn't sound boastful at all. That day, although they didn't watch the battle, they saw the aftermath of the battle. That time, Jiang Chen killed the group of Seventh Grade Minor Saint geniuses. One should know that those geniuses were on par with ordinary Eighth Grade Minor Saint cultivators. Today, Jiang Chen had advanced to Ninth Grade Minor Saint, making it very likely that Jiang Chen could take down Ninth Grade Minor Saint at his will. Thinking about that made their skin crawl. At the same time, they couldn't help but sigh, to know that there was actually such a monstrous human under the heavens.

“Prince Jiang is absolutely the greatest genius I have ever met. Not even the rare geniuses of the Sky Ranking are comparable to you.”

Gu Mu sighed as he said. It was the words that came from the bottom of his heart. There was a Sky Ranking in Pure Land. Anyone who was listed was a genius of geniuses, the best of the best. If they engaged in a battle with Jiang Chen, he was afraid that none of them was suited to be his opponent. None of the geniuses who were of the same grade with Jiang Chen could achieve such a state. In other words, if Jiang Chen were put in a battlefield with the geniuses of a similar grade, he certainly could kill them in seconds.

“Elder has praised too much. Let’s go. Let’s see what treasures will be auctioned this time.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Very well.”

Gu Mu’s was slightly stunned to see Jiang Chen’s vast improvement after three days. It had relieved both his and Golden Fur Lion King’s worries for him. The same goes for the others. If Jiang Chen didn’t achieve the advancement, it was hard to imagine how he was going to deal with that many enemies, even with their help.

The stronghold of every major power was just nearby. It was also near to the auction venue. On the way, many experts of other major powers saw Jiang Chen and immediately let out their murderous intent.

“Old man. Why are you opening your eyes so big? Don’t tell me that you want to start a battle here? If you don’t dare to do it, stop showing your goldfish-like eyes.”

Big Yellow was an absolute tartar. He wouldn’t wait to swear when he saw the glare from his enemies.

“Stupid dog! Shut your filthy mouth! You all will know what will happen when the auction is over.”

“Brat Jiang Chen, I have let you live for three days. I never thought that you still dare to come and join the auction. Since you aren’t afraid of death, I will let you die in a more torturing way.”

The experts of Huo Family and Shi Family said. They held themselves back so as to not start a battle, because the place was certainly not suitable to be the battlefield.

“It isn’t definite who will die or live. If I were you all, I will choose to keep my mouth shut and leave quickly after the auction. If you want to kill me, you will end up like those geniuses who died in the desolate battlefield.”

Jiang Chen darted a contemptuous glance at them.

“Such a wildly arrogant kid! Still trying to be domineering before your death?”

Desolate Nanyang appeared. His murderous intent was stronger.

The atmosphere had become tense, even before the auction even began. It was imaginable how chaotic it would be after the auction.

“Golden Fur Lion King, Gu Mu, I advise you all one word, don’t continue to stain yourself with this muddy water. The consequences aren’t bearable by you all.”

Desolate Nanyang gave a cold smile.

“Desolate Nanyang, it’s none of your business, whether we want to help or not. We, Demon Race always do things regardless of the comments or remarks of outsiders. Besides, I’m afraid that you can’t kill Jiang Chen, even if we aren’t helping him.”

Golden Fur Lion King rebutted. He wasn’t afraid of Desolate Nanyang.

“Then, we’ll see how it’s going to end.”

Desolate Nanyang waved his sleeve and strode into the auction venue.

The venue of the auction in King City was a lot larger than the auction area in Dark Surge City. However, the people who took part in it weren’t as many as those in Dark Surge City. People with ordinary statuses weren’t qualified to join the auction. Despite the lesser number of participants, the atmosphere was still as lively. One should know that the participants were the members of major powers of three different worlds. They were the cultivators with

high statuses.

Chapter 853 - Unexpected Surprises

The venue for the auction wasn't an open-air area. It was like a small castle that was magnificently built. It was filled with the aura of the rich families. In the castle-like auction venue, there were no seats. There were only luxurious rooms for honored guests that were arranged in a circle. Every room was decorated with the most luxurious ornaments. People who entered this building were people with respectable identities.

There was a large glass placed in front of the room. It was extravagantly made by high grade True Meta Stones.

When you looked through this large True Meta Stone glass, you would be able to see the auction platform clearly. The auction platform had the same height as the rooms. In other words, you would be able to see the entire process and situation of the auction in the room. The size of the platform was thirty meters large. Anything, including some small and little things could be seen clearly in the room.

“King City's auction venue sure is more luxurious than Dark Surge City.”

Big Yellow sat on a soft seat relaxingly with an enjoyable expression.

“That is of course, I heard that an item which many people have longed for will be auctioned this time. Some say that it is related to the Greatest Saint. I have no idea how the people of the Dark

Generation would get it.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

Jiang Chen was stunned. Both of his eyes immediately shot out light. Golden Fur Lion King’s information wouldn’t be just a rumor. This caused Jiang Chen’s heart to pound rhythmically. It seemed like his trip to the auction wouldn’t be in vain. It was likely that he would gain some unexpected treasures.

That year, when he fell from the Saint Cliff, there was fundamentally nothing of him except for the fragments of the Heavenly Saint Sword. It was already considered good for him to find two finger bones. Also, the reason why the finger bones were so precious to everyone was because they were rare. Anything that was related to his previous life, be it the finger bones or the fragments of the Heavenly saint sword, would bring him unimaginable benefits. He had no idea what kind of treasure the Dark Generation would auction this time.

“The things that were left behind by the Greatest Saint must be rare treasures. These treasures had gone through the massively destructive heavenly tribulation along with the Greatest Saint. The Greatest Saint had risen from nowhere and left countless of glorious battle records and legends. Perhaps the treasure of the Greatest Saint isn’t as attractive to them compared to us. There would certainly be a fierce competition among the eight families for this item.”

A Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint said. It clearly showed how much he respected and worshipped the Greatest Saint.

No one knew how many of them would be petrified if they knew that the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint was sitting beside them. They would certainly be petrified into a rock.

Jiang Chen didn't speak. He crossed his leg while carrying a smile on his face. The people of the Demon Race were impressed by him. Even the Golden Fur Lion King couldn't help but raise his thumb up for Jiang Chen. It was hard for them to imagine that the mental state of this young man would be this strong. They were very clear about Jiang Chen's capabilities. Don't be deceived by Jiang Chen's calmness, he could start a massive war any time. If it was someone else, that person would be frightened to death. Jiang Chen looked very calm and composed as if today was a good day. That kind of composure wasn't a pretense as it couldn't be pretended.

Gu Family was on the next room. They would communicate with them via divine sense.

“Why hasn't the auction started yet?”

Big Yellow was getting a little impatient. As a matter of fact, he wanted to spend all of his efforts on those ore mines. He wouldn't wait for the auction to end before he struck.

“Don't worry, it will begin in no time.”

An elder of the Demon Race said.

“That is the treasure of the Greatest Saint. It only means that it would be revealed at the last part of the auction.”

Tyrant asked enthusiastically.

“No, the auction in King City is different than auction in other cities. Due to the participants of this auction having strong financial sources, there is no need to conceal the identity of the treasures. Before the auction, the Dark Generation will expose all the items that are going to be auctioned so that everyone can plan how they would spend their money.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“That’s right. This is an auction combined with trading. One should know that different treasure have different kinds of functions to various major powers. For instance, if it is a powerful Source of a Saint Fire, the other major powers won’t compete for it with the Huo Family. So, the imperial kinsmen of the Dark Generation will reveal all the treasures for us to see. Once we have our targeted treasures, we won’t focus too much on the other treasures. In that case, we could allocate enough financial resources to obtain our treasures.”

Another elder of the Demon Race said.

“Kaka...little Chen, I think we can just open fire on those treasures.”

Big Yellow said to Jiang Chen via divine sense.

“I agree.”

Jiang Chen smirked. These two were people with similar interest. They would smoothly work together in many things, particularly something like this.

Showing those treasures out was without a doubt a serious mistake, it would cause this auction to be in vain and all major powers would gain nothing in the end.

Swoosh *Swoosh*

As Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were still exchanging glances, a brilliant light suddenly emerged on the auction platform. Then, powerful silhouettes appeared on top of the auction platform. There were a total of eight elders. Every one of them was a powerful Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

Although there were no Great Saints in the Dark Generation due to the World Origin, it's safe to say that the Dark Generation was a very powerful race, especially the imperial kinsmen in King City. Ninth Grade Minor Saints could be found everywhere. It was hard to imagine how powerful these people were if there were not restricted by the World Origin.

These eight Ninth Grade Minor Saints were the higher ups of the imperial kinsmen. They were here to personally hold the auction

to show their respects to all the major powers.

The leader was an elder with a sturdy body that was as firm as a steel tower. It gave people the sense of a mighty aura. He smiled slightly while holding his fists to greet everyone before he spoke.

“Everyone, this isn’t the first time that you people and our generation came together to trade. So, I will cut down all the rules of the auction. I now officially open the major trading event in King City. It will be the same as before. We will show you our collected treasures before the auction begins.”

The elder’s voice rolled through the air. It allowed everyone in the auction to hear it clearly. The atmosphere had become very tense. The treasures that they were going to present weren’t any ordinary items.

While all of them were focusing on the elder, he waved his hand and a table that was several meters long materialized. It was fully made of high grade True Meta Stones. Of course, the table wasn’t the first treasure. Subsequently, the elder took out the treasures one by one and placed it on the table.

Then, he took out a black magic like box. Despite the distance, everyone could feel that a dark force was exuding from it.

“This is a Dark Crystal. It was personally made by the Dark King using the dark elements. As for its price, I assume that all of you have a rough estimation of it.”

He spoke and placed the black box on the table.

“This Dark Crystal is a precious item. Although we can’t absorb the dark element in it, we can integrate it into our Combat Weapons, adding another attribute and increasing the combat power of the weapon. To the Bin Family, this is certainly a precious treasure.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“The second treasure is the three drops of Nine Yin Water found by my generation under the ground.”

The elder took out a jade bottle and put it on the table.

“This is rare to Xiao Yu.”

Big Yellow’s eyes sparkled.

“That’s right. The Nine Yin Water could only be formed in harsh conditions. It could only be produced from the Nine Layers Cold Land, which is suited to Xiao Yu’s Nine Yin Meridians. If she obtained these drops of Nine Yin Water, her Heart of Ice God will start to condense and its shape will start to form.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered too. He had to admit that this auction was uncommon. These two treasures were already enough to astonish them all.

“This is the powerful Source of Dark Fire.”

When the elder took out the third treasure, Jiang Chen and the others could feel the Huo Family’s excitement.

Subsequently, treasures were taken out one after another. Most of the treasures were produced and crafted locally. There were some which no one knew where they came from. Anyway, every treasure was really valuable. Each of them was worth at least a city. It showed how valuable the imperial kinsmen’s collection of treasure was.

While the treasures were being shown on the platform, it stirred up the emotions of the people of the major powers. Clearly, most of them had already desired some of these treasures in their minds.

“Alright. The next treasure is related to the Greatest Saint of Saint Origin World. We, the Dark Generation have heard about the story of the Greatest Saint. Friends from the Saint Origin World, you would certainly be very interested to see this item.”

As the elder’s words faded, the cultivators from the eight families became attentive. One should know that the Greatest Saint was a renowned figure. Although he didn’t rise to become an immortal, the things that were left after him would certainly amaze anyone.

The attentive and scorching gazes were fixed on the elder as he slowly drew out a broken sword.

Chapter 854 - Stealing Away All the Treasures

The look of the broken sword was nothing more than ordinary but people with sharp senses could sense the powerful Saint Qi that was released from the metal. The eyes of the experts from the eight families were glued at the broken metal.

“This is...? The Combat Weapon of the Greatest Saint...it is a peerless and divine sword.”

“That’s right. If I’m not mistaken, the Greatest Saint had a sword named Heavenly Saint Sword. With that sword, he was invincible. This piece of metal should be a fragment of the sword. In that case, its value is also worth at least a city.”

“Any treasure that belonged to the Greatest Saint is very precious and perhaps priceless. One should know that the Greatest Saint didn’t belong to any large sect and was merely a rogue cultivator from some here. Someone like him is most unpredictable. Anything that was left by him is worth the time and effort to discover and understand.”

“I have no idea how the people of the Dark Generation obtained this broken sword. This item originated from Saint Origin World. We have scanned and swept across the Saint Cliff many times but we found nothing except the Heavenly Barrier. If there are fragments of the Heavenly Saint Sword there, we should have found it already.”

“This isn’t entirely true. Back when the Heavenly Saint Sword slashed open the heavens, many void were also destroyed, including the world barrier of Saint Origin World. Because of this, the Heavenly Saint Sword was broken into portions. Some of the fragments went straight into the rift of the voids. It isn’t strange for the Dark Generation to obtain such a treasure. The experts of the Bin Family will be more than interested in this metal fragment than the Dark Crystal.”

.....

No one felt relaxed or calm anymore. It was out of everyone’s expectation that a fragment of the Natal Weapon of the Greatest Saint would appear in today’s auction. Presently, the one who was feeling the happiest right now was Jiang Chen. This was just akin to a delicious pastry falling down from the sky. Finding all the fragments of the Heavenly Saint Sword had always been one of his greatest goals. There are a total of seven separated fragments. Now he had already collected four of them. There were only three left. He had never thought that he would find one here. If he could obtain the fragment, the power of his Heavenly Saint Sword would be enhanced once again. Jiang Chen would advance to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint as well because of the ignition from the fragment. At that time, he would become truly invincible across the entire Void Triangular Domain.

Big Yellow looked over at Jiang Chen. His eyes were full of doubts, as though he had discovered some sort of great secret. Perhaps the others couldn’t discern it but he could. The Qi of the fragments that Jiang Chen obtained before was similar to the sword fragment in front. One should know that it was the Natal Weapon of the Greatest Saint. So it wasn’t something that anyone

could fuse it into his or her own Combat Weapon, but Jiang Chen was able to achieve a perfect integration. What was the explanation for all of these?

“Litte Chen, aren’t you going to provide me with some explanation?”

Big Yellow said to Jiang Chen via divine sense. In his point of view, Jiang Chen had too many inexplicable things happening on him. Despite his young age, his knowledge was boundless and his abilities were unlimited. He was already equipped with the knowledge of the Divine Continent while he was still in the Eastern Continent.

“Yes, I am the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. This is a very shocking secret. So, I have decided to conceal it. This fragment is a portion of my Natal Weapon. I don’t mind telling you all of these but you have to promise me to keep this secret.”

Jiang Chen had admitted his true identity. In fact, there was nothing much that he could keep from Big Yellow because Big Yellow had already accepted his capabilities. He didn’t want to declare the identity of the Greatest Saint, but his cover was blown when Big Yellow was dying to make the guesses.

“Dammit! Let master dog spurt out two mouthful of blood!

Big Yellow fell to the ground with a puff. His body was twitching. This secret was really too shocking. Although Big Yellow had already guessed that Jiang Chen was related to the Greatest Saint,

the truth still struck him like lightning.

But his feeling of astonishment didn't last long. He and Jiang Chen were sworn brothers and it wouldn't change for the rest of their lives, even if their identities or status were changed. Besides, this secret really excited him very much. His brother was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. It just explained why Jiang Chen was so abnormal. Those people who wanted to fight the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint were destined to face unpleasant consequences.

“Little Chen, all the treasures have already been revealed. I think we can do it now.”

After calming himself down, he said to Jiang Chen with a snicker.

Jiang Chen smirked. He slowly stood up and strode to the glass that was in front of him.

“Okay. All the treasures have been revealed to you all. The bid will begin now. The first treasure – Dark Crystal.”

The elder of the Dark Generation said loudly.

“Skip the bid. You can stop here, elder. Golden Fur Lion King, Gu Mu, I will take away a few of these treasures. Both of your families will divide the remaining treasures equally.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone. He controlled his tone so that only the members of the Demon Race and the Gu Family could hear it.

All of their expression changed drastically. They had no idea what would Jiang Chen do, especially the people of the Demon Race. They fixed their eyes on Jiang Chen and felt a strong Qi shooting out of his body all of a sudden.

“Brother Jiang, what are you going to do?”

Golden Fur Lion King somehow couldn't guess what Jiang Chen was about to do, his face was pale.

“The auction will end here. There will be a war sooner or later. None of you would need to attack. Just find your ways to leave King City as quick as possible and return to Saint Origin World. After today, there will be no more major trading event or auction. As for the high grade True Meta Stones, I will keep my promise and present fifty million to each of your family.”

Jiang Chen said. He felt it was worthwhile to give fifty million high grade True Meta Stones to the Gu Family and Demon Race. Jiang Chen had always been generous to his friends. Besides, he would temporarily need their help the moment he returned as he had offended the majority of the families in the Pure Land.

“What?”

The members of Demon Race and Gu Family were petrified. They

felt that their brains and thoughts were about to freeze. Although they still had no idea what would Jiang Chen do, they knew that the Void Triangular Domain would turn very chaotic today and be destroyed severely to the point that there would be no more major trading event that would be held here.

“Alright, let’s start.”

The elder’s face was full of smile as he announced.

Hong Long

As the elder’s words dropped, a loud rumble was heard. The tremble was so strong it shook the entire auction building, mountains and land. Everyone saw a large blood-red dragon claw appear all of a sudden and reached for the auction platform.

This happened too quickly. The Ninth Grade Minor Saints elders who were standing on the platform were stunned. Split seconds later, they regained their responses. Someone was trying to rob the treasures. This was really an audaciously wild idea. Nothing like this had ever happened before in the auction of King City.

“Not good. Someone is robbing the treasures away. Who is it?!”

The elder was the first to respond but it was already too late. Not only the treasures, the table that was made of high grade True Meta Stones vanished too. All of them were taken away by the single dragon claw.

“Haha...”

The laugh rolled through the air. Everyone could see a dragonman above the auction building. The large blood-red dragon wings were fluttering constantly. Every flap created a strong gust of wind, blowing against the auction building. The glasses of the rooms were broken because of that.

The members of the Demon Race and Gu Family gasped in a cold breath of air. They wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen would do such a heaven defying thing. He had emptied all the items that ought to be auctioned. It was a tremendously domineering action. For so long that the Void Triangular Domain had existed in this virtual world, nothing like this had ever happened before.

“Motherf*cker, this is crazy!”

Kong Yu couldn't help but feel his blood boil. He now admired Jiang Chen in prostration. He was a person who didn't follow rules, a person who was destined to break the laws of nature. He struck aggressively and openly before the auction even began.

“Jiang Chen, you are seeking death!”

The elder recognized Jiang Chen. He raged. Not only him, countless of cold and murderous intent and anger spread out from the rooms. They all thought that this Jiang Chen was truly a madman that didn't know what life and death was. Their initial plan was to finish him off when the auction was over. None of

them thought that this guy would act so insanely – robbing the treasures in front of them.

“Seeking death? Isn’t it fated for everyone to live and die. Today, this place would be turned into ruins. Whoever dares to provoke me will be killed.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi was wild and domineering. His body looked mighty and his brilliant dragon eyes disdained all the beings below him.

“Attack. Take this arrogant animal down for messing up the auction of King City and robbing the treasures. He must die!”

The elder raged. He had unleashed all of his Qi. There were still seven Ninth Grade Minor Saints following behind him. They had besieged Jiang Chen.

“Die!”

The elder was the first to lunge. A powerful dark energy turned into a storm and rolled towards Jiang Chen.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph and drew his Heavenly Saint Sword. Without saying a word, he slashed at the elder.

Pu Chi

The dark storm was pulverized instantly. The terrifying Heavenly Saint Sword was invincible. It severed the elder into half. A dark spirit then went to Jiang Chen's hand through his sword. This was the dark spirit of a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. It had unimaginable benefits in his cultivation.

Meanwhile, the other seven Ninth Grade Minor Saints lunged forward, but they were no match for Jiang Chen. He moved in an extremely fast speed. He swung his sword three times in just a blink, it was then followed by three wails. Three Ninth Grade Minor Saints of the Dark Generation were killed instantly. They were cut into half. The dark spirits surfaced from their corpses and were looted by Jiang Chen.

Hiss

The scene made countless of them gasped in a cold breath of air. The remaining four Ninth Grade Minor Saint experts stopped their movements. They stared at Jiang Chen in astonishment, as though they had seen a ghost. Why was this man so powerful? He had reached a stage where he was undefeatable. It has only been three days but he had already grown into such a terrifying stage.

Chapter 855 - Stirring Up the Desire to Fight

“My god, it has only been three days’ time. How did he become so powerful to such an extent so quickly?”

Golden Fur Lion King had entered into an unprecedented state of shock. This didn’t exclude Gu Mu and all the members of the Demon Race and Gu Family. Seeing the divinity of Jiang Chen, everyone was amazed. They were very powerful Ninth Grade Minor Saints but they were instantly killed by Jiang Chen. Now, they finally understood what Jiang Chen meant earlier.

Currently, it seemed like it was no longer necessary for them to worry about Jiang Chen’s safety. They should worry for his enemies’ safety instead.

“Haha! Little Chen is a super monstrous genius. No one across the entire Void Triangular Domain would be his opponent now. Master dog has already found all the ore mines and they will all be mine.”

Big Yellow laughed pleasantly. He knew Jiang Chen’s capability all too well, especially after knowing that he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. Today, Void Triangular Domain would certainly fall into an unprecedented danger and chaos.

“How could this happen? Only three days have passed. How could he become so powerful?”

Desolate Nanyang suddenly stood up from his seat. He gazed at

the majestic-looking Jiang Chen through the cracks of the window. Both of his eyes were so red that the blood vessels were about to erupt. The changes occurred too quickly. They initially thought of ending Jiang Chen's life as soon as the auction was over, but to their surprise, Jiang Chen struck them first by robbing away the treasures, killing four Ninth Grade Minor Saints of the Dark Generation.

“A*shole! Has this brat taken some kind of elixir or divine herbs? How did he become so powerful to such an extent in just three days?”

“We should've finish him off three days ago. We shouldn't have given him the time to grow.”

“Killing those Ninth Grade Minor Saints instantly? I'm afraid that this guy's combat strength has become so powerful that we can't kill him anymore even if we want to.”

.....

All the experts were shocked, especially the major powers who had declared war on Jiang Chen three days ago. Their facial expression was uglier than the others. Given their experiences as a Ninth Grade Minor Saints, they weren't stupid enough that they couldn't see Jiang Chen's strength. Now, not even Desolate Nanyang had the confidence to take down Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you...you dare to act atrociously in King City?”

Another Dark Generation Ninth Grade Minor Saint pointed his combat weapon on Jiang Chen while shivering. Anyone would feel frightened under such a condition. Jiang Chen had just eliminated four experts. He was like death god that descended from the heavens. These experts couldn't help feeling fearful.

“Haha... It's just a small King City. I, Jiang Chen won't put this into my eyes. Let's see who would dare stop me today.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was bursting. He cut his words short. The Heavenly Saint Sword swung to the elder.

He was in great terror while he trying to defend himself. Unfortunately, his defensive strength was just too weak. The indestructible Heavenly Saint Sword pulverized his counter attack and severed him into two halves.

“Quickly inform Dark King.”

The remaining experts were frightened so much, they were like a flock of birds, scrambling. As a matter of fact, they didn't need to shout for help, such big movements had shaken up the entire King City. The experts of the imperial kinsmen were already on their way to the auction building now.

“Haha...”

The Heavenly Saint Sword in Jiang Chen's hand turned into a three-hundred-meter long sword. The sword intent exuded from it

was so destructive. He swung the dragon-shaped sword.

Hong Long

The energy was too strong. It came out from Jiang Chen's body through the sword like a violent ocean. The entire castle-like building was cut into half by the impact of the wild and violent force. Then, the building started to collapse and became ruins. This was the auction venue of imperial kinsmen. It was firmly built and was surrounded by a powerful defensive formation. The structure of the building was strong enough to withstand the attack of any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

But Jiang Chen's destructive force was just too strong. It was as effortless as blowing dusts away.

Hong Long

The rumble didn't stop until the castle was destroyed. Thick smoke and flames were everywhere. The destructive force spiraled above the sky and formed a terrifying whirlwind. All parts of the buildings were turned into broken bits.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

Sounds of wails came from different directions. It happened too quickly. The rooms where the experts were collapsed. Some geniuses who had weaker strength died when they were hit by the strong energy waves.

Those eight elders weren't the only people of Dark Generation that were present in this auction. There were plenty of guards behind the platform. None of them could bear Jiang Chen's terrifying attack. They died instantly in the ruins.

“Protect the people.”

Someone shouted. All the Ninth Grade Minor Saints rushed out from the broken bits of the building. Most of them were dazed, causing some weaker comrades besides them to die. The destruction developed too abruptly. A meaningful auction was destroyed and the building was demolished just like that.

“Argh!” “Argh!” “Argh!”

The entire scene had become chaotic. Meanwhile, Jiang Chen had eliminated the remaining three Dark Generation Ninth Grade Minor Saints elders.

Jiang Chen fluttered his dragon wings above King City. He looked coldly at the smoky auction venue. His facial expression was emotionless. Then, countless of silhouettes rushed out from the ruins. They all looked slightly fazed while glaring at Jiang Chen. It was detestable, it was exceedingly detestable. Not only did this bastard stole away all the treasures and left them with nothing, he had also hurt many of their comrades.

However, some major powers realized that Jiang Chen only targeted certain people, the people that besieged him three days

earlier. Those who didn't such as the Bin Family of Saint Origin World were free from injuries.

The people of Bin Family let out a sigh of relief. They felt lucky that they didn't choose to ally themselves with the other major powers to deal with Jiang Chen. The power of this disastrous star was too frightening. It wasn't an ideal choice to make such a person an enemy.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

A great deal of powerful Qi flew out from the Imperial Palace. In just a few blinks, nearly two hundred of them appeared above the sky and surrounded Jiang Chen. These were the higher ups of the imperial kinsmen. There were over forty Ninth Grade Minor Saints, the rest were Eighth Grade Minor Saints. With so many experts together, an attack that would be sent must be unimaginably destructive. Waves of powerful dark Qi were released from the experts, it formed into a black dark cloud above the sky, right above Jiang Chen. In the cloud was the force of attraction used to prevent Jiang Chen from escaping.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen didn't need to flee. Even if he wanted to flee, such force of attraction couldn't hold him.

The leader of the group was Dark King. Fury boiled inside of him when he saw that the auction building was turned into ashes and ruins. This was a direct slap against the entire Dark Generation. It had been so many years that the Void Triangular Domain had existed in this virtual world, but nothing as mad as this had ever happened before.

“Jiang Chen, what you did is enough to make eight of your generations pay. You will receive the cruelest punishment from the Dark Generation. Your sins are truly unforgivable.”

Dark King roared. He couldn't believe what just happened now.

Jiang Chen ignored the Dark King's threat. He said to Big Yellow via divine sense. “Big Yellow, you have to go and find the imperial vault at once. The security over there must be loose now as all of the experts are present here. Get the treasures first.”

Big Yellow was hiding far away with his Demon Race group, watching the show. His eyes flashed. Then, he turned into a golden light and disappeared. It was unimaginable how much fortune would be stored in the vault of King City.

“We must kill this brat. A monstrous genius like him has to be eliminated as soon as possible. Otherwise, he will be a future threat.”

Desolate Nanyang's eyes exposed a cruel intent. He decided to stand out. Today, Jiang Chen had reached the level where no one in Void Triangular Domain could defeat him. The only way to kill him right now was through their joint efforts. Dark Generation hated Jiang Chen very much. So, it was the best choice to join the Dark Generation to finish off Jiang Chen. It's safe to say that this choice wasn't made by Desolate Nanyang alone.

Sure enough, after Desolate Nanyang stood out, experts from the

Huo, Dan, Narang and Shi Family all stood out. They could see that Jiang Chen was beyond their abilities to handle. They now regretted not finishing him off three days ago, but it was already too late. The only alternative left was to borrow the strength of the Dark Generation to eliminate him.

Subsequently, some experts from the Boundless and Black Yellow World also stood out. For a moment, the entire sky was occupied with the people from different major powers. Nothing as shaking as this had ever been recorded in the history of Void Triangular Domain.

The experts of the Demon Race and Gu Family gathered at a distance from the scene. Their scalp grew numb as they watched.

“Brother Gu, do you think that we need to help brother Jiang Chen?”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“Lion King, do you think we would be of use if we joined a battle like this? The experts of the Dark Generation alone could already kill us all. I think we should trust prince. Since he entrusted us with Tyrant and his friends, we just need to ensure their safety and leave the rest to him.”

Gu Mu said with a smile.

“Judging by what’s happening today, if brother Jiang could

return to Saint Origin World alive, he would certainly become a renowned figure.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“That’s right. It requires a heaven defying ability to survive this fight.”

Gu Mu nodded. Today’s scene was really big, it was an unprecedented incident. Putting aside the number of experts that Jiang Chen could kill, if he could survive under the attack of so many experts, he would certainly become a heaven defying being.

“Jiang Chen, you are frenzied and violent, but do you think you still have a chance to live in a situation like this?”

The Dark King said.

“At least, many people would also have to die.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone. A scenario like this had stirred up his desire to fight.

Chapter 856 - Wild Slaughtering

Combat, murderous intent were combined with Jiang Chen's Qi of the king, and surged to the top of his head. He looked at the innumerable experts from the corner of his dragon eyes disdainfully. Today's scene would certainly be a historic event in the future.

Jiang Chen's expression was cold and plain. In his mind, all of his enemies could only be eliminated. The strongest could only rise at the expense of thousands of cultivators. As such, in the road to be the strongest, one has to step over the bones of countless cultivators to reach the pinnacle.

If you don't kill your opponent, he or she would kill you. This was the rule, the law of nature. However, Jiang Chen was going to go beyond that rule. He would slaughter the people of this world without even blinking.

Howl

A howl that sounded like a dragon's roar was heard from the Heavenly Saint Sword. The current sword was the same as before when he still hadn't reattached the fragment into it, but that didn't matter, his current strength was enough to defeat them all.

"Come on!"

Jiang Chen yelled so loud that it slightly shivered his enemies souls. Despite the fact that he was besieged by so many experts,

there was no sign of fear in his eyes, it was full of raging murderous intent instead.

“Attack! Dark Imperial Wheel.”

Dark King’s fury soared to the sky. He was the first to launch an attack. Boundless dark energy had rushed out from his body and turned into a powerful round shape wheel. It crushed the void around when it charged at Jiang Chen. Dark King was the number one expert among the imperial kinsmen. He was a peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint that was far more powerful than an ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen’s Qi was matchless. His Heavenly Saint Sword was powerful enough to kill all of them. A layer of strong flames was coated on it as it was swung. Due to the Dark King not being an ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint, it was harder to defeat him, but Jiang Chen’s flames could significantly suppress him.

Keng

Raging flames were rippling out of the sword creating an ocean of fire. The firm metal body of the sword collided against the Dark Imperial Wheel. Under the suppression of the flames, the Dark Imperial Wheel couldn’t unleash all of its power. The energy had exploded completely. The void in a hundred miles vicinity was destroyed by the impact. Terrifying waves of energy drifted its way to King City, destroying rows of buildings. The wails of the victims

were heard. There were thousands of them. They were all people of the Dark Generation. They died on the spot due to their weak cultivation.

After seeing what just happened, some Ninth Grade Minor Saints quickly struck out an energy wave to encompass the entire King City. Otherwise, today's battle would surely turn King City into ruins and the Dark Generation would suffer an unprecedented amount of losses.

The frightening Dark Imperial Wheel couldn't defend against the sharpness and aggressiveness of the Heavenly Saint Sword. It was deflected away back to Dark King. The strong recoiling force caused him to step fifteen steps back before regaining his balance. His arm was numb and his hand which held the wheel was shaking.

‘Truly powerful.’

Dark King was stupefied. He knew how strong he was but, his attack was deflected by a Fifth Grade Minor Saint just now. This was undeniably an unimaginable incident.

“Dark King, the flames that this brat released could suppress our ability, that's why he can deflect your attack.”

A Ninth Grade Minor Saint said.

“Humph! He is just one man no matter how powerful he is.

Everyone, let's do this together. We have to finish this brat either by hook or crook. Send out the call of Dark Generation supreme ruler. Demand every Ninth Grade Minor Saints across the entire domain to come over now."

Dark King was determined to end this. This was something unprecedentedly dangerous to the imperial kinsmen. If Jiang Chen wasn't eliminated today, they would lose all of their reputation and the public trust to rule the domain in the future.

"Let's attack together. Even if this brat have three heads and six arms, he would not be able defend our attacks."

A powerful Combat Weapon appeared in Desolate Nanyang's hand. It was like a trident with the shape of a fork that exuded a chilling cold light.

Hong Long

In that instant, countless of experts had unleashed all their Qi as they lunged simultaneously at Jiang Chen. The experts of the Dark Generation were using some kind of occult art to combine all of their Qi together, especially those Eighth Grade Minor Saints. Their combined attacks were a lot stronger than any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint's attack. With so many of them combining, the attack was on par with the combat strength of ten Ninth Grade Minor Saints.

"Come on, with all your might! I will have an exciting slaughtering today!"

Jiang Chen was domineering. The Five Elemental Sphere spread out. These five different colours of power spheres wrapped the whole battle field, confining all of the experts within.

“This power sphere is so awesome. It harmonized five different power spheres into one. How could there be such an abnormal being under the heavens?”

“He must be killed. Or else, he would certainly become a future threat.”

“Everyone, we have to combine all of the Ninth Grade Minor Saints’ energy. Once the fusion of energy is complete, it would be powerful enough to even injure a First Grade Great Saint. I won’t believe that we can’t kill him with this.”

.....

Although they were trapped in the Five Elemental Sphere, none of them were nervous. They were high grade Minor Saints after all. Jiang Chen’s power sphere couldn’t confine all of them.

Hua La

Countless of energy started to boil and the fusion of energy was about to be completed, but Jiang Chen wouldn’t give them the chance. As they were all confined in his power sphere, all of their actions couldn’t escape Jiang Chen’s senses.

Roar *Roar*

Jiang Chen's Qi was wild and aggressive. Roars were sent out from him. Fifteen dragons of different colours materialized and attacked separately in five different directions. The dragons were Golden Dragon Seal, Wood Dragon Seal, Water Dragon Seal, Fire Dragon Seal and Earth Dragon Seal.

Five dragon seals of different attributes and with the ability to destroy everything had turned the battlefield resplendent with their colours.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

As the Five Elemental Dragon Seal hit them, wails were heard. Those experts who received the attack died instantly. Although the number of experts greatly outnumbered their opponent, none of them had successfully fused their energy as Jiang Chen's attack was too quick and accurate. They were not given a chance to fuse their energies.

The bystanders who were watching from a distance looked unpleasant. Jiang Chen should have died in a situation like this, but it seemed like it was the opposite now. Jiang Chen's ability was truly beyond their prediction. With so many Ninth Grade Minor Saints attacking him at the same time, none of them could even harm or injure him. They ended up being killed by him instead.

“Brother Gu, did you see that? That is an attack that combined

five different attributes. It has combined the gold, wood, water, fire and the earth element. I really have no idea how he did that.”

Golden Fur Lion King’s expression could no longer be described by ‘shock’.

“His techniques are unlimited. I guess he is likely a reincarnation of an Immortal. Or else, he won’t be this powerful. I am a cultivator of a fire attribute cultivation method. Because of the fire toxin that accumulated in my body over the years, it prevented me from advancing further and was stuck at the bottleneck of the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. After being guided by the prince, I instantly broke through the bottleneck. I have also reached the Ninth Grade Minor Saint after a short period of time. All the fire toxins in my body was fully detoxified.”

Gu Mu said. His impression of Jiang Chen was very deep ever since the day he received Jiang Chen’s guidance. He knew that this young man wasn’t an ordinary man. He knew it the moment the young man solved his unsettling problems that had been bugging him for so long.

“Whoa...”

Golden Fur Lion King was astonished.

“Furthermore, prince was merely a Combat Emperor cultivator at that time. Now, he is already a Fifth Grade Minor Saint. The span of time taken for his advancement is undeniably short. It already showed how terrifying his speed of advancement is. Not

even those peerless geniuses of the Gu Family who were sent to Saint Origin Hall had such a terrifying advancement.”

Gu Mu said with a sigh. He couldn't help but feel impressed.

“That's right. Not just your family, even in the eight families. None of those peerless geniuses could accomplish such an achievement.”

Golden Fur Lion King nodded. He knew that only those geniuses with monstrous ability could go to Saint Origin Hall. They were far stronger than the geniuses of the Sky Ranking. Since most of them had already reached the Great Saint realm, so the comparison wasn't relevant. However, when they were at the same level as Jiang Chen, they couldn't achieve such results.

Pu Chi

Jiang Chen appeared randomly at any place. Everytime he appeared in a place, a wail could be heard. Any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint would be killed in a single strike, especially those experts from the Dark Generation. Their ability was suppressed significantly by Jiang Chen's flames and their dark spirits were needed by Jiang Chen, they had become the main target of Jiang Chen.

At a distance, those Ninth Grade Minor Saints from the Dark Generation were gathering to form a large combat formation that sent a tingling sensation to the bystander's scalp. They imagined that if they were Jiang Chen, they would be immediately

overpowered and die.

Pu Chi

Yet, the number of experts wasn't everything. The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a large and gigantic sword and swung at them. The loots including the dark spirits and Combat Weapons were kept by Jiang Chen.

“Everyone, don't panic. We must work together.”

Dark King was about to spurt out blood when he saw his people dying constantly. He immediately launched his Dark Imperial Wheel again at Jiang Chen. It seemed like only the Dark King had the sufficient power to defend against Jiang Chen.

“Dark King, I will give your Third Prince back to you.”

Jiang Chen hurled the Third Prince out with ease, hitting against the Dark Imperial Wheel directly.

Chapter 857 - One Sword strike to send them to the Underworld

“No...”

The Third Prince was in terror. He thought that he had escaped Jiang Chen’s evil grasp and could see the sunlight again, but what awaited him was death. A death caused by his own father’s attack.

“Imperial son.”

Dark King was greatly frightened. He hadn’t thought that Jiang Chen would use such a method. As the skill had already been sent out, it was basically impossible to stop it. All he could do was to watch his own son die tragically under his own hands.

Pu Chi

The body of the Third Prince was cut into half by the Dark Imperial Wheel and a wail of agony was heard.

“Argh... *Chi*”

Dark King shouted and spurted out blood because of his frustration. Both of his eyes had turned red and bellowed at Jiang Chen. “ Kill him, kill him now! We must kill Jiang Chen!”

All of the experts of the Dark Generation lunged at Jiang Chen

with an all-out attack. This was King City, the territory of the Dark Generation. They would never retreat even if they were left with only one man. They would persist to defeat their enemy even if it meant making the ultimate sacrifice.

“Bring it on. I don’t care how many of you would come. Eternal Immortal Wind.”

Jiang Chen casted the powerful Eternal Immortal Wind which was perfectly matched with the Five Elemental Sphere. Within the power sphere, the damage of the Eternal Immortal Wind would be enhanced immeasurably.

Hu *Hu*

The inexhaustible dragon-shaped wind was blowing violently in the Five Elemental Sphere. After a moment, the space within the sphere was filled with Eternal Immortal Wind, windstorms were everywhere. Those experts that were trapped in the windstorm were blown to their deaths immediately, especially those Eighth Grade Minor Saints. They weren’t able to stand the wind at all. They were all pulverized when the wind struck them.

“Everyone, we have to combine our strengths. The destructive power of this wind is too strong.”

Desolate Nanyang yelled. The other experts could see the fatality of the windstorm. Despite the storm was separated, it was still lethally damaging. Most of them couldn’t withstand its direct hit. Those who didn’t die were severely injured. Only a few Ninth

Grade Minor Saints who banded together were able to defend against the Eternal Immortal Wind.

Yet, they weren't able to defend against the devil-like king-, that was Jiang Chen.

From afar, Nan Bei Chao was observing the situation. His frown grew deeper.

“Brother Nan Bei, this guy has ruined all of your plans.”

One man said.

“But he is really powerful, not even a Ninth Grade Minor Saint is his opponent. I'm afraid that only brother Nan Bei can take him down.”

Another man said.

“Just observe the development of the situation for now. I would like to see how long this windstorm can last.”

Nan Bei Chao said in a plain tone. His face was emotionless but a strong self-confidence could be discerned from his face. Despite Jiang Chen's formidable aura, there was no fear in Nan Bei Chao's eyes.

However, he had to admit that Jiang Chen's emergence had

messed up all of his plans. The main purpose that Nan Bei Chao came to Void Triangular Domain was to rule the entire Dark Generation and obtain all of the treasures here, but he hadn't thought that Jiang Chen would make his move before him. He had created a chaotic situation in Void Triangular Domain. This was something that was out of Nan Bei Chao's expectation. Since the scenario had already developed into such a situation, he had to continue observing, he knew that he would still be the winner in the end.

Once upon a time, a fisherman met a snipe and a mussel which were in a fight beside the beach; as the snipe tried to eat the mussel and the mussel closed its mouth to trap the snipe's beak and didn't let go, he captured the two of them with ease. Currently, Nan Bei Chao thought that he was like the fisherman waiting for his reward as he had high confidence of himself.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen moved like a cheetah in the windstorm and was continuously swinging his Heavenly Saint Sword at the experts. His Great Soul Derivation Technique had occupied every space in the Five Elemental Domain. He wouldn't give anyone the chance to fuse their energy together.

It gave Desolate Nanyang the urge to curse. He now regrets listening to Dark King's suggestion. If he killed Jiang Chen three days ago, today's incident wouldn't happen. He couldn't believe that Jiang Chen would grow to such a powerful extent within these mere three days.

Jiang Chen came before Desolate Nanyang in a flash. His cold dragonic stare made Desolate Nanyang shiver.

“Puny monster.”

Desolate Nanyang gritted his teeth. He raised the trident and stabbed at Jiang Chen. His cultivation grade wasn't as weak as the Eighth Grade, but it wasn't as powerful as peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint. Thus, he certainly was no match for Jiang Chen in a direct battle.

Bang

The blood-red dragon claw appeared and grabbed the trident. Jiang Chen seized the Combat Weapon from him before he could make the attack.

Chi La

The movement of the Combat Weapon created a sound in the air. The trident that illuminated cold light reached Desolate Nanyang's throat. A shapeless energy had encompassed Desolate Nanyang's body. Jiang Chen who was standing in front of him was like an ancient hill that gave him inexhaustible pressure, making his soul shiver.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to kill me? I am an elder of Desolate Family. Have you considered the consequences of killing me?”

Desolate Nanyang said sternly. Now, he finally felt the terror of Jiang Chen. This added to his regret.

“I think you should consider about your own result. Killing you doesn’t require any reasons.”

Jiang Chen finished his words and impaled his throat with the trident. The degree of killings today had rooted the resentment between Jiang Chen and the other experts against each other to their core. Only one of them should live. So, how could Jiang Chen allow such troublesome enemies to live?

It was dismal for Desolate Nanyang to be killed by the Combat Weapon which he was proud of.

“This puny monster has killed elder Nanyang.”

The experts of Desolate Family had their facial expression changed instantly. There were a total of five Ninth Grade Minor Saints in the team. All of them were present in the battlefield, within Jiang Chen’s Five Elemental Sphere.

“Charge! Kill him!”

“No way, this brat is overpowered. Only experts who are half step into Great Saint realm can defeat him. I think it’s best that we retreat now. We will settle the score with him when we return to Saint Origin World.”

A smart member of Desolate Family could see the development of the battle. It was virtually impossible to kill Jiang Chen today. The experts of Dark Generation were supposed to be the main force but due to Jiang Chen's ability to suppress them, the scenario turned opposite instead and even the powerful Dark King was defeated by just one strike.

In a scene like this, although they might be able to inflict serious injuries on Jiang Chen, that came with great cost. As such the most sensible way for Desolate Family was to retreat and keep their lives and save their strengths.

“You all are leaving? Do you think you can do that?”

Jiang Chen appeared in front of the four Minor Saints in a blink. His cold tonality made people feel that they had entered an ice cavern.

The Heavenly Saint Sword spilled out countless of Sword Light. It turned into terrifying webs of swords that surrounded four of them completely. Due to the double wrap – the power sphere and the sword web, the four of them could feel the pressure of hills.

Pu Chi *Pu Chi*

The Heavenly Saint Sword moved like lightning. Four swings were made. All four of them died on the spot. All the Ninth Grade Minor Saints of Desolate Family who came here for the major trading event were killed.

For afar, there was still a group of elders and disciples of Desolate Family watching the battle. They exposed their anger when they saw that Desolate Nanyang was killed.

“Oh my god! All of the high rank elders are killed by that bastard! This will be an irreconcilable revenge!”

“What do we do now?”

“Let’s go, we have to return Saint Origin World at once. We will never forget this revenge. We will kill this puny monster the moment he returns.”

.....

The people of Desolate Family despised Jiang Chen from the core of their beings but they were unable to have their revenge because not even a Ninth Grade Minor Saint could withstand Jiang Chen’s single strike. If they continued to stay here, it was very likely that they would meet the same fate as Desolate Nanyang and the other higher ups.

They left the battlefield, towards the portal back to Saint Origin World. This time, Desolate Family had suffered major losses in the trip to Void Triangular Domain. Not only the genius, Desolate Ning was dead, the other five Ninth Grade Minor Saint elders were dead too. The people of Desolate Family would be enraged when they found out about it.

The scenario in the Five Elemental Sphere was chaotic. The experts of Dark Generation were grouping together, but they were unable to fuse their energy. Many of them were killed on the spot as Jiang Chen moved too quickly.

“Kill!”

They turned into their true form, a sturdy and ferocious monster. Roughly fifteen of them lunged at Jiang Chen. The experts of Boundless World, Black Yellow World and Huo Family launched at the same time from different directions. This was the largest alliance that they had ever formed in a battlefield. They believed that Jiang Chen would be severely injured by such a violent attack.

Jiang Chen stretched both of his arms to feel the stench of death in the chaotic battle. He looked infatuated by it. As a born fighter, his favorite battle would be as such. The higher the intensity of the battle, the greater his blood boiled.

“Bring it on. Allow my sword to send you all to the underworld.”

Jiang Chen looked at the Heavenly Saint Sword that he was holding. “My old friend, I will let you quench all your thirst for blood and relive in the battle where we had fought side by side.”

Howl

The sword let out a deafening howl as if it understood Jiang

Chen's words. The emotion of excitement was released from the metal for being able to be the killing weapon of Jiang Chen in his past and present life.

Jiang Chen raised his sword and swung out ten slashes. Every slash ripped the void apart. The light illuminated from the slash was brilliant. They formed into something that looked like a long river across sky and also the passageway to the underworld. There was the stench of death from the slashes. They were going to bury all of them deep in the underworld.

“Argh...” “Argh...”

Wails of different people were heard. They were sent flying away when their Combat Weapons collided with Heavenly Saint Sword.

Chapter 858 - Who couldn't die?

When the Combat Weapons slipped from their hands, they flew to Jiang Chen automatically as if they were controlled by some sort of magical power. Jiang Chen's terrifying sword strike was accompanied by the blow of the True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire, it annihilated roughly fifteen Ninth Grade Minor Saints of the Dark Generation. The experts from the three worlds suffered heavy injuries and lost their Combat Weapons.

“How could he be so powerful?”

The elder of the Huo Family was panic-stricken and spurted out a mouthful of blood. He saw how Jiang Chen killed the people of the Desolate Family just now. Initially, he intended to borrow the forces of the Dark Generation to deal a considerable damage to Jiang Chen, but the thought of Jiang Chen reaching to such an unbeatable level never crossed his mind.

“Is he really human?”

An expert from the Boundless World was astonished. It was the first time in his life that he experienced such a great battle and witnessed such a monstrous being. It had gone beyond his comprehension and perception.

Regret, this is what most of them is feeling right now. They regretted making Jiang Chen their enemy. They regretted not finishing Jiang Chen three days ago. Otherwise, today's battle wouldn't happen.

There were still some experts of the Dark Generation that were gaping at the battle from afar. The current battle was like a dream to them. It was impossible for them to witness such a fight.

“This is tragic. Our imperial experts are falling one after another. Why is that dragonman so powerful? Is it because the heavens wanted our generation to be extinct?”

“We are finished. Not even the Dark King is his opponent. The experts from the three different worlds are also dying one by one.”

“Kill him! We must kill him! We have lost so many of our imperial experts. We must kill him to regain the dignity of the imperial Dark Generation.”

.....

The members of the Dark Generation were overwhelmed with grief and indignation. They could see the corpses of the imperial experts falling down from the sky continuously. The blood was drifting in the air above King City, turning the sky red and dark.

This was a very tragic scene, a great number of Minor Saints fell. None could escape their fate. This battle would surely be a world-shaking news. The Minor Saints who were trapped in the Five Elemental Sphere didn't have the courage to comment whether they would live or die.

Jiang Chen's dragon wings fluttered. The forty-meter long Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand was like a blood-red dragon that had come to life. Every place it passed was dominated with a murderous aura. No one could withstand the edge of the sword. He stood there like a mad devil that came from the depths of hell. Under him were piles of white bones and corpses. It was as if he was possessed by the god of war that killed all beings under the heavens with contempt.

“Haha! Wu Ningzhu is worthy of being a member of the Gu Family. She does have a sharp eyesight. A man like him is worthy of being the son-in-law of the Gu Family.”

Gu Mu laughed happily. In the beginning, he was worried for Jiang Chen, but now, it seemed like they were all unnecessary. Wu Ningzhu was one of the members of the Gu Family, it was only a matter of time before Jiang Chen became their son-in-law. A genius like him joining the family would definitely bring tremendous amount of benefits to the Gu Family.

“Brother Jiang Chen is the strongest man that I have ever seen. Who could have thought that there is actually such a powerful and monstrous genius under the heavens. I wouldn't believe such a man exists if I didn't see it with own eyes.”

Golden Fur Lion King looked excited. He had decided that the Demon Race must establish a good rapport with this man. Besides, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had a very close relationship. So, it was stupid not to ally themselves with him.

“Elder Mu, although miss Ningzhu has already entered the Gu

Family not long ago, she has attracted many young pursuers and admirers. I'm afraid that Jiang Chen would face many obstacles if he were to marry her."

A genius of the Gu Family said with a smile.

"Gu Song, how many of those young geniuses do you think could fight Jiang Chen?"

Gu Mu looked over at the young man named Gu Song, who had the same grade as Desolate Ning, a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. He was a rare genius of the Gu Family. This time, he represented the young generation of the Gu Family to attend the major trading event in Void Triangular Domain.

Given Wu Ningzhu's talent and beauty, she would be admired wherever she went. The same thing happened to her when she arrived in the Gu Family. Gu Song was in fact one of those pursuers, but today's incident made him perish any thoughts of pursuing her. He felt that he was inferior compared to Jiang Chen.

After hearing Gu Mu's words, Gu Song revealed a bitter smile even if he was a young genius that would only appear once in a thousand years. It was true that the Gu Family had a formidable dominance in the Pure Land as they have many young geniuses. But then, like what Gu Mu had said, how many of them could actually suppress or fight Jiang Chen? He was afraid that only the figures of Sky Ranking could engage Jiang Chen in a battle.

The interior of the Five Elemental Sphere had already turned

into a horrifying battlefield. Jiang Chen was eliminating countless of enemies. His combat strength was like an inexhaustible source. He swayed and appeared before a Ninth Grade Minor Saint of the Narang Family.

Hong Long

The True Dragon Palm was struck, wrapping a few of them. They had already suffered some serious injuries. So, they were defenceless in front of the True Dragon Palm combined with the Five Elemental Sphere.

“Jiang Chen, don’t...don’t kill us. The Narang Family will retreat from this battle. I guarantee that we won’t cause you anymore troubles in the future.”

The elder of the Narang Family said. At this time, nothing was more important than their lives.

“Retreat? That is bullsh*t. There are some things in which you can enter easily but leaving wouldn’t be as easy. I, Jiang Chen didn’t offend your family before this. It was your family who chose to provoke me and eliminate me. I assume that none of you have ever imagined that such an incident would happen. Go to hell together.”

Jiang Chen exerted a powerful energy ruthlessly, killing off all the experts of the Narang Family. He didn’t even blink when he killed them. Since the conflict between him and the family had already been established, there was no more talking needed. He

was very clear that if these people were released, they would find him one day for revenge. As such, he treated them the same way he treated the Desolate Family – life-and-death enemy.

“Next, it’s your turn, Shi Family, Huo Family and Dan Family too. All of you will have to die. Let me tell you this, I, Jiang Chen am the almighty killer in Void Triangular Domain. I will certainly kill you all. Not even the gods can help you now.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was very arrogant. He was defending against the attacks of the experts of Dark Generation while fixing his attention on the three families.

The experts of the three families were scared to death. The annihilation of Desolate Family and Narang Family had severely affected their morale. Besides that, they had lost all their Combat Weapons from the impact with Jiang Chen’s Heavenly Saint Sword earlier. The result wouldn’t be much different from Desolate Family and Narang Family if Jiang Chen launched at them now.

Run!

That’s right. Fleeing was the best option to save their lives. The situation of the battle was obvious. It was impossible for them to kill Jiang Chen today. Those powerful experts of Dark Generation would all die under Jiang Chen’s hands ultimately, unless something unexpected happened.

The experts turned to flee without responding to Jiang Chen’s

words. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen wouldn't allow them this chance.

“You all still want to flee after entering my power sphere?”

Jiang Chen's Five Elemental Sphere trembled and turned into a five-colored cage. The experts were petrified when they realized that they didn't even have the chance to flee.

This was why the Five Elemental Sphere was a scary power sphere. The power of the combination of five different power spheres was far beyond any ordinary power sphere. They were no match for it, even if they had combined all their power spheres.

Roar *Roar* *Roar*

Jiang Chen's attack launched. He struck out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. A formidable black dragon was shot out and wrapped itself on the experts of three families in an instant. All of them died in the Five Elemental Sphere, along with agonizing wails that sounded like ghosts' from the underworld.

“Argh...We all are going to die.”

“Quickly, we have to leave now, to avoid becoming like the Desolate Family. This bastard is going to annihilate the entire place. From now on, I'm afraid there isn't going to be anymore major trading event in Void Triangular Domain.”

“This is despicable. We must show him our true strengths and have our revenge when he returns.”

.....

The elders and disciples of Huo Family, Narang Family, Shi Family and Dan Family who were standing outside the battlefield, watching, flew towards the portal back to Saint Origin World without hesitation. It was pointless to continue staying here. The most sensible thing to do now was to leave.

Out of eight families of Pure Land, five of them had suffered great losses. The remaining three were letting out sighs of relief at the current incidents. Besides Demon Race and Gu Family which had already allied with Jiang Chen before this, Bin Family was greatly affected emotionally. That time, the elder of Bin Family only darted a praising glance at the genius who competed with Desolate Ning during the auction in Dark Surge City. If they decided to join in the alliance to go against this genius, they would meet the same fate as the other five families.

Although Bin Family didn't gain anything, they didn't suffer any loss either, which was a lot better as compared to Desolate Family.

“Elder, what do we do now?”

Someone from Bin Family asked. Despite the fact that they weren't in the battlefield, they were frightened.

“Let’s go, we’ll leave now. The battle here is too intense. There isn’t anyone who can be Jiang Chen’s opponent here. I’m afraid Saint Origin World will no longer be peaceful in the future.”

The elder of Bin Family sighed once more before leading his people back to the portal. The result of the battle was obvious. Besides the experts of the three worlds, all the experts of Dark Generation would need to die as well.

It was imaginable how much the news would shake the entire Saint Origin World. Desolate Family wouldn’t let this matter slip away for sure. From today onwards, Saint Origin World would never be peaceful, especially in the Pure Land. This was all because of one man – Jiang Chen.

Chapter 859 - Surrendering Wasn't An Option

Out of the eight families, six had already left. The two remaining ones were the Demon Race and the Gu Family. They wanted to see the final outcome of the battle. The major powers from the Boundless and Black Yellow World who wasn't involved in the battle had already left as well. Only a few of them stayed to watch the 'show'. Most of them knew that Jiang Chen was going to be the winner of the battle based on the current development. Void Triangular Domain was completely changed because of today's battle. It was similar to what Jiang Chen had said, there would be no more major trading event in this virtual domain.

The bloodshed and slaughtering was still ongoing in the Five Elemental Sphere. Jiang Chen was ruthless and moved like a spectre. Every corner he passed were left with wails and blood. The experts of the Boundless and Black Yellow World were defending frenziedly or fleeing frantically like mad people. However, none of them had the chance to flee, the Five Elemental Sphere wasn't a fragile barrier. While they were trying to break through the barrier to escape, Jiang Chen would appear before them and finish them off.

“Jiang Chen, are you going to kill all of us here?”

An expert from the Boundless World shouted.

“Of course, your fates have already been decided once you entered the battlefield. This is your own choice. If I were as weak as three days ago, you all will certainly rip me off to pieces. Since

you all have already set your mind on killing me, don't even think that I will show you an ounce of mercy.”

Jiang Chen said in a cold tone. It made everyone's heart sink. In the current scenario, they have no other option except for betting their lives on an all-out attack. They also couldn't use the name of the major powers to intimidate him as he didn't even fear them, let alone them. They already knew it in their hearts that Jiang Chen was going to kill them all. They wouldn't have a chance to take their revenge.

“Eternal Immortal Wind!”

Jiang Chen bellowed. There was nothing much that could be said. The resentment between the two parties would only grow deeper as the bloodshed continued. Every expert had run out of options, including the expert of the Dark Generation whose innate ability was significantly suppressed by Jiang Chen. It wouldn't make any difference even if they had a lot of Ninth Grade Minor Saints. From the beginning until now, the forces of the Dark Generation had already lost at least forty of them. Half of the total number of Ninth Grade Minor Saints had already been killed. All of the Eighth Grade Minor Saints who joined the battle were already dead. Their Combat Weapons and dark spirits had become the loot of Jiang Chen.

Those experts who were still alive had lost their will to fight because even their King was severely injured. They were filled with fright and panic. They could feel their souls shivering just from seeing the current scene. This was the first time that the Dark Generation had suffered such an unprecedented losses. If

Jiang Chen continued with these killings, all of them would be eradicated.

However, Jiang Chen didn't intend to wipe them all out. He would only determine the fate of those experts who entered his Five Elemental Sphere. After the war, he would destroy all the portals to other worlds and leave the Dark Generation here to run its own course.

Jiang Chen was going all-out with his attack. He casted the Eternal Immortal Wind along with the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal and his Heavenly Saint Sword strike. The experts from the Boundless and Black Yellow World who were in despair were totally defenseless against Jiang Chen's strike. It only took a minute for all of them to die under Jiang Chen's hands.

The major powers from the two worlds were sad and angered, but there was nothing that they could do. They were gnashing their teeth for not having the chance to have their revenge. The only thing that they could do was to pretend that nothing had happened and left silently.

After slaughtering all the experts from the Boundless and Black Yellow World, the condition in the Five Elemental Sphere became quiet. Jiang Chen held the Heavenly Saint Sword as his cold eyes stared at the forces of the Dark Generation. There were only around thirty of them left. They were all Ninth Grade Minor Saints. They had never been pushed to such a tight corner before.

Presently, they were looking at Jiang Chen with mixed feelings – anger, hate, fear and many more. These emotions were exposed in

their eyes. The current battlefield was filled with sadness and dreary. There were corpses and blood everywhere. These blood belonged to the Minor Saints. Although the stench of the blood wasn't as nose-stinging, sorrow could still be felt lingering in the air.

Dark King's face turned ugly. He had the urge to charge forward and rip Jiang Chen to pieces but he stopped himself from doing that because none of them was Jiang Chen's opponent now. Everyone would just die if the fight continued.

“Jiang Chen, we surrender.”

Dark King said with a simple tone. The remaining experts looked petrified. Some of the Dark Generation in King City turned angry when they heard the Dark King saying this. Some even cried. The Dark Generation was the ruler of Void Triangular Domain ever since. They were the dictator of this place, but today, everything changed. The dignified Dark King had to speak the word 'surrender'. This would be an object of ridicule because they weren't surrendering to a race or a major power, they were surrendering to a man.

“Surrender? I won't accept it.”

Jiang Chen replied coldly.

“Jiang Chen, do you really want to exterminate all of our people?”

Dark King's eyes turned red. How pathetic was it when the ruler of the domain wasn't allowed to surrender?

“Your race shouldn't have existed in this world from the very beginning. The same goes to Void Triangular Domain as it is a crippled world.”

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

As the word was heard, the Dark King, the Ninth Grade Minor Saint experts and the people below gasped in a cold breath of air. They couldn't believe that this man was so ruthless that he wanted all of their generation to be wiped out.

“Kill him! Even it means making the ultimate sacrifice.”

“Dark King, kill him now! We are going to die anyway.”

The experts raged. They had given the ultimate offer – surrender, what else could they do besides that?

“Shut up.”

Jiang Chen yelled. “What rights do you have to yell in front of me? You will die immediately if I want you to. The outcome will be the same whether you attack or not. I am the master of your lives now. All of your lives are in my hands now.”

Jiang Chen's body was filled with a domineering aura that shuddered all of them. At this moment, they felt that Jiang Chen was like a ruler that dominated the entire world. That was the aura of supremacy. His dragon transformation art was convulsing under his domineering aura.

Dragon transformation art was a skill that could dominate the world under the heavens. It was a supremely divine skill that could only be controlled by cultivators with overbearing abilities. Presently, Jiang Chen and the dragon transformation art had already reached a very high degree of correspondence. An indistinct sign of metamorphosis could be seen from it.

The convulsion of the dragon transformation art indicated that the next metamorphosis wasn't far away. Every time the art underwent a metamorphosis or advancement, it would bring Jiang Chen a tremendous amount of benefits.

The Dark Generation were in total despair. They regretted it very much, like the people of the three worlds, for what they had decided, for not killing this man three days ago. They regretted ignoring the possibility that their enemy would bring a disaster to the Dark Generation three days later.

“But I can give you all a chance, a chance to live, a chance for Dark Generation to continue its cycle of living. Dark King, I only need your dark spirit and the dark spirits of all Ninth Grade Minor Saints. Then, I will release all of you. And I guarantee that after that, I will never seek trouble on your generation again.”

Jiang Chen said. In his point of view, this was the lightest

sentence to the experts of Dark Generation.

“What? Our dark spirits? We are disabled when we give out our dark spirits.”

“Taking our dark spirits? What’s the difference between this and taking our lives?”

The emotions of the people were stirred.

“You can retrain your cultivation after losing the dark spirit. Besides, do you guys think that you still have the right to talk with me about terms? It doesn’t matter if you all disagree to hand over your dark spirit. I can obtain them as well after killing you all. After that, I will start a massacre and raze all of the cities of the Dark Generation into the ground. Don’t even think that I am joking around with you guys. I only will joke around with my friends.”

Jiang Chen said coldly.

“Ai!”

Dark King sighed. Helplessness was exposed on everyone’s faces. They had no choice but to follow what Jiang Chen said. They definitely believed that Jiang Chen would be able to do it, eradicate the entire Void Triangular Domain.

The fact remained that Jiang Chen would be able to obtain their

dark spirits even if they refused to hand it to him willingly. At that time, it would surely bring a real disaster that would make their entire generation extinct. It was definitely a worse outcome.

“Fine, we will hand over our dark spirits willingly. I hope you will keep your promise.”

Dark King said. The others didn't dare to rebut. They weren't fools. Even if they rebutted, it wouldn't change the fact. After today's incident, the entire Dark Generation would enter recuperation period.

Peng *Peng* *Peng*

Low-spirited sounds were heard when the dark spirits were forced out of their bodies, led by the Dark King. Those dark spirits then flew to Jiang Chen's side. They had to pay a high price in order to stay alive in this piece of land.

Those experts who lost the dark spirits were akin to beast who lost their demon souls. They were forcefully controlling their bodies to prevent themselves from falling down from the sky.

Hua La

Jiang Chen kept his Five Elemental Sphere. Then, Dark King and the others were free to go. Jiang Chen had obtained an inestimable amount of benefits in today's battle. He had over a hundred Ninth Grade Minor Saints dark spirits and some dark spirits of Eighth

Grade Minor Saints. These were very precious things to him as he could use them for advancement.

Chapter 860 - Extracting the Ore Mines

The war was over. The void around was pulverised, leaving dark holes everywhere. A situation like this needed at least several days to close up and return to its original condition. The battlefield had become dilapidated. Due to the intensity of the battle, the barrier that was set by the Ninth Grade Minor Saints couldn't bear all the energy waves. Although it had damaged most of the buildings, none of the citizens were killed.

Basically, the Dark Generation had lost all of their experts of Ninth Grade Minor Saints, including their King. Some of them were dead, while some of them lost their dark spirit, which was no different than being a cripple for a period of time. This was the most severe blow that the Dark Generation had suffered in history. It was a destructive and damaging blow.

Countless pairs of eyes were looking at the dragonman above. Their eyes were filled with hatred, an irreparable hatred but there was nothing that they could do about it, their opponent was just too powerful. They only could lay their hopes on the Desolate Family to get rid of Jiang Chen when he returned to Saint Origin World.

Jiang Chen didn't revert back to his usual look. The true war hasn't arrived yet. He could feel a scorching gaze that was fixed on him. That was the gaze of Nan Bei Chao. He would be the most challenging enemy to Jiang Chen compared to the Dark Generation and the major powers from the three worlds.

From afar, Nan Bei Chao was gazing coldly at Jiang Chen. His

eyes glinted with hatred. That's right. He had already given Jiang Chen the death sentence in his heart. His initial plan was to deal with the Dark Generation after the auction, when all the major powers had left. He would use and rule them all like a predator, and then seize all of the treasures of the Dark Generation, including the high grade True Meta Stones.

He thought that his plan would certainly go well but who would've thought that someone would swoop in before he could even execute his plan? Jiang Chen's appearance had destroyed all of his plans. Now, not only did he fail to conquer the Dark Generation, the experts of the Dark Generation were left with nothing.

However, that didn't matter much because his target was switched to Jiang Chen now. He didn't need to be in a hurry to finish him off, Jiang Chen was a prey that could never escape his grasp.

Jiang Chen revealed a cold smile. He had the advantage if he fought with this Nan Bei Chao because this was the first time that Nan Bei Chao saw him, but Jiang Chen had already known almost everything about him, especially his skills.

Jiang Chen also knew that Nan Bei Chao's Eternal Immortal Wind could raise his cultivation by two grades. If he used the wind now, he would reach the Ninth Grade Minor Saint. He won't be the same to those Ninth Grade Minor Saints who were instantly killed by Jiang Chen. Despite Jiang Chen's current strength, he wasn't the opponent of Nan Bei Chao.

If it was before, Jiang Chen might have fear him, but he wasn't now. After the battle was over, he secretly integrated the metal fragment to his Heavenly Saint Sword. As long as he could complete the integration, his cultivation would reach the Sixth Grade Minor Saint. At that time, fighting Nan Bei Chao would certainly be exciting.

Swoosh

A shadow flashed and Big Yellow came to Jiang Chen's side. Judging by the beam of satisfaction on his face, he had surely gained a lot.

"Damn you! All of them are already gotten rid off by you, you beast."

Big Yellow looked around the battlefield. He smelt the stench of blood and saw the scattered corpses below. He only left for a moment, but the battle was already over when he came back. Although he had already expected that Jiang Chen would eradicate them all, it was still undeniably shaking to see such a scene.

"How did it go? Good rewards?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"Not only were the rewards good, they were abundant as well. Master dog has not only emptied the treasures in the vault of King City, but also the vault of Dark Surge City and another city. I have

gotten one billion high grade True Meta Stones. Kaka.”

Big Yellow laughed happily. It only took a while and three vaults from three different cities had already been emptied. Jiang Chen couldn't help but praise Big Yellow for his efficiency.

“Good, nicely done. You can keep them with you. When you return to the Demon Race, half of them will remain with you and the other half would be given to the Demon Race as I promised.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow's head. Although Peacock King wanted to nurture Big Yellow into the next patriarch of the Demon Race, it wouldn't be an easy task. There were different parties of people in the Demon Race. Big Yellow would face a lot of obstacles in the process. If he could bring one billion of fortune back to the Demon Race, it would significantly increase Big Yellow's status.

After a while, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow came before the Golden Fur Lion King and Gu Mu.

Everyone was looking at Jiang Chen like how they would look at a hero who had returned. The one standing in front of them wasn't a man but a peerless war god. Even the Golden Fur Lion King and Gu Mu felt the need to express their respect and admiration towards Jiang Chen.

“Lion King, elder Gu Mu, help me to protect Xiao Yu, my father-in-law and Tyrant when you all return to Saint Origin World. Big Yellow and I still have some things that need to be settled. We will return immediately after we have completed them.”

Jiang Chen told them hastily as he didn't want to waste any more time. Now, everything was settled except for Nan Bei Chao. He was going to have an ultimate battle with Nan Bei Chao. So, the Golden Fur Lion King and the others would have to go now because they wouldn't be able to help him, they would only add onto his burden.

“Alright. Big Yellow knows the portal back to the Demon Race. After we return, I will ask Peacock King to help you guys stabilize the portal so that you can use it when you guys are ready.”

The Golden Fur Lion King said. He was doing this for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's sake. Currently, the Desolate Family had already returned to their sect. The incidents in this domain would surely be spread across their entire family. At that time, not only the Desolate Family, but also the Huo, Dan, Shi and Narang Family would rage. In order to prevent Jiang Chen from falling into crisis when he returned, he needed to find a safer route for them because none of those families would dare to intrude on the Demon Race just to kill Jiang Chen, even if it was the Desolate Family.

“I understand. You all have to leave this place at once.”

Jiang Chen hurried them.

“Brother Chen, you have to be careful.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“Don’t worry, wait for me at the Demon Race.”

Jiang Chen gently touched Yan Chenyu’s cheek.

After a while, the group from the Demon Race and the Gu Family left, heading towards their respective portal. On the other hand, the followers of Nan Bei Chao had already left as well. At this point, besides the Dark Generation, there were only three outsiders left in Void Triangular Domain. They were Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Nan Bei Chao.

“Little Chen, that bastard hasn’t left yet. He has been observing us.”

Big Yellow looked at the direction where Nan Bei Chao was situated.

“He guesses that I am here for the fortune, so he hasn’t attacked me yet. Once I obtained all of the fortune, he will kill me and obtain the loot. That would definitely save him a lot of time and effort. Unfortunately, he is too proud. He would always thought that everything is under his control. He will lose his golden opportunity if he won’t attack me now. It will be too late by the time he attacks.”

Jiang Chen smirked.

“I think, you should just finish him off now.”

Big Yellow said.

“I’m not his opponent for now.”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“What? You are powerful enough to instantly kill a Ninth Grade Minor Saint now but you are still not his opponent? Are you kidding me? Is that bastard that powerful?”

Big Yellow was astonished.

“The is not the first time that you met Nan Bei Chao. Although he is not the same as the Nan Bei Chao in Saint Origin World, there is some kind of connection between the two of them. If I’m not mistaken, both of them have the same techniques. Don’t forget that he also possesses the Eternal Immortal Wind. It could temporarily boost his cultivation by two grades. He is already a Seventh Grade Minor Saint now, after using the Eternal Immortal Wind, he will become a Ninth Grade Minor Saint.”

Jiang Chen explained. He had never underestimated his mortal enemy.

“It’s just a Ninth Grade Minor Saint anyway.”

Big Yellow disagreed.

“Don’t compare the ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint to him. He possess the physique of an immortal soul. He is an extraordinary man, and besides, why is he still targeting me even after seeing me killing those Ninth Grade Minor Saints? It only showed how confident he is in his strength.”

Jiang Chen said. Knowing one’s strengths and weaknesses could allow one to win the battle. He had a good understanding of Nan Bei Chao’s intention.

“What should we do now?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Do you still remember the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword that I obtained in the auction? As long as I integrated it with my sword, my cultivation would certainly advance to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint. At that time, Nan Bei Chao would no longer be my opponent. We will now go and extract those ore mines. In the process of extracting, I will also integrate the fragment.”

Jiang Chen smiled. All of these were under his plan and control. His plan had always been perfect.

“Alright. Let’s do this.”

Big Yellow chuckled. Then, a man and a dog turned into two rays

of light. Under Big Yellow's lead, they flew in the direction of an ore mine.

The people of King City heaved a sigh of relief when they saw the disastrous star finally left their city. They were the experts whose Dark Spirits had been given to Jiang Chen. They all looked bitter. But then again, their race was kept alive.

The ore mine outside King City was the largest ore mine in the entire Void Triangular Domain. This ore mine alone was contained one billion high grade True Meta Stones. Although King City was in chaos just now, there were still a lot of guards in this ore mine. However, when these guards saw Big Yellow and Jiang Chen, they fled without saying a word. They had known about the incidents in King City. At this time, who would dare to stop this disastrous star?

The dragonman was like the god of death to the people of the Dark Generation. They felt extremely grateful for having the chance to flee for their lives.

Chapter 861 - Billions of Fortune

Hong Long

The rumble was shaking the heaven as well as the earth. A large hill-like ore mine was removed from the ground by Jiang Chen. This ore mine was formed by innumerable True Meta Stones that exuded a dazzling brilliance. The brilliance even filled a ten miles radius with the Qi of light element.

“Haha! We are rich.”

Big Yellow laughed awfully with delight. Jiang Chen didn't show any sign of guilt. He quickly kept the whole ore mine.

“Let's go, the next one.”

Jiang Chen didn't waste any time. Under Big Yellow's lead, they proceeded to the next ore mine. On the way, he was still integrating the fragment into the Heavenly Saint Sword. The number of dragon marks in his Qi Sea were increasing continuously. Currently, he already had sixty nine thousand dragon marks. He only needed one thousand more to reach seventy thousand, and break through to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

After the departure of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the people of Dark Generation returned to the ore mine which had already become a huge pit. It made them feel sad and angry at the same time.

“Dammit! He has dug out our largest ore mine. It seems like he is going to dig the other ore mines.”

“Ai! He is too strong. We can’t even stand against him. We could only hope that this disastrous star will leave our domain as soon as possible. As long as he stays here, our domain won’t have peace.”

“That’s right. Now, all of the Ninth Grade Minor Saints are dead. The remaining ones have lost their dark spirits and became disabled. Our Dark Generation has never suffered such an attack before. This is truly destructive and damaging.”

.....

A sense of dreariness flowed through their hearts. Their hatred towards Jiang Chen had grown deep in their bones but nothing could be done to alleviate their hatred. They only could hope that this disastrous star would leave their domain as soon as possible.

This time, a blonde youth in golden robe appeared above the sky. He darted a cold glance at them and said in a plain tone. “I will have your revenge for you. He would die under my hands and whatever he is getting right now would be mine.”

After he spoke, he turned into a golden light and vanished. He vanished in the direction where Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were heading.

“Who was that man?”

The people of the Dark Generation were stupefied. The cultivators from the three worlds should have already left the domain. Why was that man still here? It seemed like he was as terrifying as Jiang Chen. Judging by his tone, he is certainly going to kill Jiang Chen and rob his treasures. Now, they knew that Jiang Chen wasn't the only person who wanted the fortune of the Dark Generation.

Anyhow, they would be more than happy if there would be someone that is willing to kill Jiang Chen for them. They had already lost their fortunes anyway. It didn't matter who obtain them. Due to Jiang Chen killing a lot of their people, they needed him to be eliminated. If that blonde youth could do this for them, it would certainly help the Dark Generation have their revenge.

Hong Long

Another world-shaking rumble was heard. A large ore mine was removed again from the ground. In the subsequent time, Big Yellow brought Jiang Chen to different ore mines. It enraged the people of the Dark Generation but they could do nothing about it.

It was only an hour but Jiang Chen had already extracted thirty three ore mines. This would be the resources for Jiang Chen's future cultivation.

“Haha! This is intoxicating! Little Chen! How many are they in total?”

Big Yellow sparkled his eyes as he asked.

“According to my rough estimation, it should be around 10 billion high grade True Meta Stones after adding all of the ore mines together. This amount of resources will be more than enough for the next realm, even for the Immortal realm.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glinted with excitement and enthusiasm. The gains in this trip was truly rewarding. Not only did he obtained a tremendous amount of dark spirits, but also the fragment of his Heavenly Saint Sword and solved his worries of resources for his future advancements.

The fragment of the sword was a crucial item to him. If he hadn’t come to Void Triangular Domain, he wouldn’t be able to obtain this fragment. Now, he has already obtained five fragments of the Heavenly Saint Sword. There were two more left, but it was just like before, he didn’t have any information or clues about the whereabouts of those two fragments.

“Motherf*cker! 10 billion! This is heaven defying!”

While Big Yellow was celebrating the fortune, he thought of Nan Bei Chao and asked. “Have you advanced yet?”

“Don’t worry. I have already completed the integration of the fragment and the Heavenly Saint Sword. My current cultivation is already a Sixth Grade Minor Saint now. It would be more than enough to handle Nan Bei Chao.”

Jiang Chen was full of confidence. In the process of extracting the ore mines, he had completed the integration of the fragment into the Heavenly Saint Sword. This allowed him to condense one thousand dragon marks. Now, he had already accumulate more than seventy thousand dragon marks, which had broken through the barrier of the Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

Even if Jiang Chen had just advanced to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint, it was already enough to deal with Nan Bei Chao. In fact, his combat strength had reached to the point where no cultivators below the Great Saint realm could fight him, except for those Sky Ranking geniuses who were only half a step away from the Great Saint realm.

“Nan Bei Chao, you have followed us for so long. It’s time to show yourself.”

Jiang Chen looked at the golden light spot and said in a flat tone.

Nan Bei Chao appeared not far away from Jiang Chen’s position. His hands was crossed behind his back and his blonde hair fluttered as the wind blew. He had the aura of a mighty being. This aura made him look like a divine god.

“I have to say, you are truly astonishing. You have messed up all of my plans but it doesn’t matter. In my eyes, killing you is much more meaningful than killing the army of the Dark Generation. I, Nan Bei Chao always liked to make a powerful expert succumb to me. You are one of those who are qualified to fight me but I am

giving you a chance now. Hand over all of your fortunes and I will consider leaving your corpse complete. You should know how fortunate it is, to be able to die with a full corpse in front of me.”

Nan Bei Chao said to Jiang Chen in a matter of fact tone. In his eyes, Jiang Chen could be turned into a corpse at any time. There was nothing that Jiang Chen could negotiate about in front of him.

“Haha! You are worthy of being called Nan Bei Chao. That kind wildness and arrogance could not be copied so easily by any ordinary people. However, I’m afraid that today is not yet the time for you to kill me. It would be the other way round instead. You aren’t my opponent. So, you don’t have the right to show your arrogance in front of me.”

Jiang Chen laughed pleasantly. The arrogant demeanor of this blonde man was exactly the same as the previous Nan Bei Chao. The only difference was that Jiang Chen hadn’t fought with this Nan Bei Chao before, but it wouldn’t stop him from killing this Nan Bei Chao. Presently, he already could guess the true origin of Nan Bei Chao. Either if it was the Nan Bei Chao in the Saint Origin or Boundless World, these weren’t the real Nan Bei Chao. Nan Bei Chao was cultivating the Monarch Heaven Art, these clones would be a way to strengthen his cultivation. His true self should be in the Immortal World.

Since they were destined to be mortal enemies, Jiang Chen would absolutely not miss the chance to kill the Nan Bei Chaos under the heavens. He believed that killing this Nan Bei Chao would have a significant impact on the real Nan Bei Chao.

“Fine. It seems like you are wilder than me. I, Nan Bei Chao liked to defeat someone like you. Moments later, I will make you shiver under my feet. I would let you know the punishment of disrespecting me.”

Nan Bei Chao's Qi fluctuated. Powerful golden Qi wave started to flow out from him. The surrounding void was thrown into chaos under such an impact. The summit of the black mountains below started to crumble.

Hu *Hu*

Nan Bei Chao casted the Eternal Immortal Wind. The bones in his body produced cracking sounds before his body enlarged and his cultivation rose. In a few blinks, he had broken through the Eighth Grade and then, the Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

Sure enough, it happened just like what Jiang Chen had expected. This Nan Bei Chao was similar to the Nan Bei Chao of Saint Origin World, especially their techniques. This supported Jiang Chen's theory about Nan Bei Chao's true identity.

“Dammit! This dude is undoubtedly the reincarnation of that Nan Bei Chao. What the hell? Pooh! However, this dude is still going to face a tragedy anyway. There is only one outcome, he would be killed if he met an abnormal being like little Chen.”

Big Yellow spurted out blood when he saw Nan Bei Chao casting the Eternal Immortal Wind. They weren't just Nan Bei Chao with a lot of similarities, they were the same Nan Bei Chao. There were

no difference between them.

“Jiang Chen, I won’t give you a lot of chances. You should know that given your current strength, you won’t be able to withstand three of my attacks. I will give you one last chance. Hand over the fortune now and I will ensure that you’ll have a complete corpse. Otherwise, I will rip your body into pieces and seize your fortune.”

His voice grew louder as his Qi grew stronger. His body was now filled with an intense monarch Qi that gave people the urge to worship.

“Is that so? I hope that you can still say this out later.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly. He unleashed his Qi of Sixth Grade Minor Saint and the dragon transformation art. Then, he turned into a blood-red dragon. A domineering aura rushed out of his dragon head that trembled the sky above.

Nan Bei Chao’s facial expression changed instantly. He was sure that Jiang Chen’s current Qi was a lot stronger when he fought those Ninth Grade Minor Saints back then. This kind of power gave him a faint pressure despite the fact that he had already boosted his cultivation by using the Eternal Immortal Wind.

“You advanced again?”

Nan Bei Chao sounded astonished. The sudden increment in strength could only be explained by the fact that he had advanced

again. That only meant that he used the time while extracting the ore mines to undergo another advancement. It was undeniably a terrifyingly fast advancement. Even Nan Bei Chao felt greatly amazed.

Chapter 862 - Killing Nan Bei Chao Again

“That’s right. If you attacked me when I was still at King City, I would probably not be match for you. It’s a pity that you are overly arrogant. You’ve waited until now to strike. In just an hour, I was able to push my cultivation to the Sixth Grade. Now, you are already not my opponent.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi was peerless and domineering. It had surpassed Nan Bei Chao’s.

“Even I, have to admit that you’re a rare genius, but I am the possessor of the Immortal Soul. I can’t be defeated by an ordinary human like you. What difference would it make even if you advanced your cultivation? I, Nan Bei Chao will still kill you and you will undoubtedly die.”

Nan Bei Chao’s demeanour was as mighty as before.

“Why are you still talking so much? There is nothing for us to talk about. Strike now!”

Jiang Chen didn’t want to waste anymore time arguing. Since the both of them were mortal enemies, only one of them would live if they encountered each other.

As Jiang Chen’s voice faded, the Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand. The current power of the sword was a lot stronger than before because another fragment was integrated with the sword. The Qi of the sword was getting closer to the pinnacle form

it used to have. Besides, the Qi of the sword would only get stronger as Jiang Chen advanced further.

Swoosh

The Heavenly Saint Sword was swung, the light of the sword turned into a brilliant heavenly river across the sky. It reached Nan Bei Chao in a split second.

“Monarch Heaven Art, First Style Ultimate Kill.”

Nan Bei Chao didn't dare to loosen his guard against Jiang Chen. He immediately struck out one of his strongest attacks. A dazzling dragon monarch roared and charged at Heavenly Saint Sword's attack. It was like a dragon that had come to life, a divine dragon with a mighty Qi.

“This technique again? Unfortunately it is useless against me.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk. He had become very familiar with Nan Bei Chao's techniques. First Style Ultimate Kill was one of the strongest attacks in his Monarch Heaven Art. However, the power of this technique was still many times stronger than the attack of Nan Bei Chao from Saint Origin World.

It was true that Nan Bei Chao's First Style Ultimate Kill had been enhanced enormously, however, Jiang Chen was no longer that Jiang Chen in Mysterious Domain.

Chi La

The Heavenly Saint Sword was too sharp. Its body was like a dragon. A sound of ‘Chi La’ was heard as the sword collided with the dragon monarch. Then, the dragon monarch was severed in half. The dragon monarch was absolutely defenceless.

“Nan Bei Chao, I have already understood all of your techniques. Use your powerful Eternal Immortal Wind and Immortal Armour. There is no need to hide them anymore.”

Jiang Chen’s dark hair fluttered. His body was illuminated with a golden light, making him like a peerless war god.

“What?”

Nan Bei Chao exclaimed. That was a shock that he couldn’t put into words. He had never seen a man like Jiang Chen before. It was true that he could feel a sense of familiarity from Jiang Chen but his understanding wasn’t as deep as Jiang Chen’s.

“Haha! This brat is surely going to face a tragic end.”

Big Yellow was laughing happily from afar. The course of the battle was obvious. Although Nan Bei Chao was strong, Jiang Chen was stronger after advancing to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint. Nan Bei Chao was no match for him.

“Eternal Immortal Wind, Immortal Armour.”

Nan Bei Chao quickly struck out another attack and put up a defence. In fact, he was feeling slightly regretful in his heart. Like what Jiang Chen had said, he should have attacked when Jiang Chen was still in King City or back when they first met in Dark Surge City. Back then, Jiang Chen was merely a tiny Third Grade Minor Saint. He could easily crush Jiang Chen with his hands. Now, it seemed like he had allowed his enemy to grow beyond his power.

Hong Long

The powerful immortal wind was turned into a hell-like windstorm. The vibration of the strong roar shook the sky above. Every gust of immortal wind was like a sharp weapon, cutting the void into pieces. Its degree of destruction was indescribable.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.”

Jiang Chen went wild as well. Fighting with Nan Bei Chao would always boil his blood. Since the completion of the five elements, the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal had become Jiang Chen’s greatest technique. Fifteen dragons with different colors rushed out with a roar and a Qi that could wreak havoc. It totally pulverized Nan Bei Chao’s Eternal Immortal Wind.

Bang

Ultimately, Nan Bei Chao still lost to Jiang Chen. The impact from the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal sent him flying

away, he spurted out blood in mid-air.

This was Nan Bei Chao. If it was an ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint, he would instantly be pulverized by the force of the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.

“Immortal Wind Barrier.”

Nan Bei Chao’s blonde hair fluttered as he casted the Eternal Immortal Wind again to form an indestructible barrier. It was also a barrier with powerful offensive strength and boundless energy, similar to a tsunami. It then charged at Jiang Chen.

“It’s useless, you are no match for me.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. He swung his Heavenly Saint Sword at the Eternal Immortal Wind barrier.

“Break it!”

Jiang Chen bellowed. A matchless destructive force was sent out from the edge of the sword. The defensive barrier couldn’t withstand the attack and was ripped to pieces on the spot.

Bang

It created a detrimental backlash to Nan Bei Chao and he was sent flying away again. Right now, he looked totally distressed. He

spurted out a few mouthful of blood. His face turned deathly white. If it wasn't for the Immortal Armor which had absorbed a portion of the damage, he would have died under this attack.

“Impossible. This is absolutely impossible. How could I be weaker than you?”

Nan Bei Chao muttered. He wouldn't dare believe that this was true. Given his techniques and strength, how could he possibly be defeated by a Sixth Grade Minor Saint? This would be the biggest joke under the heavens. He was the possessor of Immortal Soul, a high and mighty being that could defeat anybody of a similar grade.

The thing that irritated Nan Bei Chao the most was that Jiang Chen knew all of his techniques and skills. His opponent was able to find the weak spot and break any skills that he casted regardless of how powerful the skill was, but he knew nothing about his opponent. This was no doubt an incredibly scary thing.

“Jiang Chen, I will never forget today's incident. I hope that we would have a chance to meet again next time.”

Nan Bei Chao finished his sentence and was about to leave with a sway. He had already used his strongest attacks but it couldn't do any harm to Jiang Chen. The smartest thing to do in such a scenario was to flee, continuing to fight would only be pointless. All of his plans in Void Triangular Domain were in vain. He originally thought that he could get all the fortune here, but he got nothing in the end.

Hua La

The Five Elemental Sphere instantly encompassed Nan Bei Chao. It would be a serious joke if Jiang Chen allowed Nan Bei Chao to flee. Although he wasn't sure how many Nan Bei Chaos' were there, he must kill one when he met one.

“Trying to leave now? I'm afraid that you won't have the chance.”

Jiang Chen lunged and swung his Heavenly Saint Sword. It reached Nan Bei Chao in a few blinks. His attack was at maximum speed. A large fiery spark was created on the Immortal Armor.

“You can't break my Immortal Armor.”

Nan Bei Chao yelled, but the moment his voice faded, he saw a slash on his Immortal Armor. A long wound that was deep enough to see his bones were left on his chest. Blood was gushing out from it like a fountain.

“Argh...”

Nan Bei Chao let out a wail. He definitely could not believe that this was real. He knew very well how divine his Immortal Armor was, but his opponent was still able to cut through it.

“Like I said, you will die for sure.”

Jiang Chen moved like a shadow. He then appeared in front of Nan Bei Chao again. With a slash of the Heavenly Saint Sword, it created thousands of sword light and formed a large sword web that encompassed Nan Bei Chao. When the sharp sword web slashed forth, it severed Nan Bei Chao into halves.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen quickly struck out the True Dragon Palm Seal, knowing that Nan Bei Chao could still flee and survive despite being ripped to pieces. His large blood-red dragon claw formed a firm cage, containing Nan Bei Chao's severed body parts. Then, he incinerated Nan Bei Chao with his True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire.

Hua La

When Jiang Chen kept his Five Elemental Sphere and flames, the void returned to its usual peace. There wasn't a trace left on the spot where Nan Bei Chao was incinerated. He was just like the Nan Bei Chao in Saint Origin World, dying without leaving a single particle behind.

“Two Nan Bei Chaos' have died under your hands, I'm not sure how many more Nan Bei Chaos' are left under the heavens.”

Big Yellow came to Jiang Chen's side and said.

“I don't think that we would be able to meet the other Nan Bei

Chaos' even if there are more in the other worlds. When I ascend to the Immortal World, I would be able to meet the true Nan Bei Chao. Alright. The matters in this domain is over and resolved. We can leave now.”

With a sway, Jiang Chen turned back into his original form. Then, the both of them vanished after a blink.

This war had shaken up a the people of the Dark Generation. Initially, they had placed their hopes on the blonde man. None of them thought that they would only face disappointment in the end. Jiang Chen was just too powerful. He was a ‘ plague’, a disastrous star and a devil king. They couldn’t hope to have revenge on him, but hoped for him to leave their domain as soon as possible. There wouldn’t be peace if he continued to stay here.

“Big Yellow, let’s find the portal of the Boundless and Black Yellow and destroy it. Then, we will destroy the linking point of Saint Origin World. From now on, there will be no more major trading event in Void Triangular Domain.”

Jiang Chen said. Given his ability, it would be very simple to find the linking points of the three worlds and destroy them. The major trading event this time caused destruction to Void Triangular Domain and unimaginable losses to the Dark Generation due to Jiang Chen’s arrival. Jiang Chen was going to destroy all the portals to the other worlds, leaving the Dark Generation here to live on their own.

Chapter 863 - Destroying the Spatial Passageway

Near the spatial node of the Boundless World, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were drifting in mid-air. The Heavenly Saint Sword was shining brilliantly. The spatial node ahead was like a land of chaos. They could see and feel the whirlwinds of energy that was spilling out of the spatial node.

“This is the spatial node that connects to the Boundless World.”

Big Yellow said.

“Move back a little.”

Jiang Chen instructed Big Yellow to retreat. He then raised his Heavenly Saint Sword and slashed at the spatial node and the whirlwind of energy.

Hong Long

The void was damaged. The whirlwind was pulverized by the sword and the spatial node was destroyed. The passageways that was connected to this spatial node crumbled. From this moment on, the experts of the Boundless World could no longer locate the coordinates of Void Triangular Domain.

One should know that the spatial node was formed by nature.

Experts from the different major powers could only open passageways that was connected to a certain spatial node. When the spatial node was destroyed, the passageways created would be destroyed as well. Fundamentally, it would be impossible to connect these two worlds.

After destroying the spatial node of the Boundless World, they proceeded to the spatial node of the Black Yellow World. Similarly, Jiang Chen had gotten rid of the spatial node. Henceforth, the experts from the Boundless and Black Yellow World could no longer go to Void Triangular Domain.

Later, a man and a dog came to the spatial node of Saint Origin World.

“Big Yellow, find the passageway to Demon Race and use the formation to protect it. All the passageways will be destroyed once I destroy the spatial node. If the passageway of Demon Race is destroyed as well, we won’t be able to return.”

Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow.

“Even if I can create another passageway back to Demon Race, the destruction of the spatial node will tremendously affect the stability of the passageway. I’m afraid it wouldn’t last until we return to Saint Origin World.”

Big Yellow sounded worried.

“It’s okay. The Demon Race would be able to feel it when the passageway is damaged. Golden Fur Lion King should have returned to the Demon Race and told the Peacock King about the incidents here. Peacock King would certainly help us to stabilize the passageway.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright, let’s do this.”

Big Yellow licked his mouth. Accomplishing a great task with Jiang Chen was always a stimulating thing.

At the present moment, in Saint Origin World, Pure Land, Spiritual Space Mountain, Demon Race.

This was the sacred land of the Demon Race. The area of the Spiritual Space Mountain was thousands of miles large. To everyone in the Pure Land, this place represented one thing – formidable.

The Demon Race was one of the eight families. It was a very formidable family. There was mist lingering above the mountain, making it look like a fairyland. Many buildings were built in the air. There was an ancient palace and a supreme ancient tower floating above the golden summit. Seven different colors of light illuminated from the other buildings, showing the Qi of the Demon Race perfectly.

In the Spiritual Space Main Hall, there were five to six powerful experts. Frightening Qi was exuded from their bodies. They were the Great Saints of the Demon Race, experts with supreme status. The Peacock King was sitting among them. On the highest seat was a middle-aged man with a sturdy physique. His body was filled with a sharp Qi, especially his glittering eyes that looked like a wild and intractable wolf.

His name was Lang Xingtian, the patriarch of the Demon Race, the true master of the Spiritual Space Mountain. He was also the leader of the Heavenly Wolf Race. The Heavenly Wolf Race was the ruler of the wolves, they possessed an unusual bloodline and enthusiasm to fight. It was a renowned race in the Demon Race.

The other few were the strongest in their races. All of them supported the patriarch very much. At this moment, at the center of the main hall, Golden Fur Lion King stood respectfully. The Spiritual Space Main Hall was a place of discussion for the mighty Great Saint experts. This was the first time that Golden Fur Lion King entered the hall. So, it was impossible for him not to feel nervous when he entered.

Lang Xingtian was an honorable master. He seldom asked about the matters of the Demon Race. Also, his presence in this hall was very little. The Peacock King would resolve most of the matters on his behalf. However, when he heard the Golden Fur Lion King talking about the incidents in Void Triangular Domain, he was shaken immediately.

“Golden Fur Lion King, are you telling the truth?”

The Peacock King looked at Golden Fur Lion King.

“Patriarch, Peacock King, Golden Lion would not dare lie in front of you two. That Jiang Chen has certainly eradicated all the Ninth Grade Minor Saints in Void Triangular Domain. He promised that he will give 500 million high grade True Meta Stones to our Demon Race.”

Golden Fur Lion King told them all the incidents related to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in Void Triangular Domain.

“Haha! He is truly a rare genius. Back in Western Domain, this brat has eradicated the Heavenly Sect even when he was only a Third Grade Minor Saint. He could kill those Seventh Grade Minor Saint elders with ease. I never thought that he would create such a world-shaking incident in Void Triangular Domain. I like the way he does things.”

The Peacock King laughed happily. Back when he first saw Jiang Chen, he knew that Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary person. He didn't know that he had even underestimated Jiang Chen.

“But this man has totally offended the Desolate Family. I'm afraid that they wouldn't let this matter slip away easily even if we protect him.”

A Great Saint said.

“What are you afraid of? Our race has never feared anything.

Besides, this brat has a good rapport with the Gu Family. You all should know very well about the circumstances in the Pure Land. Although there wasn't a huge difference in the overall strengths among the eight families, the difference in authority is obvious in Saint Origin Hall. Currently, the Desolate Family has controlled the majority of the resources in Saint Origin Hall. If this development was allowed to continue, it is only a matter of time before families were devoured by the Desolate Family one by one. If there is someone who is like the Greatest Saint a hundred years ago who can amend these circumstances, the outcome would be very pleasant. So, protecting Jiang Chen won't bring any disadvantages to us. This man can still grow exponentially. No one could determine his future. I believe that the Gu Family has seen this through as well."

The Peacock King said.

"Peacock King is right. If Golden Lion is telling the truth, that man is truly a rare genius. He is strong enough to compete with those geniuses of Sky Ranking at his current strength. We can certainly ally with someone like him. Plus, we are also nurturing Big Yellow to become the patriarch in the future. According to Golden Lion, Big Yellow and Jiang Chen are sworn brothers. So, if we don't provide aid to Jiang Chen, I'm afraid that Big Yellow will leave our race because of anger."

A middle-aged man in emperor robe said. He was the patriarch of the Lion Race. He had the same cultivation as the Peacock King, Fourth Grade Great Saint.

"Patriarch, what do you think?"

Peacock King looked over at Lang Xingtian.

“Putting Jiang Chen aside, Big Yellow is a gift richly endowed with a Divine Beast Bloodline. Only he can lead the future of the Demon Race. Whether it is Desolate Family, the other families or the Saint Origin Hall, the Pure Land has been quiet for so long. It is time to turn it lively again.”

Lang Xingtian said with a smile. He was crystal clear about the circumstances among the eight families. The Desolate Family has grown stronger and the Pure Land had been silent for a very long time. Today, Jiang Chen’s actions in Void Triangular Domain had disrupted the usual silence. This was what the Demon Race longed to see all along.

Although Lang Xingtian didn’t express his direct agreement in aiding Jiang Chen, his words ‘it’s time to turn lively again’ had undoubtedly shown his agreement. As the king of the Heavenly Wolf, he was born with the nature to fight. Because of this, the aggressive nature of the Demon Race would never be forgotten.

Meanwhile in the Desolate Family.

Similarly, a discussion was happening in their main hall. The atmosphere in the Desolate Family was different from the Demon Race. The elders and disciples who returned from Void Triangular Domain were standing in the middle of the main hall. Their souls were shivering due to the strong pressure in their surrounding. They stooped like kids who had made mistakes.

They were just like the Golden Fur Lion King, it was their first time to come to this place. They were unqualified to enter this hall in the normal days. It would be a great honor for those below the Great Saint realm to enter the main hall, but currently, they weren't feeling any of that. They wouldn't have dreamt that they would be standing in the main hall in an awkward and apprehensive way.

The incident that happened in Void Triangular Domain had shaken up all people in the Desolate Family. Not only the Great Saint elders, even the patriarch, Desolate Yuntian was also shocked to hear the news. He was a middle-aged man in purple clothes, standing at the highest position. He was wearing a cape on his shoulders. His eyes exuded an intimidating aura. The Qi that exuded from him wasn't any weaker than the king of the Heavenly Wolf, Lang Xingtian.

At this moment, his face was filled with rage. He couldn't help but feel angry. The Desolate Family was one of the rulers of Saint Origin World for so many years. They had never suffered any losses since the fall of the Greatest Saint a hundred years ago. No one had ever challenged their dignity in public. One should know that Desolate Nanyang represented the entire Desolate Family. Now, Desolate Nanyang, the genius, Desolate Ning and all the Ninth Grade Minor Saints were killed. This was all caused by a single man. They wouldn't have thought that there would be such an audacious man under the heavens.

“Where did this wild person come from? He dares to kill our people? This is insane. We must have our revenge, or else, we would lose all of our reputation.”

“Jiang Chen. The guy back then was also called Jiang Chen. Do all Jiang Chens’ have such an insane mind?”

“I don’t care what his name is, he is surely going to die.”

.....

The inner circle of the Desolate Family were stirred up by the news, including the Great Saints. For over a hundred of years of dominating the world, nothing like this had ever happened.

Chapter 864 - The Duel on Spiritual Space Mountain

There was no way for them to calm their anger. The things that Jiang Chen did had crossed their line. Losing many Ninth Grade Minor Saints and Desolate Nanyang wasn't considered a true loss as it would only affect the Desolate Family's reputation slightly. The true loss that they suffered was losing Desolate Ning. He was a young genius with an enormous potential that the Desolate Family hoped to unlock in the future. Otherwise, they wouldn't be willing to give the Saint Bone to him.

“Patriarch, what do you think?”

Someone asked. Everyone shifted their attention to Desolate Yuntian. As the patriarch of the family, he was a being with a prestigious status. He wouldn't take part in most of the matters normally, but today's incident was alarming and enraging.

“That Jiang Chen hasn't returned yet when you all returned. Now, pay attention to every spatial vibration across the entire Divine Continent. When you sense his return through any passageway, immediately chase after him and kill him.”

Desolate Yuntian said in a plain tone, he was a little angry but the coldness in his eyes could freeze an ancient barbaric elephant to death.

Hong Long!

As soon as Desolate Yuntian's words dropped, a loud rumble was heard from the sky. The rumble trembled the entire void above the Desolate Family. They could feel a large movement, intense waves of spatial energy rippled in the void.

“What happened?!”

Desolate Yuntian yelled.

“Patriarch, the passageway to Void Triangular Domain has been destroyed. And, the coordinates of Void Triangular Domain is gone.”

A Great Saint went into the main hall hurriedly and told Desolate Yuntian.

“What?”

Many people exclaimed. It shouldn't be the people of their family who did this. It was also not possible for someone to intrude into their family and destroy the passageway. So, the only explanation was that something had happened in Void Triangular Domain.

“Even the portal to Void Triangular Domain has been destroyed? It seems like the source of the problem is in Void Triangular Domain. It must be that Jiang Chen's doing. He has already obtained a great amount of fortune in that domain so he wanted to destroy the portal of Saint Origin World. I'm afraid that the

passageways of the other families would be destroyed as well.”

An elder who went to Void Triangular Domain said.

He was right about that. The spatial passageway of the Huo, Dan, Narang, Shi, Bin and Gu Family had all been destroyed. Currently, the Huo Family was also doing the same thing as the Desolate Family. They were holding a meeting regarding Jiang Chen when their passageway to Void Triangular Domain crumbled.

In Void Triangular Domain, near the portal of Saint Origin World.

After destroying the portal, the seven passageways to Pure Land crumbled simultaneously, except for the passageway of the Demon Race which remained intact due to Big Yellow’s seal. However, it was still trembling intensely and could crumble any time.

“Little Chen, quickly!”

Big Yellow yelled at Jiang Chen while supporting the entrance of the passageway.

“Coming.”

Jiang Chen kept the Heavenly Saint Sword and jumped into the passageway. The both of them vanished in a blink. A few seconds later, the spatial passageway crumbled and turned into a land of ruins.

Meanwhile, the Demon Race also felt the intense trembling of the spatial passageway. The sky above the Spiritual Space Mountain was shaking. Although the passageway hasn't crumbled yet due to the destruction of the portal, the passageway still looked shaky and would collapse any time soon.

“What has happened?”

Peacock King stood up from his seat.

“It is the passageway to Void Triangular Domain. It seems like the passageway has become unstable and will collapse any time. I have already felt the simultaneous collapse of the passageways of the other seven families. Only the passageway of our race is still intact. It seems like something big has happened in Void Triangular Domain.”

Lang Xingtian's face changed.

“Not good. It must be because Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They must have destroyed the portal of Saint Origin World which caused the passageways to collapse, except the passageway back to our race. We must help stabilize the passageway now or else, they would fall into the turbulent space dimension once the passageway crumbles”

Golden Fur Lion King's expression changed drastically. He had gained a deep understanding about Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They were totally lawless and audacious. There was virtually

nothing that Jiang Chen wouldn't dare to do. He had nearly wiped out all the experts of the Dark Generation and obtained a great fortune. He must have destroyed the spatial node of Saint Origin World in Void Triangular Domain in order to cause such a destruction.

Swoosh

As soon as Golden Fur Lion King's words faded, Peacock King vanished and appeared above the Spiritual Space Mountain. A surge of intense demon Qi soared to the sky, the divine aura of a Fourth Grade Great Saint was unleashed. He was using his powerful power sphere and spatial energy to stabilize the passageway with all of his might.

However, the passageway was still crumbling and would be destroyed sooner or later. Peacock King couldn't hold it for too long despite his strength, but it wouldn't be a problem for him to hold it until Jiang Chen and Big Yellow returned.

“What an awesome brat! He has the disposition and decisiveness in accomplishing great things. I am starting to like him. Haha!”

While Peacock King was stabilizing the passageway, he was also laughing pleasingly. Although he didn't go to Void Triangular Domain, he could still imagine what had happened there. The collapse of the passageways of the seven families indicated that Jiang Chen had destroyed the spatial node of Saint Origin World. Since the emergence of the Greatest Saint roughly a hundred years ago, no one as peerless and as wild as him had ever appeared. When Peacock King first met Jiang Chen, he could already sense

the demeanor of a future Greatest Saint from him.

The inside of the trembling passageway was filled with hurricanes. All of a sudden, the passageway was stabilized and the hurricanes were reduced. It gave Jiang Chen and Big Yellow a sense of relief. It seemed like Peacock King was helping them by preventing the passageway from collapsing. Jiang Chen had already expected this. As long as this spatial path didn't collapse, he and Big Yellow would be able to return to the Demon Race.

“This must be the doing of that old peacock. I have to say, nice work!”

Big Yellow laughed happily. When he thought about the incidents in Void Triangular Domain, it boiled his blood.

“We have to speed up. This passageway isn't going to hold any longer.”

Jiang Chen said. The two of them boosted their speed and moved in a speed of light.

Inside the passageway consisted of rolling energy, especially in a large passageway like this. The usual speed for them to reach Saint Origin World was an hour. After adding the energy inside the passageway and their acceleration, the time taken had been greatly reduced.

However, it wasn't a simple task for the two of them to return

safely. There were some people who wanted them to pay for what they did.

When the patriarch of the Desolate Family, Desolate Yuntian, saw the collapse of the passageways, he integrated his divine sense into the void.

“All of the passageways to the Pure Land were destroyed except for the passageway of the Demon Race.”

Desolate Yuntian said.

“I know now. That Jiang Chen must be using this passageway to return to the Demon Race. Back in Void Triangular Domain, the Demon Race and Gu Family protected that Jiang Chen. If it wasn't because of their interference, Jiang Chen would already be dead back then and none of this would happen.”

Someone in Desolate Family said.

“Humph! He wants to return using the passageway of the Demon Race? That is truly presumptuous. I will eliminate him along with the passageway.”

Desolate Yuntian made a cold humph. Then, he vanished in the sky and appeared near the Spiritual Space Mountain.

Peacock King was still trying his best to stabilize the passageway, when a heavenly giant hand suddenly appeared above the

mountain and grabbed at the direction of the passageway.

“Not good. Someone is attacking the passageway. It’s Desolate Yuntian!”

Peacock King’s face changed drastically. Although he had a powerful cultivation and could dominate the world, there was still a huge difference between him and Desolate Yuntian. He would be no match for him if they engaged in battle.

“Desolate Yuntian, you have the audacity to come to my Spiritual Space Mountain and launch an attack. It seems like you are not putting me, Lang Xingtian, into your eyes.”

At this time, a bellow was heard from the deeper regions of the mountain. A moment later, a giant palm emerged and turned into a dazzling golden claw. That was a terrifying claw of a wolf. It carried a boundless demon Qi before it collided with Desolate Yuntian’s giant hand.

Hong Long!

The clash of Sixth Grade Great Saints were horrifying. It shook the land and the heaven. Despite it being only a normal clash, the force of the impact could still destroy a part of the land or heaven. In other words, if a battle between the supremes—Desolate Yuntian and Lang Xingtian— happened, any impact could pulverised half of the Spiritual Space Mountain.

Anyhow, the Spiritual Space Mountain was the sacred land of the Demon Race after all. The void in the area was strongly protected by a barrier. In addition, the excessive combat waves were deliberately sent away by Lang Xingtian to the turbulent dimensions, nothing on the mountain or on the land was damaged.

A battlefield was created after the collision. Every Great Saint had mastered the spatial energy and power sphere, making incomparable to Minor Saints. So, it would be a very simple task for them to open a battlefield.

Peacock King let out a sigh of relief when he saw Lang Xingtian deflecting Desolate Yuntian's attack, and continued to focus on stabilizing the passageway. He knew Lang Xingtian's ability and behaviour very well. Although Desolate Yuntian was the patriarch of Desolate Family, it wouldn't make Lang Xingtian fear him. If they engaged in a battle, the outcome would be highly likely a draw.

“Desolate Yuntian, you dare to intrude into my territory and launch an attack at my spatial passageway? Are you declaring war on my race?”

Lang Xingtian's Qi was unrivalled. He stood in the void above the Spiritual Space Mountain and his cloak fluttered with the wind. His body was filled with a domineering aura that came from the core of his bones. It was something which couldn't be faked.

Chapter 865 - Six Overlords

As Lang Xingtian's voice faded, the dimension in the void above the Spiritual Space Mountain bent and a sturdy silhouette walked out of the void. In fact, he was standing there all along, but if one didn't have sharp senses, one would see no one there. It was like his body had fully integrated with the void.

This wasn't someone else, he was the patriarch of Desolate Family, Desolate Yuntian. The distance between the Desolate Family and the Spiritual Space Mountain was thousands of miles, but Desolate Yuntian was able to reach here in just several blinks. It only showed how terrifying a Sixth Grade Great Saint was. Speed was no longer his limitation. He was moving in miles per breath. A powerful expert like him could go anywhere across the Pure Land in Divine Continent at his whim.

“Lang Xingtian, all of the passageways to Void Triangular Domain have been already been destroyed, why hasn't yours destroyed yet?”

Desolate Yuntian said.

“This is a matter of the Demon Race. It's not up for you to interfere. Perhaps you are overly concerned about other people's stuff.”

Lang Xingtian didn't show any courtesy.

“Cut down your crap. You should have already known about the

incidents in Void Triangular Domain. That little monster named Jiang Chen is in this passageway now. He is using your passageway to return to Saint Origin World, back to your Demon Race. I suggest you to leave your hands out of this. I will leave as long as this passageway is destroyed!”

Desolate Yuntian bellowed. There were only a few of them across the entire Pure Land who would dare to intrude into the Demon Race and spoke to the king of Heavenly Wolf in such a manner.

“Desolate Yuntian, although you are the patriarch of Desolate Family, this is the Demon Race. Don’t even think that you have any authority here. The things that Demon Race does is not up to anyone to criticize or interfere.”

Lang Xingtian didn’t speak but Peacock King who was stabilizing the passageway, he had lost his patience.

“Peacock King, you don’t have the right to speak to me.”

Desolate Yuntian darted Peacock King a glance.

“F*ck the rights! Let’s just fight, since you refuse to listen.”

Peacock King cursed. His hot temper surged in his body. There was no one that Peacock King wouldn’t dare to offend, let alone the patriarch of Desolate Family which was only two grades higher than him.

“Desolate Yuntian, what Peacock King said is just like what I have said. Whatever we do, outsiders could not interfere about it. If you are capable enough, launch your attacks in my mountains.”

Lang Xingtian’s Qi was overwhelming.

Desolate Yuntian couldn’t help but frown. He didn’t expect that Lang Xingtian would be so resolute in his decision, opposing him just because of an outsider. He didn’t have any other alternatives if the Demon Race insisted to protect Jiang Chen. If he attacked the Demon Race, he was afraid that he wouldn’t gain any benefits.

“Lang Xingtian, I advise you to think this through. I have no idea how many cultivators and families would seek him to avenge their comrades’ death. I’m afraid that my family isn’t the only one. The Huo, Dan, Narang and Shi families would certainly not let him go as well. I’m afraid that your race would be unable to protect him.”

Desolate Yuntian said coldly.

“Let’s not talk about whether the Demon Race could protect Jiang Chen or not. That Jiang Chen is not in our race yet but you already came here to strike us. That only means that you are not putting the Demon Race in your eyes. If you really want a battle, Lang Xingtian would be very willing to do so.”

Lang Xingtian’s Qi fluctuated, and a thick and intense demon Qi rippled outwards.

The big movements had vibrated across the land below the Spiritual Space Mountain. Many of them were looking at the two overlords in the sky, dubious of what had happened.

“What happened? Why did Desolate Yuntian came here and struck us all of a sudden? Isn’t the Desolate Family being too outrageous? And who is Jiang Chen? How come I haven’t heard of him before?”

“Yeah, he is protected by our patriarch. He must be a figure significant enough to cause the patriarch of Desolate Family to come here and attack us personally. But why hadn’t we heard of him before? This doesn’t make any sense.”

“You all haven’t heard about it? That Jiang Chen turned the entire Void Triangular Domain upside down. He has killed all the Ninth Grade Minor Saints of the Desolate and Huo families who went to the domain. He has also killed their geniuses. I heard that Desolate Ning, Huo Yuan and Dan Yuanchong were all killed by him.”

“What? Seriously? Tell me more.”

“It’s the people who went to the major trading event in Void Triangular Domain that told me about this.”

.....

A while later, Jiang Chen’s name had spread very quickly across

the entire Demon Race. His heaven defying deeds in Void Triangular Domain had been discussed excitedly by those who knew it. That kind of world-shaking battle even shook Golden Fur Lion King badly, let alone the others.

“It is truly awesome! I never thought that this Jiang Chen would be this wild. He is truly audacious. All the experts of the five great families were killed by him. No wonder the patriarch of Desolate Family is shaken by the news as well.”

“And this is related to that dog again. I have said that that dog is an unfortunate star. It is frustrating that the patriarch and Peacock King are going to nurture him and make him the next patriarch. That dog has brought a troublemaker to our race. The five families would never let this matter go for killing so many of their experts.”

“Your bloodline (Heavenly Leopard) naturally don’t wish to see Big Yellow becoming the next patriarch. But I admire that Jiang Chen very much. What he did couldn’t be done by any geniuses on the Sky Ranking. They don’t have such an audacity to do such things.”

“Quickly look, seems like some more experts have come.”

.....

The silent atmosphere in the Demon Race turned lively all of a sudden. Many of the discussions were about Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Meanwhile, people saw several experts with powerful Qi flying over their direction.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

The Qi didn't belong only to a single expert. Four powerful experts came from four different directions. They were all middle-aged men that looked about forty years old. They had one similarity, they were all very powerful and their gesture carried an intense aura of superiority.

One of them is redheaded. He wore a fiery long red robe. The Qi that was emanated from his body was like fluttering flames. His eyes would turn red whenever he was infuriated. He was the patriarch of Huo Family, Huo Batian.

The other person was wearing a primitive Dan robe embroidered with a majestically large cauldron. He didn't look very old but his hair had already turned grey. He was the patriarch of Dan Family, Dan Yangtian.

The next person wore a gorgeous long gown and a magnificent crown. His body exuded the aura of wealth, as if he was a lofty emperor. He was the patriarch of Narang Family, named Narang Changtian.

The last person was the sturdiest of all. He is two meters tall and looked as tough as a barbaric bear. His yellow hair danced as the breeze blew, and his muscular body gave the impression of explosive strength. His Qi alone was oppressive. He was the patriarch of Shi Family, Shi Wutian.

All the patriarchs of the eight families had ‘tian’(sky) in the last word of their names. It meant their status was higher than the sky. This was an undeniable fact. Their identity represented a lofty position in the Pure Land.

Desolate Yuntian, Huo Batian, Dan Yangtian, Narang Changtian and Shi Haotian emerged above the Spiritual Space Mountain simultaneously. Adding Lang Xingtian, six out of the eight overlords were present at the same time. This was truly a remarkable sight which rarely happens even in hundreds years of time.

The six of them were superior beings. They rarely showed themselves to the public during normal days. Even the experts of their families would find it very difficult to meet them. Today, however, they were present because of a young man named Jiang Chen.

Many experts in the Demon Race started to feel interested in this Jiang Chen that they had yet to meet. Nothing like this had ever happened before. There weren’t many people who could create such big a movement in the Pure Land. It seemed like this was the first time in a hundred years’ time.

Desolate Yuntian smiled when he saw the emergence of the four overlords.

“Lang Xingtian, do you see it now? I am not the only person who wanted to kill that little monster. I’m afraid that it wouldn’t be that easy for the Demon Race to protect him.”

Desolate Yuntian said in a plain tone.

Presently, the faces of Lang Xingtian, Peacock King and the Great Saints of the Demon Race had already turned ugly. It seemed like what Jiang Chen did had crossed the line of the five families, it even caused their patriarchs to attend the matter personally. So, relying on the sole strength of the Demon Race to protect Jiang Chen had become undoubtedly difficult.

Far away from Demon Race was a group of powerful experts, observing the scene carefully. The leader among them had a leopard head, round eyes and a body of a leopard print. His Qi wasn't any weaker than Lang Xingtian. He was the king of the Heavenly Leopard.

The Demon Race was divided into two parties. One party was led by the king of the Heavenly Wolf, while the other party was led by the king of the Heavenly Leopard. Although the king of the Heavenly Wolf was the patriarch of the Demon Race now, the overall strength of the latter party couldn't be underestimated. Both parties' disagreement to unite had caused many arguments and fights over the years.

“That stupid dog really knows how to cause trouble. He has brought a troublemaker, that Jiang Chen back to us.”

A Great Saint beside the king of the Heavenly Leopard said.

“Isn't this good? I really want to see how that Lang Xingtian is

going to protect Jiang Chen under the pressure of the five families.”

The king of the Heavenly Leopard exposed a cold smile on his face.

The atmosphere had become very stern. Although Huo Batian and the other patriarchs didn't speak a word, their gestures were obvious enough to tell that they were here to kill Jiang Chen.

Peacock King couldn't stand it anymore and cursed. Due to the fact that he had to focus on stabilizing the passageway now, he couldn't help much.

“What is the meaning of all of these?”

Lang Xingtian raged.

“Lang Xingtian, you should already know clearly about our intention. Your race is trying to protect that little monster, that is not going to happen.”

Huo Batian's temper was as hot as his surname. (Huo = Fire)

“Lang Xingtian, since you said that Jiang Chen isn't in Demon Race yet, we would just wait here for that little monster to come out of the passageway. I would like to see who this little monster is who had the guts to kill my people.”

Desolate Yuntian said with a smile.

“That’s right. That means we couldn’t just let him die in the passageway. I would also like to see whether he is a person with three heads and six arms.”

Narang Changtian said.

Chapter 866 - The Soaring Heroic Aura

The patriarchs of the five families had expressed themselves very clearly. Their main purpose of coming here was to kill Jiang Chen. The battle in Void Triangular Domain that was caused by Jiang Chen had brought too much losses to them. They wanted Jiang Chen dead even if they were just doing this for their reputation's sake.

Today, the passageways of the seven families had already been destroyed. The only remaining one was the passageway in the Demon Race. This was because Peacock King was still supporting it with all of his might. It was clear to them that Jiang Chen was on his way back using this passageway. In that case, they just needed to stay here and wait for his return. As long as Jiang Chen appeared in the Demon Race, they would find a reason to pressure them. More importantly, like what Desolate Yuntian and Narang Changtian had said, they wanted to see what kind of person this Jiang Chen was and how did he have such guts to do such outrageous things.

Lang Xingtian and Peacock King's facial expression became slightly unpleasant. The current scenario had become difficult to handle. The opponents wouldn't attack before Jiang Chen appeared, but once he appeared, they would certainly exert pressure on their race. Adding the rebellious party in the Demon Race into the picture, the task of protecting Jiang Chen had become a very challenging one.

Right now, Peacock King had to focus all his efforts in stabilizing the passageway, or else, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow would be lost in the unknown turbulent dimension when the passageway

cracked and crumbled. As for how were they going to deal with these five overlords, he only could figure out a solution once Jiang Chen and Big Yellow return.

Currently, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were flying madly in the passageway at maximum speed. Adding their speed and the rolling flow of energy in the passageway, they would be able to reach Saint Origin World in half an hour's time.

“Little Chen, you have killed so many experts in that domain. Their families in the Pure Land would certainly not let you live.”

Big Yellow looked over at Jiang Chen.

“Act according to the situation.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled with brilliance. The situation would never be peaceful the moment he returned to Saint Origin World this time. The Desolate Family would surely be the first one to seek him. He didn't have a plan for them yet. He could only walk on whatever step that was presented to him at the moment.

However, they wouldn't have thought that the patriarchs of the other five families were also waiting for their arrival in Demon Race. It was a scenario that he couldn't escape from.

Three groups gathered above the Spiritual Space Mountain. The first group was Lang Xingtian and Peacock King. Their priority was to ensure Jiang Chen's safety. The second group was the patriarchs

of the five great families. They were here to kill Jiang Chen. The third group was the bloodline of Heavenly Leopard. They didn't get along with the bloodline of Heavenly Wolf. They were a group of bystanders that would do nothing but watch the show.

Half an hour passed very quickly, the passageway of the Demon Race trembled abruptly and waves of spatial energy rippled in the void above the Spatial Space Mountain.

“They are back!”

Everyone's expression changed and shifted their attention to the spot where the spatial energy was the greatest. Peacock King immediately released his exertion of the passageway. Then, two deep sounds were heard, and two silhouettes bounced out of the spatial passageway.

The force the passageway exerted was very great but the two who were bounced out were obviously powerful enough to stabilize themselves. They were a man and a dog. The man was around twenty-year-old with a good looking face. He was wearing a saintly snow-white clothes. His eyes were glittering brilliantly. If you looked closer into his eyes, they looked like a chasm.

To the experts of the Demon Race, they had already seen Big Yellow before. They found nothing unfamiliar on him, so nearly all of them shifted their attention to Jiang Chen. They were stunned when they got a clear look of Jiang Chen's face. They expected to see a malicious looking face and a body that was as sturdy as a bear, an extremely audacious and wild man. They hadn't thought that this mad man would be an elegant young

prince. They wouldn't believe it if they didn't saw it with their own eyes.

“Is that him? Is that white-clothed young man Jiang Chen?”

“It is unimaginable to think that a prince-like young man like him is a wild devil who killed all the experts of the five families.”

“I heard that he has gotten rid of all the Ninth Grade Minor Saint experts with his cultivation grade of only Fifth Grade Minor Saint. I can't imagine a person as young as him who could achieve such a heaven defying achievement. Not even the greatest genius of the Demon Race could match with his results.”

.....

All the people of the Demon Race were astonished, including Lang Xingtian and Desolate Yuntian. They wouldn't have thought that the person they were expecting to see was actually a young genius.

“He is truly young, but he has an extraordinary Qi that circulates indistinctly in his body. He is a son of the heaven which has the demeanour of a dragon. Someone like him will certainly achieve great things in the future.”

Although this was the first time that Lang Xingtian has seen Jiang Chen, he regarded Jiang Chen highly. The same thing happened to Desolate Yuntian and the others. However, the

greater the potential of Jiang Chen is, the stronger their desire to eliminate him. If they couldn't subdue this genius, they must certainly eliminate him, not to mention that they have already viewed each other as enemies.

“Motherf*cker! What's happening here? Why did the atmosphere become so stifling?”

Big Yellow swept around and said.

“Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, they are the patriarchs from the five families. They've come here to kill Jiang Chen.”

Peacock King came to their side and told them everything via divine sense.

“Dammit! The patriarchs of the five families are present here at the same time? Did the situation really required their presence?”

Big Yellow spurted out a mouthful of blood. He had already predicted that the five families wouldn't let Jiang Chen go, but he hadn't expected that they would come so quickly. The moment they arrived, they have encountered such a situation before they could even gasp for a breath of relief. It seemed like these five overlords had already waited here for quite some time.

Jiang Chen gazed at Desolate Yuntian and the other patriarchs. His mouth revealed a cold smirk. Back when he dominated the Pure Land, none of them were the patriarchs of their families.

Thus, they were only as little as a shrimp in his eyes.

What raised Jiang Chen's doubts was that the patriarchs of the eight families were supposed to be peak Ninth Grade Great Saint experts. They were the strongest cultivators in this world, but these patriarchs in front of him were only Sixth Grade Great Saints. How was this possible?

Despite his doubts, he had to put them aside for now because a Sixth Grade Great Saint was definitely deadly to him. He was merely a Sixth Grade Minor Saint now. The difference was like the distance between the heavens and the earth, it was totally incomparable. If these people wanted him dead, he wouldn't be able to escape his fate even if he exhausted all of his techniques.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

Desolate Yuntian said while his eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen.

“That's right.”

Jiang Chen made a step forward to the king of the Heavenly Wolf, Lang Xingtian and greeted him. “Jiang Chen meet patriarch.”

“En, not bad.”

Lang Xingtian couldn't help but praise. It was rare to find a young man with such Qi, cultivation, audaciousness and

composure. He could still remain composed while facing the patriarchs of the five families. It gave Lang Xingtian the urge to show his approval of Jiang Chen. He could discern that Jiang Chen's composure wasn't just a pretence.

“Little monster, you had the nerve to kill so many experts from my Huo Family. Who gave you such wild guts?”

Huo Batian yelled at Jiang Chen with his undisguised murderous intent.

“Huo Batian, don't forget that this is the Demon Race. Do you really want to kill someone here on the Spiritual Space Mountain?”

After studying Jiang Chen, Lang Xingtian had decided to protect Jiang Chen with all his means and efforts. If the Demon Race stayed out of this matter, Jiang Chen would face only one outcome—death. If that happens, Big Yellow would go mad. Although the Demon Race could afford to lose Jiang Chen, they couldn't afford to lose Big Yellow.

“Humph! Lang Xingtian, the five of us have arrived here at the same time. Do you really want to protect this little monster? I'm afraid that you alone would be unable to do that.”

Shi Haotian let out a cold humph.

Meanwhile, Desolate Yuntian, Narang Changtian and Dan

Yantian expressed their murderous intent as well.

“Lang Xingtian, Jiang Chen has already appeared in the Demon Race. I am sure that you already know our intention of coming here very well. If the five of us combined our powers, I’m afraid that no one in your race would be able to defend it!”

Desolate Yuntian yelled.

“You...”

Lang Xingtian was enraged but there was nothing that he could do. He knew it very well in his heart that it was fundamentally impossible to protect Jiang Chen now. Since these five patriarchs had come here personally, they wouldn’t leave without gaining a desirable result, but if they started a battle here, it would be disadvantageous to the Demon Race.

The king of Heavenly Leopard who was watching from a distance while smiling coldly. He would like to see how Lang Xingtian would resolve today’s matter. If the Spiritual Space Mountain suffered any damages because of Lang Xingtian’s decision, he would go to the Saint Origin Hall and use this excuse to request them to relieve Lang Xingtian’s duty in the Demon Race and letting him succeed the position of patriarch. To the king of Heavenly Leopard, this was a golden opportunity.

“Lang Xingtian, we don’t have a lot of time. I will give you ten breaths of time more to reconsider your decision. If you still refused to hand over Jiang Chen by then, we will strike.”

Desolate Yuntian said loudly.

“Patriarch, what do we do now?”

Peacock King frowned. The present situation was really troublesome. Their decision would not only affect Jiang Chen's life, it would also affect the circumstances of the Demon Race, or even the circumstances of the entire Pure Land, igniting a war.

As soon as Peacock King's words dropped, Jiang Chen took the initiative to stand out. He waved his sleeve and yelled to the five patriarch with heroic spirit: “No need for ten breaths' of time. I am standing here now. I will stand here for all of you to kill. The five of you can just attack together to avenge your experts' death , I won't resist because I know that I am no match for any of you. Resistance would only be useless. I won't frown even if you kill me. I, Jiang Chen, would certainly be a heroic figure. I, a mere Sixth Grade Minor Saint junior, could make the five patriarchs personally kill me.”

Chapter 867 - A New Chapter for the Young Generation

Jiang Chen's demeanour was imposing, it was a demeanour that ignored life and death. His composure made countless of people drop their tongues out, including Lang Xingtian and Peacock King. No one had ever imagined that Jiang Chen would stand out and make such a declaration.

It was heroic. That's right. His action was full of heroic aura. All of the young generation from the Demon Race showed their approval for Jiang Chen. This action was able to impress everybody.

However, the sharper ones could detect the underlying meaning in Jiang Chen's words. He sounded like a true hero who was willing to die for his own actions, but there was a hidden implication within his remark. It was this implication that threw the five overlords into a dilemma.

After Jiang Chen spoke, Big Yellow and Peacock King's facial expression changed. They had the intelligence to understand Jiang Chen's intention, especially Big Yellow. He and Jiang Chen had been working together for quite a long time now, and both of them had a good understanding of each other.

“Haha! This is really funny. The patriarchs of the Desolate, Dan, Huo, Narang and Shi families came here personally just to kill a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. This is truly an act of a ‘great’ overlord.”

Big Yellow laughed happily.

“That’s right. With your status and identity, it is truly shameless to come here personally just to besiege a junior. Jiang Chen is standing here for you all to kill now. We can’t stop you all anyway.”

Peacock King was blunt with his words. His words made a lot of people understand Jiang Chen’s message and it impressed them once more. They had to admit that this young man was the shrewdest person here. He was able to change his situation with just a few line of words. The original circumstance was obvious. If they chose to confront these overlords head on, they would not be able to protect Jiang Chen, but the moment Jiang Chen stood out and said those words, the situation changed entirely.

The five patriarchs personally came here just to kill Jiang Chen and regain their dignity and face, but if they were going to surround a junior and kill him, it would certainly hurt their reputation. They would certainly become a laughing stock, they were not only carrying the status of a Sixth Grade Great Saint but also the status and identity of a patriarch of their respective families. They have plenty of ways to kill Jiang Chen aside from personally coming here.

Lang Xingtian showed a praising look at Jiang Chen. This was a man with courage and cunningness. He was incomparable to any ordinary young cultivators. Today’s incident was destined to be a failure. He was afraid that not even him using his full power would be able to change the outcome and save Jiang Chen, however, with just a few words, Jiang Chen was able to change the situation

entirely.

The five overlords couldn't ignore the fact that their reputations were also at stake here. Given the fact that so many people were watching them, they would lose the impression of a graceful bearing, which was something that they couldn't afford to lose.

Sure enough, after listening to Peacock King and Big Yellow's remarks, Desolate Yuntian and the others began to hesitate and frown. The reason that they were here was because of their rage, however, they hadn't thought of the consequences before coming here. Currently, Jiang Chen was still standing in front of them but none of them dared to attack due to hesitation. If there were no people around, they would just straightaway slap Jiang Chen to death. However, with so many people watching them, it had become impossible because their reputation was more precious than Jiang Chen.

“What an intelligent kid.”

The king of Heavenly Leopard was astonished. He hadn't expected that just a few simple line of words could turn the situation around.

“This Jiang Chen is really extraordinary. He is very clever in understanding and making judgments about a situation.”

“Look, the five patriarchs are hesitating now. They have to take care of their reputation. If they killed Jiang Chen now they might as well forget about their reputation.”

“They are now caught in a dilemma. They couldn’t kill Jiang Chen and couldn’t let him go either, they would lose their dignity if they retreated just because of a few lines of words from a junior.”

.....

A great deal of experts in the Demon Race couldn’t help but be impressed by Jiang Chen’s action, however, these few lines of words was obviously not enough to resolve the real situation.

At this time, Big Yellow spoke.

“I know that as a patriarch and an overlord, your reputation is very important. Killing a young junior with your own hands would only show that your family lacks young geniuses and talents. It would also tarnish your image. In all the families of Pure Land, I’m sure that there are countless of geniuses. I won’t believe that none of you can find a genius that could fight against Jiang Chen. I am now declaring war on the geniuses of the five families. As long as you all can pick a genius to fight Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen would accept the challenge unconditionally.”

In fact, what Big Yellow said weighed a lot. It virtually solved all the problems. If these patriarchs attack Jiang Chen now, it wouldn’t only affect their reputation, but also the competence of their geniuses. The fact that their geniuses couldn’t handle a Sixth Grade Minor Saint would become the biggest joke of the world.

Big Yellow’s words pointed against the peerless geniuses of the

Pure Land. This was a direct challenge to them. It was imaginable how excited those geniuses would be, especially those on the Sky Ranking, killing Jiang Chen would be a golden opportunity to earn a great merit. It was also similar to Jiang Chen. This battle would be a good chance for him to test his ability. Fighting with peerless geniuses would certainly be much more exciting than fighting those Ninth Grade Minor Saints in Void Triangular Domain.

This solution was just like hitting two birds in one stone. It was also what Jiang Chen had been thinking. It had become perfect when this was said by Big Yellow instead of Jiang Chen.

“That’s right. I, Jiang Chen, am issuing a direct challenge to all the geniuses of the Pure Land. I will accept the challenge of anyone who wants me dead.”

Jiang Chen added after Big Yellow reaffirmed his decision.

“Haha! Patriarchs, what do you all think? Are you still going to kill Jiang Chen yourselves or send your geniuses to fight him? Or perhaps your geniuses don’t have the guts to fight Jiang Chen?”

Peacock King laughed.

“What a joke. He is only a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. Desolate Family have countless of geniuses that could kill him.”

Desolate Yuntian made cold humph. Desolate Family was the leading family out of the eight families in the Pure Land. Out of the

ten places on the Sky Ranking, three geniuses of Desolate Family had been listed whereas the other seven families only had one each. As such, Desolate Family had the most talents.

“Fine. Since you have said it, the conflict between you all and Jiang Chen would be resolved by the younger generations. The Demon Race will never get involved in the battle amongst the young cultivators.”

Lang Xingtian quickly expressed his intention.

“Humph! Little monster! Consider yourself lucky today. Since you have offended my family, it’s only a matter of time before you die.”

Desolate Yuntian let out another cold humph, implying his agreement towards the matter, the conflict would be settled by the young geniuses.

“Alright. We will leave it to the younger generations to settle. I would like to see whether you are really matchless amongst them.”

Huo baitian said.

Narang Changtian, Shi Haotian and Shi Yangtuan also nodded in agreement. They agreed not to attack at Jiang Chen for the sake of their reputation. Secondly, they couldn’t admit that their geniuses were incompetent. Lastly, this was the territory of the Demon Race. If a battle really occurred here, no one knew how it would

develop, the Demon Race was not a race that could be easily handled.

More importantly, they had been wanting to test the ability of their geniuses. Jiang Chen's appearance had given their geniuses the chance to do that. When this news spread out, Jiang Chen would be well known across the world. At the same time, anyone who could kill Jiang Chen would establish a great reputation.

This would certainly be a life-and-death trial. Many of the geniuses were trained in a protected environment. Despite their outstanding talents, they had very limited combat experience. They could gain such an experience through fighting against Jiang Chen.

Since they had already decided not to kill Jiang Chen, they didn't need to say anything or stay any longer. They left the Spiritual Space Mountain and vanished.

Lang Xingtian and Peacock King let out sigh of relief. They wouldn't have thought that the predicament would be easily resolved. Although the patriarchs had already left, the Pure Land wouldn't have any more peaceful days from today onwards. Many extraordinary geniuses that no one had seen before would emerge to fight against Jiang Chen.

“Haha! Jiang Chen, I surely didn't judge you wrongly. You are a man with courage and shrewdness. You would surely become a great cultivator in the future. However, I have to say that those geniuses on Sky Ranking would not be easy opponents. Every one of them is only half a step away from the Great Saint realm. All of

them have powerful techniques and trump cards. You have to be careful when fighting them.”

Peacock King patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder and said.

“That’s right. Although the crisis today has been resolved, it wouldn’t be easy to handle those geniuses. Even though you are able to kill Ninth Grade Minor Saints, those geniuses are not ordinary Minor Saints. Even if they aren’t Great Saints yet, they are incomparable to their peers.”

Lang Xingtian said.

“Thank you very much for patriarch and Peacock King’s help and advice. Jiang Chen is very grateful. As for those geniuses, it doesn’t and won’t concern me. They have to be prepared enough if they want to kill me.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated. His blood boiled when he thought about fighting those geniuses on the Sky Ranking.

“Big Yellow, bring the items out.”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow opened his mouth and spat out a spatial ring that was

illuminated by a golden light. It drifted in the air towards Lang Xingtian. Everyone could clearly see the movement of this item.

“Patriarch, there is one billion high grade True Meta Stones here. 500 million of them was obtained by Big Yellow, the other 500 million is my token of appreciation to the Demon Race.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“What? One billion high grade True Meta Stones?”

Most of them exclaimed and their eyes sparkled.

Chapter 868 - Saint Origin Palace

“My god, one billion high grade True Meta Stones. That’s equivalent to one billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills. Jiang Chen is truly generous to give one billion of the fortune. This is considered a huge fortune to the Demon Race.”

“He is truly a man of heroic spirit. We haven’t gotten any treasures in the trip to Void Triangular Domain but this one billion high grade True Meta Stones is really rewarding.”

“This Jiang Chen is a man with audacity and heroic demeanour. It is worth it to establish a relationship with a man like him. I like him.”

.....

The experts of Demon Race changed their views on Jiang Chen after the one billion worth of high grade True Meta Stones had been taken out. It was a billion worth of fortune! Who would be willing to donate it to someone?

“Great. Demon Race won’t be polite then.”

Lang Xingtian wasn’t a bashful person. He instantly kept the spatial ring when it reached him. Given his status and identity, he wouldn’t even look at any ordinary Sixth Grade Minor Saint, let alone responding to them. Jiang Chen, however, was different. He was able to see the potential in Jiang Chen. A potential that was similar to the Greatest Saint that had completely changed the

circumstances of Pure Land. Building a relationship with such a man would bring tremendous benefits to Demon Race in the future.

Moments later, Lang Xingtian and Peacock King turned to Big Yellow. Their eyes sparkled when they realized that Big Yellow had advanced to the Fifth Grade Minor Saint.

“You are worthy to be called the Divine Beast Bloodline. Your advancement can’t be defies common sense.”

Lang Xingtian nodded and praised. It made him more determined to nurture Big Yellow.

Far away, the party of Heavenly Leopard King wasn’t looking good. They initially thought that they were going to watch an exciting show. None of them had expected such an outcome would take place.

“Elder, I didn’t imagine that Jiang Chen and the dog will give out a billion high grade True Meta Stones. Now, many people have dramatically changed their views on them. Before this dog went to that domain, he was still a Third Grade Minor Demon Saint. After returning, he had advanced to a Fifth Grade Minor Demon Saint. His incredible speed of advancement had surely reaffirmed the patriarch and Peacock King’s decision in nurturing him. This is unfavorable to us.”

A Great Saint said.

“It doesn’t matter. Three days later will be the day of the opening of the Suspended Tower. At that time, we will find ways to get rid of that dog.”

Heavenly Leopard King said before he turned and left.

That night, Peacock King had personally prepared a site of cultivation for Jiang Chen. It was situated in a very quiet and secluded courtyard where Yan Chenyu, Dan King and Tyrant resided. They were brought here by Golden Fur Lion King before this. They had seen everything that happened during the day while frequently wiping their cold sweat because of the worries and fear for Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen turned out to be fine in the end.

“Brother Chen.”

Yan Chenyu leaped into Jiang Chen’s embrace immediately. She was filled with anxiety throughout the day. She wasn’t able to relieve her anxiety until when she saw Jiang Chen was safe.

“Okay, okay. Aren’t I as good as new now?”

Jiang Chen patted Yan Chenyu’s shoulder.

“Greetings, Peacock King.”

Dan King and Tyrant greeted Peacock King together. Tyrant had a warmer tone as this wasn’t the first time he saw Peacock King. Although Dan King was one of the overlords in Divine Continent,

he couldn't be compared to a supreme expert of Pure Land, like Peacock King. He never imagined that he would have the chance to meet Peacock King's true self in his life.

“You all don't need to be overly courteous to old Peacock. We are one family.”

Big Yellow said. If it was some random person who said such words, he certainly would be slapped incredibly hard.

“Big Yellow, I want to inform you that the patriarch had decided to fully nurture you, but this will attract the inhibition of Heavenly Leopard King. Three days later will be the day of the opening of the Suspended Tower. If you can perform well during that time, you will be able to gain a stable status in Demon Race. Otherwise, you will encounter more problems in the future in Demon Race.”

Peacock King said solemnly to Big Yellow.

“Suspended Tower? What's that place?”

Big Yellow asked.

“It's the Saint Tower of Demon Race that was inherited many years ago. All the geniuses of Demon Race will be able to enter the tower in search for beneficial rewards once a year. There are a total of nine floors in the tower. A great deal of treasure that belongs to Demon Race is hidden inside the tower. There are even

some inheritance left by the ancient ancestors of Demon Race. People who are able to obtain those inheritances are people with great luck, people acknowledged by the ancestors. Those geniuses will naturally be nurtured by Demon Race. However, until now, no one was able to enter the ninth floor, including us. No one knows what's hidden on the ninth floor. We won't demand you to enter the ninth floor, but you have to at least perform well."

Peacock King said, introducing the Suspended Tower to Big Yellow.

Jiang Chen narrowed both of his eyes. Today, Big Yellow giving 500 million high grade True Meta Stones to Demon Race had created a sense of pleasantness in many of them. However, he knew that in order to gain a firm status in Demon Race, Big Yellow had to obtain an inheritance in the Suspended Tower.

"Big Yellow, keep it up."

Yan Chenyu waved her fists at Big Yellow.

"Peacock King, it seems Demon Race isn't united internally."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"That's right. There are basically two parties in Demon Race. The first party is the bloodline of Heavenly Wolf King, he is now the patriarch of Demon Race. The other party is the bloodline of Heavenly Leopard King. His influence is on par with our patriarch.

He had longed for the position of patriarch all this time. Their bloodline does not get along with patriarch's bloodline. Currently, the patriarch wants to nurture Big Yellow. Heavenly Leopard King will naturally try to stop him. If Big Yellow did not produce an outstanding result in the Suspended Tower this time, it will become an excuse for Heavenly Leopard King."

Peacock King said. He didn't feel the need to hide anything from Jiang Chen. The inner circle of Demon Race wasn't a secret. Many outsiders knew about it.

"Don't worry. Master Dog will be able to step into the ninth floor of the tower."

Big Yellow said proudly.

"Motherf*cker! Can you not boast excessively? No one had ever entered the ninth floor before. Do you think you can break the record?"

Peacock King couldn't stand it and kicked Big Yellow's butt.

"Peacock King, there is one thing I don't understand."

Jiang Chen said.

"What is it?"

Peacock King turned to Jiang Chen.

“The eight great families of Pure Land are the strongest forces in Saint Origin World. According to the facts, the strongest experts among them are supposed to be Ninth Grade Great Saints, but today, the highest grade I saw was a Sixth Grade Great Saint. I wonder why that is so.”

Jiang Chen asked. This doubt had been bugging him. During that time when he dominated the world, he knew how strong the eight families were. Sixth Grade Great Saints were nothing at that time, but currently, all the patriarchs were at this grade and they were considered the strongest beings.

“It seems you don’t know the existence of Saint Origin Palace yet.”

Peacock King continued. “But I’m not surprised. Very few people know about this except for the eight families of Pure Land.”

“Saint Origin Palace? What’s that place?”

Jiang Chen frowned. He had never heard of this place before.

“That year, when the Greatest Saint slashed open the gates of Immortal World, it opened up a new path for the Great Saints. At that time, many powerful experts from the eight families rose to the Immortal World to become Immortals. Before they left Saint Origin World, they created a spatial zone, a small world. They

wanted to use the name of Saint Origin World. Thus they named it Saint Origin Palace. That is a world created by Immortals. The density of the heaven and earth Yuan Force in that small world is very great. Those Immortals from the eight great families had also set up a grand formation on that world, allowing it to absorb different kinds of powerful Yuan Force from the void. Over around a hundred years later, Saint Origin Palace had become a sacred land of cultivation in Saint Origin World. It is also a supreme land.”

Peacock King paused for a while before he continued. “Saint Origin Palace has brought a lot of convenience to the eight families. All experts who are above Seventh Grade Great Saint are able to enter the Saint Origin Palace for cultivation. There are also the rare geniuses of the eight families, those young Great Saints enters the Saint Origin Palace to pursue a more advanced cultivation. The Sky Ranking of Pure Land isn’t a correct representation of the young generation of Saint Origin World. The truly monstrous geniuses are all present in Saint Origin Palace.”

After listening to Peacock King’s introduction of the Saint Origin Palace, Jiang Chen felt very astonished. His initial thought was that the eight families of Pure Land was the greatest forces across Saint Origin World. He wouldn’t have thought that there was a more advanced world named Saint Origin Palace. It seemed many things had happened after he had fallen.

“So this is why...I see.”

Jiang Chen nodded. Despite his astonishment, he finally understood why there wasn’t an expert ranked Seventh Grade

Great Saint or higher in Pure Land.

“I have gone to Saint Origin Palace before for cultivation. The palace is divided into eight different sections. All eight of them are named according to the families. The competition among the eight families are fierce. Although it isn’t obvious in Pure Land, in Saint Origin Palace, Desolate Palace is ranked number one given the quick development in their family.”

Peacock King said.

“Once there is a gap of difference among the eight families, it will grow over time quietly. When it had reached a certain point, the strongest family will start to influence the smaller families or engulf them one by one. It seems Desolate Family have a wild ambition.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“That’s right. Whether it is in Pure Land or Saint Origin Palace, it had been too peaceful over the years.”

Peacock King looked at Jiang Chen in enthusiasm. It was obvious that the boring peace had been broken because of Jiang Chen’s presence. The circumstances of Saint Origin World would grow more chaotic as time goes by.

“Pure Land, Saint Origin Palace.”

Jiang Chen muttered. The existence of Saint Origin Palace was an eye opener for Jiang Chen. Pure Land was no longer the highest existence in this world. He longed to return to his pinnacle state like in his previous life. This meant that he was going to clash with the experts in Saint Origin Palace in order to achieve his goal.

Of course, since Jiang Chen had already made the five families his enemies, it was only a matter of time before Saint Origin Palace was involved.

“Alright. You two have just came back from Void Triangular Domain. I will leave you two here for now. Big Yellow, remember to prepare well for the Suspended Tower hunt three days later. Don’t disgrace me when the time comes, or else, I will peel your skin off.”

Peacock King said sternly to Big Yellow.

Chapter 869 - The First Battle

Big Yellow stuck out his tongue behind Peacock King's back. He had the urge to go forward and bite him on the butt but this old Peacock wasn't someone he could afford to have beef with, so he had to tolerate it.

At this time, Tyrant said to Jiang Chen, "Little Chen, I intend to return to Western Domain for I have gained a lot of benefits from the trip to Void Triangular Domain. One such particular gain is the relic. I wish to go on a secluded period in Greenlotus Mountain."

"Very well. Greenlotus Mountain is a very suitable place for seclusion. Take this Signalling Talisman with you on your journey. I have infused my natal essence inside it; even if you are far away in Western Domain, you can signal me through the talisman should you face anything. There are some high grade True Meta Stones in this spatial ring. The pure light energy contained in these stones will provide beneficial aid to you, even to Great Master Ran Feng. It is a lot better than concocting Saint Rank Restoration Pills ourselves."

Jiang Chen took out a golden talisman and spatial ring, and gave them to Tyrant. This talisman wasn't like any ordinary Signalling Talisman, it was infused with Jiang Chen's natal essence. Tyrant would be able to communicate with Jiang Chen in Pure Land despite how far the Western Domain was.

"Alright, I shall take my leave now. Be careful."

Tyrant left immediately. He knew that Jiang Chen was going to face many kinds of dangerous obstacles in the following days. However, given his current cultivation grade, he could not help Jiang Chen much even if he stayed here.

“Chen Er, I will need to return to Dan Yuan City as well. This is Demon Race after all, I am an outsider to this place. The result of me staying here isn’t very favourable.”

Dan King came to Jiang Chen. He was feeling a bundle of different emotions when he saw his son-in-law in front of him. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t an ordinary man the first time he saw him. He would become a person with great accomplishments to his name but Dan King wouldn’t have imagined that Jiang Chen would grow in such a short period of time. The most he could do now was to admire Jiang Chen. He felt very proud of him for turning into a famous figure across the Saint Origin World. To put it in another way, he was one of the major reasons that Jiang Chen could achieve such terrifying results. If it wasn’t for him who brought Jiang Chen to Void Triangular Domain, these incidents wouldn’t have occurred.

“Father, this is the Source of Dark Fire robbed from the auction in King City. After refining and fusing with this fire, I am sure your cultivation grade will rise to another whole new level, not to mention your mastery in alchemy. Soon, I will pay a visit to Gu Family to settle the matter of sister Ning. After I build a true relationship with Gu Family, you can go there for cultivation. Given your status as an alchemist, you will be acknowledged and respected by the people there as well.”

Jiang Chen brought the Source of Dark Fire near Dan King. Regarding the ways to refine this fire, he needed Jiang Chen's guidance given the fact that he was a powerful alchemist. Jiang Chen strongly believed that this fire would provide significant help to him.

“Alright then, I won't be polite.”

Dan King kept the Source of Dark Fire immediately before he left in a hurry like Tyrant.

“Little Chen, now that you have declared a direct challenge upon the geniuses of Pure Land, I'm afraid your subsequent days won't be as pleasant.”

Big Yellow said. The incidents in Void Triangular Domain had caused a storm to surge across the peaceful Pure Land. And Jiang Chen was destined to play the main role amid the chaos.

“I don't need you to worry about my matters. The most important thing you have to do now is focus on the Suspended Tower hunt that will be held three days later.”

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow's head.

“In fact, I'm not interested in the Demon Race.”

Big Yellow mumbled.

“I know that you don’t have a strong interest in Demon Race, but we have to rely on their support for now. Besides, we owe Peacock King and Heavenly Wolf King kindness. We aren’t people who will forget and not repay people’s kindness. Currently, the internal situation of the Demon Race is a mess. Only you can solve their conflicts and make them unite again.”

Jiang Chen said with a sigh. He knew Big Yellow too well. He knew that Big Yellow hated being controlled. Big Yellow wanted to be free from any restrictions and do whatever he wanted to. Disengagement was the life he was pursuing. He wanted to fight, roam, kill and run whenever he liked without a leash on him.

“I know.”

Big Yellow shook his head. He was clear about his current situation, plus Peacock King and Heavenly Wolf King were nice to him.

“I can guarantee another grade of advancement in these three days, reaching the Sixth Grade Minor Demon Saint. I have no idea how the situation is like in the Suspended Tower. If there are fights in the tower, I’m sure I will be no match for those monstrous genius of the Demon Race given my current strength.”

Big Yellow said worriedly.

“Don’t worry, I will go in the Suspended Tower together with you.”

Jiang Chen said.

“You aren’t an expert of Demon Race, I’m afraid you’re not qualified to go in. The bloodline of Heavenly Leopard King will definitely stop you from entering.”

Big Yellow said.

“I have my ways. You should go into seclusion now. I want to take some time to digest the advancement I have achieved during our time in Void Triangular Domain.”

Jiang Chen finished his words and turned to Yan Chenyu. He then took out the three drops of Nine Yin Water.

“Xiao Yu, this Nine Yin Water will have a strong effect on your cultivation. After refining it, you probably will be able to condense out the embryonic form of the Heart of the Ice God, and advance your cultivation grade.”

Jiang Chen passed the Nine Yin Water to Yan Chenyu.

“En.”

Yan Chenyu nodded. She kept the Nine Yin Water and went into seclusion. Jiang Chen felt a sense of pain while watching Yan Chenyu’s back. She had tried very hard along the way to ensure

herself not becoming a nuisance to him. She never had uttered a word of complaint towards him. She always focused on her cultivation to fill in the gap of difference between her and him.

This courtyard was a very quiet and secluded place—a very well suited place for cultivation. Jiang Chen had also gone into seclusion like the others. The rewards from Void Triangular Domain this time was considered very big. Besides the ten billion high grade True Meta Stones, he had also gathered over a hundred Ninth Grade Minor Saint dark spirits. There was a special ability in dragon transformation art that made the refinement of these dark spirits effortless. In other words, Jiang Chen could refine these dark spirits at any time to advance his cultivation grade further. With these amount of dark spirits, it wouldn't be a problem for him to reach the Seventh Grade Minor Saint but he didn't intend to do this because his previous advancements were too quick. He must stop advancing and start establishing his base of cultivation grade.

Besides that, Jiang Chen could feel some kind of pressure as his enemies were too strong. Although he could defeat Nan Bei Chao with his current strength, Nan Bei Chao wasn't an actual Ninth Grade Minor Saint genius. He was merely a Seventh Grade Minor Saint who boosted his cultivation by two grades using his Eternal Immortal Wind. Of course, Nan Bei Chao's domineering power was undeniably strong. If it wasn't because of Jiang Chen's interference, Nan Bei Chao would have dominated the entire Dark Generation with ease.

Now, he was going to face those monstrous geniuses of Pure Land, particularly the rare geniuses on the Sky Ranking. Each of them was only half a step away from Great Saint realm. They

possess first-class natural endowments. Some of them even possessed bizarre physiques. In addition to the fact that their cultivation grade was only half a step to Great Saint, not even Jiang Chen had the confidence in defeating them.

However, he wouldn't back off. He wouldn't feel the slightest fear while battling these monstrous geniuses. Instead, it would boil his blood. His path wouldn't stop at Pure Land. He had already set his next goal, which was the terrifying and imposing Saint Origin Palace.

Judging from the current circumstances, he will be paying a visit to the Gu Family once Big Yellow had established a firm status in the Demon Race. Currently, the five families had a grudge against him, so he must build a strong relationship with Demon Race and Gu Family. Although he had a good relationship with Gu Mu, he still needed to go there in person because Gu Mu didn't hold any significant position in Gu Family. Besides, Wu Ningzhu was still there. He had no idea how she and her mother were doing now.

Furthermore, it was fundamentally impossible to calm himself down after those geniuses of Pure Land were provoked.

While they were all in seclusion, the courtyard were silent, but the other places in Pure Land was very lively. The big incidents of Void Triangular Domain were spread across the Pure Land. Jiang Chen had become the universal topic across the families in Pure Land.

The news about the failure of the five patriarchs who went to the Demon Race to personally kill Jiang Chen due to Jiang Chen

declaring that he would challenge all the geniuses of Pure Land was spread across the geniuses. One should know how arrogant these five families' geniuses were. Some of them were furious the moment they got the news.

On the second day, Desolate Liang was the first person who accepted the challenge. He declared that he would chop off Jiang Chen's head outside the Spatial Space Mountain to avenge his comrades' deaths and safeguard the reputation of Desolate Family.

“Let's go to Spatial Space Mountain to watch the show. Desolate Liang has flown over there to confront Jiang Chen.”

“That Desolate Liang is a rare genius. I heard that his cultivation grade is now at the peak of Ninth Grade Minor Saint but I'm not sure whether he can kill Jiang Chen.”

“It's still a mystery. According to others, Jiang Chen had killed a lot of Ninth Grade Minor Saints in Void Triangular Domain. Any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saints is no match for him. Although Desolate Liang is more powerful than them, he is only ranked thirty on Sky Ranking. He may not be a match for Jiang Chen.”

“That isn't certain. There are a total of fifty people in Sky Ranking. Any one of them is considered the genius of the geniuses with unusual techniques and trump cards. Desolate Liang isn't comparable to any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saints. The fact that Jiang Chen can kill any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saint doesn't mean he is stronger than Desolate Liang.”

“What’s the use of continuing the talk here? Let’s go. We would like to see what kind of person Jiang Chen is. The Pure Land had never been this lively.”

.....

A great deal of young cultivators were shaken by the news. Due to the fact that Pure Land had been peaceful for a long time, Jiang Chen’s twisted-devil-like emergence had naturally attracted plenty of attention. Many of them were excited to watch the battle between Jiang Chen and a rare genius, Desolate Liang. As this was the first battle between Jiang Chen and a genius of Pure Land, it had attracted many bystanders regardless of how the outcome would be.

Chapter 870 - Can't Withstand Even a Single Blow

Desolate Liang reached the destination after just a short while, and stopped just outside the Spiritual Space Mountain. His current Qi was full of momentum, his murderous aura was soaring to the sky as he yelled towards the Spiritual Space Mountain, "Jiang Chen, get your a*s out now!"

This was the usual manner of the young geniuses of the Pure Land. This was a genius that was ranked at the 30th place on the Sky Ranking. He wasn't like any ordinary genius who wouldn't dare to clamor at the Spiritual Space Mountain. Of course, the most that Desolate Liang could do was just to yell outside of the mountain. He wouldn't dare intrude the sky above the mountain like Desolate Yuntian. If he did so, the experts of the Demon Race would surely send him to his death with a slap. His death would be in vain.

Many cultivators who were near the Spiritual Space Mountain had already reached their destination. They were standing at different spots, waiting for the show. Desolate Liang was not unfamiliar to them, but Jiang Chen was. They would like to find out how he looked like, and why did his name spread across the Pure Land all of a sudden, why did the five patriarchs seek him in person and how did he have the guts to directly challenge all of the geniuses in the Pure Land.

Desolate Liang's voice had alerted the experts of the Demon Race. Many of them flew out of the Spiritual Space Mountain. Jiang Chen had just made the declaration the day before and today a

genius of the Desolate Family has already knocked on his door. The Spiritual Space Mountain hadn't been this lively for a long time.

In a quiet building in the courtyard, Jiang Chen was still in seclusion. At this time, Golden Fur Lion King appeared on Jiang Chen's doorstep.

Jiang Chen frowned. He hated it the most when he was disturbed during his cultivation. He swore that if Golden Fur Lion King didn't give him a good reason for interrupting him, he certainly wouldn't be polite.

Creak

Jiang Chen opened the door of the room and saw Golden Fur Lion King's sturdy body blocking the doorway entirely.

"Lion King, you have disturbed my cultivation. You better give me a good reason for that."

Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

Golden Fur Lion King was petrified. He could sense Jiang Chen's unhappiness, he could feel an indistinct sense of pressure from his fluctuating emotions. That was a pressure that came from his soul. It made him feel like the young man standing in front him wasn't really a young man but a mighty Saint.

"Brother Jiang Chen, a genius of Desolate Family, Desolate Liang,

has come to challenge you. He is currently outside the Spiritual Space Mountain.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“Oh?”

Jiang Chen was stunned for a moment. He hadn't expected that the geniuses would respond so quickly to his challenge.

“Jiang Chen, why aren't you coming out to confront your death? If you are afraid, come out and kowtow three times in front of me.”

A proud voice was heard again. This time, Jiang Chen heard it clearly. It seemed like the one who disturbed him wasn't really Golden Fur Lion King but this young genius named Desolate Liang.

Golden Fur Lion King didn't bother to explain anymore since the opponent's voice had already reached the room. He didn't think that Jiang Chen would be a timid freak, after all, he was the one who declared the battle.

“What's the cultivation of Desolate Liang?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint. He is ranked 30th on the Sky

Ranking, and is a very strong genius. He couldn't be compared to any ordinary Ninth Grade Minor Saints. Even I am not fitted to be his opponent."

Golden Fur Lion King said.

"Ninth Grade Minor Saint...isn't my opponent. I will go and find out."

Jiang Chen said, he then disappeared after a sway. As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen had already lost his interest the moment he heard Desolate Liang's cultivation, even if that Desolate Liang was ranked 30th on the Sky Ranking and had greater power than his peers who had a similar cultivation. If Jiang Chen was merely a Fifth Grade Minor Saint, the battle between them would surely be intense and the outcome probably would be a draw, but he was already a Sixth Grade Minor Saint now. Any geniuses who are below the Great Saint realm wouldn't be able to stand against him.

He was powerful enough to kill Nan Bei Chao. Even if Desolate Liang was stronger than his peers, he wouldn't be any stronger than Nan Bei Chao. When Nan Bei Chao used his Eternal Immortal Wind, his cultivation was boosted to half a step away from the Great Saint realm. So now, Jiang Chen's only interest laid on the top ten geniuses on the Sky Ranking.

Many people were present outside the mountain. This was the first battle between Desolate Liang, a genius of Pure Land, and Jiang Chen. That was why it had attracted countless of attention.

“What happened? Why hasn’t that Jiang Chen come out yet? Could it be that he is too afraid to come out?”

“I don’t think so. He was the one who initiated the battle. If he is really hiding somewhere and wouldn’t dare to come out, his declaration would be unjustified.”

“I think he is scared. Desolate Liang is very strong after all. He is ranked 30th genius on the Sky Ranking. I heard that Jiang Chen is merely a Fifth Grade or a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. It only makes sense for him to be afraid under such an opponent.”

.....

Jiang Chen’s absence and unresponsiveness aroused the dissatisfaction among them. They felt that Jiang Chen was afraid, but as soon as their words faded, they saw a handsome youth in white clothes step into the void and reached Desolate Liang in a few blinks. His dark hair danced along with the breeze. His face was full of resoluteness. Anyone who saw him could straightaway determine that he was a dragon among his peers, an outstanding talent.

“You are Jiang Chen.”

Desolate Liang looked at Jiang Chen and yelled.

“That’s right. It’s me.”

Jiang Chen replied in a flat tone.

“He is young, much younger than me. I never thought that this Jiang Chen would be this young.”

“Yeah, it is truly rare that he has attained such achievements at such a young age. Plus, he is just a nobody before this, a rogue cultivator, unlike those geniuses of the eight families, who had access to boundless of resources since young.”

“Who do you think is stronger? I expect that Desolate Liang would dominate this battle since he is a genius on the Sky Ranking.”

“It’s hard to tell. We’ll see. Today’s battle is surely going to be world-shaking.”

.....

Jiang Chen’s appearance had astonished countless of them. They were astonished by his young age. They had prepared to watch this good show, and thought that this was going to be a massive battle. Many of the bystanders felt that they would benefit a lot just by watching this battle.

“Jiang Chen, you have the nerve to kill so many of our experts and declared to fight the geniuses on the Pure Land. I, Desolate Liang, have come here to kill you, to regain the reputation and dignity of my family.”

Desolate Liang's Qi fluctuated.

“Attack now, but I have an advice for you. You should use your strongest attack on me now, otherwise your death will be in vain.”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms behind his back. His entire body was filled with surging and domineering aura that intimidated people.

“Haha! You must be kidding. Do I need to use my strongest attack to defeat you? Go to hell!”

Desolate Liang laughed. He felt that he had just heard the funniest joke ever. He just wanted to use his ability to cripple Jiang Chen and show him what his true power was.

“Ai...”

Jiang Chen sighed. He didn't want to be bothered by someone like Desolate Liang. He summoned the Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand when Desolate Liang's attack almost reached him. He swung the sword at incredible speed, pulverising all of Desolate Liang's attack and reached him in a twinkle.

“What?”

Exclaimed Desolate Liang. The fact remained that anyone who hadn't fought with Jiang Chen could not understand his

fearsomeness. This fact was also applied to Desolate Liang as well. Desolate Liang could feel that death was almost upon him when Jiang Chen swung his sword violently at him. He regretted not listening to Jiang Chen's advice very much, not using his strongest attack.

“Die.”

Jiang Chen spat out a word. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand sped up and countless of destructive Qi was unleashed from it, slashing Desolate Liang into half.

Chapter 871 - The Opening of the Suspended Tower

“Can’t even withstand a single blow.”

Jiang Chen left these six words in an even tone before he kept his Heavenly Saint Sword and left elegantly, leaving the people below dumbfounded.

Their emotions were stirred up despite their silence. They were looking at the severed corpse of Desolate Liang. Some of them were rubbing their eyes in disbelief for they couldn’t accept the incident before their eyes. It was like a dream.

Those who thought Desolate Liang could kill Jiang Chen in particular were so petrified their mouths were wide open. Many of them thought that the battle would be a world-shaking battle. Even if Jiang Chen won in the battle, there should be some kind of intense fighting, but who would have imagined that Desolate Liang was killed in split seconds by Jiang Chen and was absolutely defenceless.

Although Desolate Liang didn’t show his trump card, this battle was enough to prove Jiang Chen’s power. A genius ranked 30th on the Sky Ranking didn’t even have the chance to use his trump card. This was totally ironic and dismal.

“Very powerful...”

Someone exclaimed. How he viewed Jiang Chen now changed.

“This is crazy. He used just one sword strike to kill a genius of the Desolate Family and left without a trace. He is truly overbearing and unconventional.”

“Undeniably crazy that a Sixth Grade Minor Saint is able to kill a Ninth Grade Minor Saint genius in seconds! Although it wasn’t a world-shaking battle, it was truly exciting. This Jiang Chen lives up to his reputation. It seems only geniuses that are half a step away from Great Saint realm are able to deal with him.”

“Did you all see that? Jiang Chen didn’t even try to insult Desolate Liang. He straightaway killed him not long after he arrived. It means that Jiang Chen didn’t even put Desolate Liang in his eyes. He has created such imposing impression from the first battle with a genius on the Sky Ranking.”

.....

Everyone was lost in astonishment. They were replaying the scene of the unpredictable sword slash that was so deadly to the genius of Desolate Family in their minds.

Some people came with enthusiasm when the battle was over. They got astonished after hearing the details of the battle.

Very quickly, the news of Jiang Chen instantly killing Desolate Liang had spread across the entire Pure Land. Currently, any topic

of conversation related to Jiang Chen would stir up anyone's emotions, let alone the latest battle where Desolate Liang died. The death of a genius had alarmed the eager geniuses of the five families, who were about to find Jiang Chen for a battle. They immediately held their thoughts and impulse to measure the difference in strength between them and Desolate Liang. Even if they were ranked above Desolate Liang on the Sky Ranking, they no longer dared to challenge Jiang Chen because not even they had the ability to instantly kill Desolate Liang or even kill him.

“Now it seems only those super monstrous geniuses ranked in the top ten position are able to deal with Jiang Chen.”

“Yeah. But those geniuses don't usually appear. They are either in seclusion, or breaking through the Great Saint realm or on a tough-training regiment outside. No one knows where they are.”

“Let's wait and see. Desolate Liang's death will definitely will those group of monstrous geniuses. They must deal with Jiang Chen anyhow because this has affected the reputation of the five families. I believe it won't take very long for those monstrous geniuses to confront Jiang Chen.”

.....

Everyone in Pure Land was discussing about Jiang Chen. Many of them predicted that the super geniuses would appear within these few days. It would certainly be a good show. It was true that Jiang Chen could kill Desolate Liang but that didn't mean he could match them in strength.

The news of Jiang Chen killing Desolate Liang had attracted many senior experts amongst Demon Race, especially Lang Xingtian, Peacock King and even the bloodline of Heavenly Leopard King. They only heard about it and weren't present at the scene, but they were amazed for it was their first time knowing a young man as scary as Jiang Chen. Lang Xingtian and Peacock King's impression of him had risen again. They were sure that Pure Land would turn chaotic because of this young man.

Jiang Chen on the other hand didn't care about all these things, and focused solely on seclusion. No one had come to challenge Jiang Chen in the next two days. Apparently, Desolate Liang's death had raised the alarm of a great number of people. Many of them decided not to battle Jiang Chen after measuring their own powers with Desolate Liang's. Now, everyone was waiting for the response of those super monstrous geniuses.

Today was the most important day of the year to the Demon Race. Plenty of the younger generations would go into the Suspended Tower to search for benefits. Early in the morning, Golden Fur Lion King had come to the courtyard right after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow came out from their seclusion.

Although there wasn't much improvement in Jiang Chen's current cultivation, his essence, energy and spirit were a lot more vigorous than before. His cultivation grade were fully fortified within these three days.

Big Yellow, however, had changed enormously. His cultivation grade had reached the peak Sixth Grade Minor Demon Saint,

which was only a step away from the Seventh Grade Minor Demon Saint. One couldn't deny his incredible cultivation speed. With his current strength, he would be able to handle any ordinary Seventh Grade Minor Saint without any problems. He may even be able to fight an Eighth Grade Minor Saint as well, but if he used his abstinent ability, he would be able to kill the Eighth Grade Minor Saint opponent as well.

“Big Yellow, I didn't imagine that you will improve again within these three days. You are truly unimaginable. Peacock King has instructed me to bring you to the Suspended Tower.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“Alright, let's go.”

Big Yellow looked cool instead of nervous.

“Lion King, can you tell me a little about the condition in the Suspended Tower?”

Jiang Chen asked as he walked.

“The Suspended Tower exists since the ancient times. It is a very sacred building and a belief to us. Every year, it will only be opened once. There aren't many dangerous places inside but beneficial things including the ancient Daoist teachings inherited by chieftains which is extremely hard to obtain. There were quite a lot of young disciples who got these 'things' but only a few of them

got the truly beneficial ones. There were situations where there are not even one in a hundred of them obtained such beneficial thing. As for the inheritance of the chieftain, it is rarer to get.”

Golden Fur Lion King paused for a moment before he continued. “Furthermore, no one had entered the ninth floor before. Some say that the door of the ninth floor can only be unlocked by a person with great luck. Besides that, the door of the eighth floor was opened in the recent ten years. The person who entered was the son of Peacock King – Kong Yang. He obtained an inheritance that belonged to an ancient chieftain. After cultivating it, his grade improved by leaps and bounds. He is now the number three genius on the Sky Ranking.”

“The brother of Kong Yu, I haven’t seen him before.”

Big Yellow asked.

“Kong Yang is engaging in a tough training in the outer lands throughout the year. He seldom returns as he was always in search for the chance to break through Great Saint realm. You had just joined the Demon Race, naturally you haven’t seen him before.”

Golden Fur Lion Kin said.

“That means it isn’t dangerous to enter the Suspended Tower.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Based on the facts, yes. But there are a lot of chaos in Demon Race. On the surface, the bloodline of Heavenly Wolf and Heavenly Leopard may seem fine, but the two parties are in conflict with each other silently, particularly those young geniuses. There were also times when some geniuses attacked other geniuses and seized the benefits from them inside the tower. That’s why Peacock King has personally warned Big Yellow to be careful. This time, majority of them will fix their eyes on Big Yellow. I’m afraid the hunt won’t be as smooth as usual for Big Yellow. As you know, Heavenly Leopard King has been trying to stop Big Yellow, this time he will find ways to get rid of Big Yellow in the tower. If something like this really happens in the tower, the patriarch and Peacock King won’t be able to do anything about it.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

“Could it be that Heavenly Leopard King can enter the tower as well?”

Jiang Chen frowned.

“Of course not, but the geniuses of Heavenly Leopard King’s bloodline can. There is a monstrous genius named Leopard Wei among them. He is the number two genius of the Demon Race, he is now only half a step away from Great Saint realm. Due to his defeat in the battle with Desolate Ming – another monstrous genius of Desolate Family – he was ranked number eleven after Desolate Ming on the Sky Ranking. According to the rules of the Suspended Tower, any genius who is below Great Saint realm is qualified to enter. It is hard to imagine what will happen if Leopard Wei strikes Big Yellow in the tower.”

Golden Fur Lion King shook his head. He felt a sharp pain in his head when he thought about Leopard Wei.

After listening to this, Jiang Chen's eyes glittered with two cold lights. It seemed the tower hunt wasn't going to be as peaceful as he imagined. It was conceivable that Big Yellow would be blocked by Leopard Wei once he entered the tower. Even there were some powerful geniuses of Heavenly Wolf bloodline joining the tower hunt, Kong Yang wasn't in the team. Who would be able to stand against Leopard Wei then?

“Can I go along into the tower?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“No, even if the patriarch permitted you to. The entrance gate of the Suspended Tower can automatically distinguish the bloodline of the participants. Even if you want to go in, you will be repelled out of the building as you aren't a disciple of the Demon Race.”

Golden Fur Lion King shook his head.

“That isn't true. Let's go. We will go to the Suspended Tower and see.”

Jiang Chen said. He couldn't allow Big Yellow to take the risk by himself. He wasn't concerned about what kind of status and position Big Yellow could get, but his safety. The circumstances

were obvious. On the surface, Big Yellow was like the other disciples of the Demon Race hunting for the beneficial items in the tower but in truth, it was a path to death. However, the patriarch and Peacock King had no choice but to let him go into that tower, otherwise, Big Yellow wouldn't be able to mix into the two parties. Plus, some would even take him down directly despite his Divine Beast Bloodline.

Thus, Jiang Chen had decided to go along with Big Yellow into the tower. His body possessed the bloodline of True Dragon. Dragon was the king of thousands of beasts, it was a true Divine Beast and a mighty bloodline. Once he ignited all of his True Dragon bloodline or only part of it, it would attract the frequency of the Suspended Tower and probably the gate would welcome him at that time. In any case, he needed to give it a try.

Chapter 872 - Leopard Wei

The Suspended Tower was situated in an independent spatial zone. It had existed for a very long time. It was more correct to say that the spatial zone was attached to the tower, rather than the tower was attached to the spatial zone. The name of the tower came from its natural feature, it was suspended in mid-air. It was a very tall tower that exuded an ancient and magnificent aura.

This ancient tower had now lost its lustre. No one knew how long it had existed. However, it still remained as the supreme symbol of Demon Race and its belief.

Presently, the tower was already surrounded by countless people as today was an important day for Demon Race. As long as the participant was a disciple of Demon Race, he or she had the qualification to enter the tower.

The people who were nearest to the ancient tower were the people with privileges, but there were two obvious groups among them, the bloodline of Heavenly Wolf King and the bloodline of Heavenly Leopard King.

This was what Jiang Chen and Big Yellow saw when they arrived at the destination. Under the lead of Golden Fur Lion King, they reached Lang Xingtian and Peacock King. Big Yellow was a demon that possessed a Divine Beast bloodline and a target to be nurtured. Naturally, he earned the right to stand beside Lang Xingtian and Peacock King.

“Big Yellow, Jiang Chen, you two have come.”

Lang Xingtian greeted them.

“Today is a great day and also an important day for Demon Race. How can an outsider or a human step into the sacred land of our race?”

At this time, a voice was heard from a youth with a sturdy body that was full of leopard prints. There was a golden leopard mark in between his eyes. Despite his young age, his cultivation grade was only half a step away from Great Saint realm.

“This person is Leopard Wei.”

Golden Fur Lion King said to Jiang Chen.

“That’s right, this is the business of Demon Race. Any outsider isn’t allowed to enter, so get lost!”

A person standing beside Leopard Wei chimed in and pointed his spear at Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen has gifted our race 500 million high grade True Meta Stones and is an honourable guest of Demon Race. Besides, he is here only to visit the place. The Suspended Tower is going to open soon, so silence, everyone.”

Lang Xingtian said. His remark had made everyone quiet, including Leopard Wei. Although he belonged to the bloodline of Heavenly Leopard King, Lang Xingtian was the patriarch anyway, he possessed the highest status and authority in Demon Race. In public, Lang Xingtian words contained the weight of dignity. Anyone who challenged the patriarch's dignity was deemed to have great disrespect for him, causing not even Leopard Wei to dare do it.

Furthermore, there was nothing that could be said against the fact that Lang Xingtian was inviting an honourable guest to join their grand ceremony.

Subsequently, Lang Xingtian took out an ancient talisman with an odd pentagon shape that looked like a key. As a matter of fact, this talisman that exuded ancient Qi was the key to unlocking the gate of the Suspended Tower.

Lang Xingtian threw the talisman upwards. The talisman flew towards the summit of the tower as if it had sensed some kind of frequency. If one looked closely, there was a key slot that would fit the talisman perfectly. The moment the talisman connected with the key slot, the entire Suspended Tower began to tremble.

Weng *Weng* *Weng*

Buzzing sounds were heard from the tower. Brilliant golden light started to glow and shone at all the things below. The aura exuded from it was full of nobility.

Later, a roar followed as an illusionary door appeared above the sky. It was the gate of entering the ancient tower. This gate carried the ability to distinguish one's bloodline. Anyone who possessed the bloodline of Demon Race were allowed to enter, anyone who didn't would be excluded from it.

“Look! The gate of the Suspended Tower is opened once more. This time, we have to obtain the greatest benefits of all time in the tower.”

“Yeah, we only have one chance each year. I hope that I am the lucky one. If I can obtain the inheritance of an ancient chieftain, my cultivation will improve drastically like Kong Yang. It makes my blood boil while thinking about it.”

“Enough of your daydreaming. Why don't you see yourself in the mirror first? I instantly know that you are an unfortunate one the moment I saw you. You aren't fated to be lucky.”

.....

Many geniuses of Demon Race became excited seeing the opened gate. It was a great opportunity for any of them. In the past, there were some people of Demon Race who were as puny as a shrimp, but when they obtained a great inheritance of an ancient chieftain inside the tower due to the blessings from the heavens, their status and power soared miraculously. As such, the Suspended Tower was a dream, a hope to many of them.

“This time, I must enter the eighth floor. I must enter the top ten

on the Sky Ranking and surpass Kong Yang.”

Heavenly Leopard clenched his fists. He was very confident and positive in this tower hunt.

“Don’t forget the most important task.”

Heavenly Leopard King said to Leopard Wei via divine sense.

“Don’t worry Great Elder, once that dog enters the tower, I will make sure he won’t get out.”

Leopard Wei smiled coldly.

Heavenly Leopard King nodded silently. He was quite confident in Leopard Wei’s ability. Although Big Yellow had reached peak Sixth Grade Minor Demon Saint, he would certainly die if he confronted Leopard Wei. Fundamentally, there wouldn’t be any miracle that it would not happen.

Although they conversed using divine sense, their conversation was fully eavesdropped by Jiang Chen. Given his Great Soul Derivation Technique, not even Heavenly Leopard King was able to detect his eavesdropping, as the technique was the world’s number one perceptive skill.

For some peculiar reason, Peacock King who was observing the other side changed his facial expression slightly. Since he couldn’t enter the Suspended Tower, he could only warn Big Yellow again.

“Big Yellow, you have to be extra careful when you are in the tower.”

“Patriarch, in order to prevent those people who have evil intentions from harming Big Yellow, I request permission to enter the Suspended Tower with Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen suddenly asked for a permission from Lang Xingtian. He didn't lower his tone, so everyone could hear it clearly, causing a commotion from the crowd.

“What kind of joke is this? He, a human, wants to enter the Suspended Tower? Is he stupid?”

“Yea, putting aside the qualification of being a disciple of Demon Race, he won't be able to go through the gate.”

“I think he is thinking too much. The Suspended Tower only allows people of Demon Race to enter. He is a human, he won't be able to enter.”

.....

Comments and criticisms came from the crowd. Plenty of them thought that Jiang Chen's request was absurd. It was surely a funny joke.

“Jiang Chen, this is the Suspended Tower, humans won't be able to enter it.”

Lang Xingtian said. In truth, he hoped very much that Jiang Chen would be able to join Big Yellow because that would relieve his concern for Big Yellow's safety. He was well aware of Jiang Chen's ability. A genius like Desolate Liang couldn't even stand Jiang Chen's single slash. So, if Jiang Chen was by Big Yellow's side, Leopard Wei's intention of killing Big Yellow wouldn't be realised.

“Patriarch, there may be some other things you don't know about me. I cultivate a very special cultivation and have absorbed plenty of demonic beast bloodlines. I have also killed and absorbed a White Tiger that possessed Divine Beast bloodline. Perhaps I will be acknowledged by the Suspended Tower.”

Jiang Chen said.

Chapter 873 - Layers of Obstacles

“What? Did this man really refined the bloodline of the White Tiger Divine Beast?”

“Dammit! When did the White Tiger appear in Saint Origin World? And why didn’t I know about it? The White Tiger is one of the Five Divine Beasts. The benefits it would bring to our race will be boundless if we can obtain its mighty and powerful bloodline.”

“The astonishing thing was that he was able to refine the bloodline of a Divine Beast. This sounds very unimaginable because the human and demon race were two totally different races. Even if a human could refine it, the process would need to take a long time and it would be in a very slow pace, the tedious and taxing procedure makes the absorption of the bloodline impossible. It seems like this brat really cultivates a special cultivation technique.”

“So what if that’s the case? He is only a human after all. Even if he has refined and absorbed the bloodline of a demon beast, he won’t be able to get pass the Suspended Tower.”

.....

Many people were shocked that Jiang Chen could absorb the bloodline of the White Tiger Divine Beast. It could already tell how lucky Jiang Chen was. It only proved that he's a human with great luck.

However, Jiang Chen was still a human after all. It would be virtually impossible for him to be acknowledged by the gate of the Suspended Tower despite the Divine Beast bloodline in his body.

“I see.”

Lang Xingtian frowned.

“Patriarch, in that case, why not let him have a try? If he can enter the Suspended Tower along with Big Yellow, it will provide a great help to Big Yellow’s safety. I remember that Jiang Chen also have a transformation technique. He could turn into a demon-like creature after the transformation.”

Peacock King said.

“No. He isn’t part of the Demon Race. He isn’t qualified to enter the Suspended Tower.”

A Fourth Grade Great Saint standing beside Heavenly Leopard King said.

“Humph! As long as he is acknowledged by the gate, he is qualified to enter the Suspended Tower. This is the rule of the Suspended Tower and our ancestors.”

Peacock King let out a cold humph.

Lang Xingtian waved his hand to stop the argument. He glanced at the gate of the Suspended Tower, then to Jiang Chen before he speaking. “Jiang Chen, try to enter the gate, see whether it acknowledges your identity.”

“Many thanks to Patriarch.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Lang Xingtian. He turned and flew towards that illusory gate. He believed that the dragon transformation art would be able to help him enter the tower. Otherwise, his True Dragon Blood would become the object of ridicule to many. Besides, this was very important to Big Yellow. If he couldn't enter the tower, Big Yellow would be doomed.

He stood in front of the gate of the Suspended Tower. Many gazes were fixed on Jiang Chen. They were curious to know whether this human would be able to get pass the bloodline recognition of the gate.

Jiang Chen could feel traces of primitive and ancient Qi coming out of the gate. He felt like he was seeing the door of the supreme sacred land of the Demon Race.

He gasped a deep breath and began circulating the dragon transformation art. Every blood-red dragon mark surged out of his body in an illusory dragon form. These dragons looked very real and served as a foil for Jiang Chen, it made him look very divine.

A mighty Qi was unleashed as soon as the dragon marks emerged. Some weaker experts of the Demon Race were petrified and felt the

urge to worship him.

“He is very powerful...he is just a human but his Qi is just like the Qi of the king of thousands of beasts. It gave me the feeling to worship him.”

Someone exclaimed in disbelief.

Jiang Chen raised his palm slowly. The blood-red illuminating palm was stamped on the illusory door.

Weng *Weng*

At this instant, the door of the Suspended Tower began to tremble intensely. The twelve-meter large door slowly enlarged to thirty meters large as it trembled. Meanwhile, the tower behind shook intensely as well, and glowed with a brilliant light. It was like the tower had reached the same frequency as Jiang Chen

“Look, the door suddenly enlarged. What is happening? Nothing like this has ever happened before even after existing for so long. Today, it grew larger, two times larger. What did that Jiang Chen do?”

“Does this indicate that their Qi have the same frequency? That means Jiang Chen’s Qi and the tower’s Qi has achieve a resonance. I can’t believe that Jiang Chen passed the bloodline recognition. This is undeniably bizarre.”

“That’s right. This is a miracle. A human could actually be acknowledged by the Suspended Tower and cause such great movements to the tower. This is the first and probably the last that it would happen to the Suspended Tower.”

.....

No one was able to calm their emotions, this was a scene that they hadn’t seen before. This was certainly the first time, but many of them knew that this great change would surely benefit their race.

Currently, Jiang Chen was stunned and excited as well, he could feel the Suspended Tower calling him. No, it should be something inside the Suspended Tower that was summoning him. Despite the strangeness of the signal, he could still feel a faint trace of familiarity.

“There is something that I need inside.”

Jiang Chen held the excitement in his heart. He couldn’t imagine that he would obtain some great treasure inside. Although he had no idea what was summoning him, he knew that this was going to be a fortuitous meeting. He was sure that the thing inside wasn’t the fragment of his Heavenly Saint Sword because the strength of the summoning wasn’t as strong as the fragment’s.

After regaining his composure, he returned to Lang Xingtian and Peacock King’s side. He then held his fists and said, “Patriarch, I have already passed the bloodline recognition of the tower. I am

good to go with Big Yellow now.”

“Alright, Jiang Chen, I have never thought that you had such a great connection with the Demon Race. I am now permitting you to enter the tower with Big Yellow.”

Lang Xingtian didn't try to hide his delight. He would be relieved of his worries for Big Yellow's safety if Jiang Chen came along.

“He can't.”

At this time, someone opposed. It was Heavenly Leopard King. This was the first time that he spoke. His tone didn't sound courteous or respectful at all despite talking to the patriarch.

“Even if he has passed the bloodline recognition of the tower, he is still not qualified to enter the tower because he is still an outsider. I am the first to go against the idea of letting him in.”

Heavenly Leopard King was firm in his words. His main target was Big Yellow. His plan was already perfect. He didn't want it to be messed up by anyone. Although Jiang Chen wasn't an opponent for Leopard Wei, he had witnessed how Jiang Chen killed Desolate Liang. If Jiang Chen and Leopard Wei battled, the fight would certainly shake the entire place, which was not suitable in the Suspended Tower. Once the Suspended Tower was damaged even by the slightest bit, it would infuriate the spirits of their ancestors. No one would be able to shoulder such a massive responsibility.

“Leopard King, don’t forget about the rules of the Suspended Tower. As long as the participant can pass the bloodline recognition, the participant has the eligibility to enter. Furthermore, Jiang Chen achieved a resonance with the Suspended Tower. This is something that has never happened before. Now, even the Suspended Tower had acknowledged him, what rights do you have to stop him? Also, don’t forget about your status. You are merely a Great Elder, the decision of the Demon Race is not up to you to decide.”

Peacock King raged. He didn’t put even the great Heavenly Leopard King in his eyes.

“Peacock King, a Great Elder has the right to interfere in crucial decision making. If you guys are letting this outsider in, I absolutely disagree it.”

Heavenly Leopard King was resolute. It seemed like he wasn’t going to give in.

“Leopard King, you are being rude.”

Lang Xingtian was angered. As the patriarch of the Demon Race, he must always maintain his dignity in public. If he acted nonchalantly towards Heavenly Leopard King’s defiance, his reputation would be affected.

Heavenly Leopard King frowned as Lang Xingtian’s fury was rising. Today was a big event for the Demon Race. It wouldn’t be nice to see a fight today, but if he allowed Jiang Chen to enter the

Suspended Tower, it would affect his plan.

Today was his best chance to get rid of Big Yellow. If Big Yellow wasn't eliminated today, it would high likely be that he would discover some great benefits in the tower. Then, he would gain a stable status and position in the Demon Race. After that, it would be extremely hard for him to eliminate Big Yellow.

“Patriarch, besides getting the approval of the Suspended Tower, you also need all of our agreement. As long as Jiang Chen could defeat me, he would be allowed to enter the tower.”

Leopard Wei said, declaring a direct challenge to Jiang Chen.

When this words were spoken, Heavenly Leopard King's eyes sparkled. He darted a praising glance towards Leopard Wei. His solution was without a doubt the best to their current situation. He was confident in Leopard Wei's strength which was only half a step away from the Great Saint realm. He was sure that Jiang Chen would be no match for Leopard Wei. If the battle occurred outside the tower, it wouldn't disrespect the Suspended Tower. With the presence of Lang Xingtian and Peacock King, Leopard Wei's desire to kill Jiang Chen wouldn't be realised, but it was good enough to defeat Jiang Chen because that meant his plan would not be affected.

“Yes, have a battle. Let us see his power.”

“As long as he can defeat Leopard Wei, we will be fully convinced to let him enter the Suspended Tower.”

“This is a good idea. We can’t simply let an outsider to enter our scared land.”

.....

In that instant, many people of Heavenly Leopard King's party voiced out their thoughts. As the sound was getting louder, it became impossible for Jiang Chen to skip this battle.

“Bastard...”

Peacock King was slightly angered.

“Alright, I will accept his challenge.”

Before Peacock King could say a word, Jiang Chen took up the challenge. The current situation was crystal clear to Jiang Chen. He was destined to face layers of obstacles if he wanted to enter the Suspended Tower. Since Leopard Wei wanted to challenge him, he wouldn’t refuse to accept the challenge. Besides, he wanted to experience the power of a genius who was half a step away from Great Saint. An opponent like Desolate Liang couldn’t arouse his fighting interest. Only an opponent like Leopard Wei could ignite his combat intent.

“Jiang Chen, you have to think this through. Leopard Wei is the 11th genius on the Sky Ranking. He is only half a step away from Great Saint realm and isn’t comparable to Desolate Liang.”

Peacock King reminded.

Chapter 874 - Battling Leopard Wei

It was normal for Peacock King to have worries for Jiang Chen. It was true that Jiang Chen was strong but his cultivation was just too low. Killing Desolate Liang and battling Leopard Wei was an entirely different idea. These two opponents were of different levels. Besides their difference in ranking, there was also a significant difference in their cultivation.

Even if one had reached the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, it was still hard to progress half a step away from the Great Saint realm, which was an entirely new level. If someone was already half a step away from the Great Saint realm, it meant that one had already stepped into the boundary and could advance to the Great Saint realm at any time .

“Peacock King, don’t worry. I have my own ways. Besides, I have no choice but to accept the battle. If I don’t follow Big Yellow into the tower, he will fall into Leopard Wei’s murderous scheme, Kong Yang isn’t with them, and none of the young generations would be able to stop Leopard Wei.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright, since you have already decided, but don’t force yourself if you can’t beat him.”

Lang Xingtian nodded. Today, Leopard Wei declared a direct challenge to Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen didn’t accept his challenge, he would be looked down by the people. Even though he had been

acknowledged by the Suspended Tower, he was still an outsider . The principle of the Demon Race was the strongest would dominate. As long as Jiang Chen defeated Leopard Wei, he would naturally have the reason to shut all of their mouths and raise his reputation.

“Fine. Go and battle then.”

Peacock King said. He then waved his palm to create a battlefield. There wouldn't be a single combat aura that would leak out the battlefield if the battle was held within. So, the Suspended Tower wouldn't be affected.

Jiang Chen was a person that feared neither the heaven nor earth. That was the reason Peacock King liked him. Even though he was worried for Jiang Chen, he would still look down on him if he refused to accept the challenge.

Swoosh

Leopard Wei swayed and entered the battlefield. His Qi was overwhelmingly strong. The eyes on his leopard head was as sharp as a blade when he stared at Jiang Chen. “Jiang Chen, come on. You challenged all of the geniuses in the Pure Land; I, Leopard Wei, would like to see whether you have the eligibility and ability to do that.”

Jiang Chen's Qi was stable. He entered the battlefield with a sway. His expression was calm. He didn't even show any signs of nervousness while facing the five patriarchs, how much more

when he was just facing Leopard Wei. This composure alone impressed everyone.

Either it was Peacock King, Lang Xingtian, Golden Fur Lion King, or the bloodline of the Heavenly Wolf, they were all very worried for Jiang Chen as Leopard Wei was very powerful, a lot more powerful than Desolate Liang. Last time, Leopard Wei almost got the 10th place on the Sky Ranking.

If one was trying to find a carefree individual in the crowd, that individual would be Big Yellow. His confidence in Jiang Chen had never faltered. He had a sinister expression in his eyes. Although Leopard Wei was powerful, his power wouldn't be far away from Nan Bei Chao. After advancing to the Sixth Grade Minor Saint, Nan Bei Chao was no longer an opponent for Jiang Chen. So he wouldn't have any problems in fighting against Leopard Wei. Even if he couldn't kill Leopard Wei, defeating him wouldn't be difficult. Well, of course he would not kill a genius of the Demon Race here.

“Jiang Chen, you are merely a Sixth Grade Minor Saint but you were able to kill a genius like Desolate Liang. I have to admit that you are certainly a rare genius that only appears every thousands of years. In terms of endowment, I'm not as great as you, but my cultivation is greater than yours. You are no match for me. I suggest you to back off now, don't interfere with the matters of the Demon Race.”

Leopard Wei said.

Anyone that could speak such words were people that were true

to themselves. One should know that it was very rare for a genius like him to admit that he was not as great as Jiang Chen.

“I’m sorry. Big Yellow is my brother. I won’t allow any of you to get rid of him. Although you have the advantage because of your cultivation, but you aren’t my opponent when it comes to a real fight.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Haha! Jiang Chen, it seems like you are just too arrogant. You thought you can deal with me just because you killed Desolate Liang? You are truly ignorant. In that case, I will show you how terrifying the power of a half a step to Great Saint is.”

Leopard Wei felt that he was tickled by Jiang Chen. A monstrous demonic Qi rushed out of his body. He didn’t want to waste any more time as the gate of the Suspended Tower was already open. He took the initiative to strike first. He clenched his fist and produced cracking sounds as he punched towards Jiang Chen.

Roar

The image of a leopard could clearly be seen from the punch, it created a deep leopard roar and gusts of illuminating wind that crushed the nearby void. It was merely a punch, but the power released from it was overpowering.

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled when he felt Leopard Wei’s power. He

was a cultivator of the dragon transformation art which would become stronger if he met a strong opponent. This overpowering aura not only did not make him retreat but motivated him to fight even more instead.

Ka Cha

Jiang Chen's arm shook and turned into a blood-red dragon arm. His physique had reached an incredible endurance by cultivating the dragon transformation art. He wanted to experience their difference in strength while he was still in his human form.

Hong Long

Jiang Chen struck his fist out, creating gusts of shapeless wind around. Both of their attacks were extremely fast. They collided with one another in just a blink.

Hong Long

Even the sky was shaken. The battlefield created by Peacock King was pulverised. Chilling cyclones could be found everywhere around the battlefield. However, Peacock King's technique was strong enough to ensure that the combat aura stayed within the battlefield.

Even if there were no combat waves that flowed out of the battlefield, the bystanders were still astonished by the world-shaking battle inside. This was just the first collision, but the

impact was already too great.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Jiang Chen staggered around forty steps back before finding his balance. There was a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. He was injured, his power wasn't as great as Leopard Wei but this kind of injury wouldn't affect him at all. After absorbing the wood essence, the recovery speed of his dragon transformation art had reached a very horrifying level. An injury like this would only take him a few blinks to heal.

“Like I said, you aren't my opponent. I only sent a simple punch at you just now. How are you going to fight me? Of course, I am impressed by your endurance. You are the first Sixth Grade Minor Saint that is still fine after receiving my punch.”

Leopard Wei's robe was whistling. Although he had an overwhelming Qi, he felt a little astonished after their first exchange. His power was only half a step away from the Great Saint realm but Jiang Chen, a Sixth Grade Minor Saint was still fine after the collision. He was very clear that if the both of them have the same cultivation or if Jiang Chen advanced to the Seventh grade, he would no longer be his opponent.

“Look, Jiang Chen lost the first round. He is no match for Leopard Wei.”

“Ai, the difference in power is just too great. However, he should already feel proud to have such a result fighting against Leopard

Wei.”

“That’s right. This man is considered a rare genius. If he has the same cultivation as Leopard Wei, I’m afraid that Leopard Wei wouldn’t stand a chance.”

.....

Some were happy while some sighed, but no one, either it was the bloodline of Heavenly Wolf or Heavenly Leopard, sneered at Jiang Chen because they didn’t have the right to do so. Even if Jiang Chen lost the battle, they would still be respectful towards him.

Of course, the battle has just started. It was too early to determine who would win or lose.

Jiang Chen moved two steps forward. His body started to change. A sound of ‘hong’ was heard, everyone felt an intense and chaotic energy rushing out of Jiang Chen’s body. Then, a dragonman illuminated by a blood-red light emerged. To many people, this was the first time they saw Jiang Chen transform, including Lang Xingtian.

“Leopard Wei, it is still too early to declare a winner.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi is now many times stronger than before. A tenfold increase in combat strength wasn’t something insignificant.

“What a scary transformation technique! He looks like an ancient desolate dragon. How did he acquire such a technique?”

“Dragon...that only existed in legends. It is the mighty king of thousands of beast. His face is just like a face of a dragon now.”

“This is truly frightening. I can feel that his Qi increased by at least tenfold after the transformation. It immediately suppressed Leopard Wei’s.”

.....

Everyone was shocked, the scene was just too unusual. Many of them started to feel excited about the fight. The current Jiang Chen was a lot stronger than before. Now, it seemed like it would be hard to predict who would win or lose in the fight.

“His body is flowing with the blood that frightens me. Could it be the legendary True Dragon Bloodline? Not possible. That only exists in legends. It was impossible to exist in Saint Origin World.”

Lang Xingtian was truly in shock. His eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen.

Leopard Wei who was standing on the opposite side changed his expression. He was the closest to Jiang Chen, and thus he could clearly feel how much Jiang Chen’s Qi and combat strength had increased. It even shook his power which was only half a step away

from the Great Saint realm.

“Alright, I would like to see how powerful you really are.”

Leopard Wei unleashed his combat intent. He raised his palm and produced a rippling energy. These rippling energy quickly turned into a golden energy ball that contained electric current. Despite the barrier, people could still feel the destructive force from it.

Chapter 875 - Victory

“Lightning Wave Chain Attack!” Leopard Wei bellowed.

The energy ball in his hand slammed against Jiang Chen. This was a very powerful innate ability of the Heavenly Leopard race. It converts energy into lightning waves to destroy the target. Plus, one chain attack like this could send out many energy balls. For example, Leopard Wei had sent nine large energy balls in this chain attack.

Every energy ball was thirty meter large and was capable of destroying a large mountain. It was imaginable how destructive it would be when these nine energy balls were combined.

“Golden Dragon Seal.” Jiang Chen was unafraid.

He struck out with Golden Dragon Seal. Three dazzling golden dragons let out deafening roars, as though three real dragons were descending from the heavens. They opened their mouths wide while charging at those energy balls. Golden Dragon Seal was a skill that Jiang Chen seldom used but in fact, it was the most destructive amongst the five elemental combat dragon seals. Putting aside their suppressive nature, none of the four dragon seals was on par with the Golden Dragon Seal in terms of destructiveness. As such, the Lightning Wave Chain Attack and Golden Dragon Seal were the right skills to use.

Roar *Roar!*

Hong Long!

There were roars of dragons and leopards, and the rumbling sound of the energy collision. Sparks were created from it. A large area was ignited into a sea of fire.

This battle was enough to be described as world-shaking.

The three golden dragons and the nine energy balls were destroyed at the same time, ruining the battlefield completely. Boundless of destructive energy drifted in the air, drowning Jiang Chen and Leopard Wei so much no one could detect their existence.

All of the young generations of the Demon Race felt suffocated, not because of the destructive energy, but because none of the destructive energy escaped the battlefield. They felt stifled because of the peer pressure. They were self-proclaimed geniuses. However, comparing themselves with Jiang Chen and Leopard Wei, they felt that the term 'genius' no longer suited them.

A moment later, the energy finally dissipated. Jiang Chen and Leopard Wei reappeared in the scene. Jiang Chen was as composed as usual. His blood-red eyes were full of vigour and he looked absolutely intact. The injured one was Leopard Wei instead. He now looked slightly fazed. Apparently, Leopard Wei failed to gain the upper hand in the exchange just now.

“Like I said. No one knows who will win or lose. My current strength has already surpassed you. Just attack with any technique

that you have, because I am going to defeat you entirely.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was flat. The tides have turned. Jiang Chen was the one controlling the battle instead.

“This isn’t real. *Roar*...”

Leopard Wei unleashed all of his will to fight, letting out a roar. His body erupted like Jiang Chen and turned into his true form, but his transformed physique was many times sturdier than Jiang Chen’s.

A hundred meter large Heavenly Leopard emerged. His body was glowing with a golden leopard aura and was blanketed with boundless energy. The demon Qi formed a golden light pillar from his head up to the sky.

“Heavenly Leopard Divine Claw!” His bellow was as loud as a heavenly thunder.

A three meter giant claw materialized. It was like a heavenly barrier that pressed down from above. Even a huge mountain would be pulverised into powder.

“True Dragon Palm Seal.”

Jiang Chen ignored Leopard Wei’s overwhelming Qi and struck with another palm seal. The True Dragon Palm Seal became terrifyingly damaging when it was used while he is in human-

dragon form. A giant dragon claw materialized and produced a dragon's roar.

Jiang Chen had already activated a drop of the true dragon blood when he was at the Greenlotus Mountain of the Western Domain. Although the Heavenly Leopard was an extraordinary beast, it was incomparable to the True Dragon Bloodline. For instance, there was an obvious suppressive power from the True Dragon Palm Seal against the Heavenly Leopard Divine Claw.

Hong Long

The two giant claws clashed together, like two giant mountains colliding. It was like the sky was falling. Destructive force filled every corner of the battlefield.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

This time, Leopard Bei didn't gain the upper hand again. He staggered three steps backwards before regaining his balance. The astonishment on his face intensified.

“Look, Leopard Wei had lost two rounds. It seems like he isn't an opponent of Jiang Chen. I can't believe that Jiang Chen would be so powerful to such an extent after the transformation.”

“Yeah. It's truly scary. Leopard Wei is only half a step away from the Great Saint realm while Jiang Chen is merely a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. The difference between the two of them couldn't be

put into words, but Jiang Chen has miraculously defeated Leopard Wei.”

“We’ll see. It’s not the time to decide the winner yet. I believe that the Heavenly Leopard race still has some greater innate abilities other than this. He hasn’t used his Heavenly Leopard King’s Eye yet. I’ve heard that this skill isn’t just powerful, it could also damage the opponent’s soul. It’s a very terrifying skill.”

.....

Jiang Chen had turned the situation around, which was something beyond all of their imagination. The current Heavenly Leopard King didn’t look too good. If Leopard Wei lost this battle, he would lose all of his plans as well. The thing that shocked him the most was Jiang Chen’s monstrous ability.

Leopard Wei on the other hand had become infuriated. His blood-red eyes gradually turned luminous. At this time, his eyes no longer looked colourful. They had become as bright and shiny as the sun.

“Jiang Chen, don’t waste any more time. This is the Heavenly Leopard King’s Eye of the Heavenly Leopard race. Let’s see how you are going to handle this. You should feel proud for forcing me to use this skill.”

Leopard Wei’s tone was heavy. This was a skill that he wouldn’t simply use because it would inflict a certain amount of damage to his body. After casting this spell, his body would become weak for

a period of time, and he would need at least more than a day to recover.

However, he had no choice but to cast it because he was now the challenger in this battle. Plus, he was the second genius of the Demon Race and his cultivation was only half step away from the Great Saint realm. It would be a total disgrace if he lost this battle to a mere Sixth Grade Minor Saint.

Swoosh

Two very brilliant light beams shot out of Leopard Wei's eyes like sharp arrows. These two beams of light integrated into the most dazzling light in the world very quickly.

Jiang Chen could feel the destructive force from the skill. More importantly, he could feel a tingling sensation from his soul when he looked at the light beam. It seemed like this skill dealt the most damage not on the physical body but on the soul.

If Jiang Chen didn't cultivate the Great Soul Derivation Technique, he would lose in this fight. With this technique, his soul had become very strong and firm as a castle. It was undoubtedly an impossible thing for the light beam to damage his soul.

“Nine Solar Profound Finger.”

Jiang Chen wouldn't hold himself back when Heavenly Wei had

casted his strongest skill. The power of Nine Solar Profound Finger had improved tremendously after obtaining the finger bone. Casting the Nine Solar Profound Finger increased Jiang Chen's overall combat strength as well even if he had already transformed.

Hong Long

An intense rumble was heard from the void as Jiang Chen struck out nine large brilliant fingers. They fused and became one very quickly before it collided with the dazzling Heavenly Leopard King's Eye.

The colour of the weather changed. The entire battlefield was completely destroyed this time. Blinding energy waves were everywhere in the vicinity. No one could see the situation clearly under such circumstances, let alone the circumstances of the two contestants.

When they regained their sight, they all saw the two fighters' images again but they now had different forms. Jiang Chen was now wearing his snowy white robe. His face was as calm as before. His Qi was also as stable as before but there was a sword that was placed near Leopard Wei's neck in his hand.

The current Leopard Wei looked very unpleasant. His chest was full of blood. His mouth and eyes too. That was the result of the backlash of the Heavenly Leopard King's Eye.

“You have lost.”

Jiang Chen's voice was flat. He then withdrew his sword slowly and left the battlefield, and came to Peacock King's side.

Leopard Wei let out a bitter smile and left the battlefield as well, back to the Heavenly Leopard King's side.

“Are you alright?”

Heavenly Leopard King asked.

“Yeah, I'm fine. I am convinced of my defeat. If that was a life-or-death battle, I would have died by now.” Leopard Wei said.

He didn't feel any reluctance about his defeat. If it wasn't because of Jiang Chen's mercy, he would've become a corpse now or severely injured.

“It seems like we have underestimated him.”

A Great Saint sighed.

“Leopard Wei lost the fight. He is defeated by Jiang Chen. It is astonishing to learn that this Jiang Chen is so powerful. Truly amazing!”

“Yeah! That's too terrifying! Not even Leopard Wei is his opponent. I'm afraid that only Kong Yang would be able to defeat

him amongst the entire young generation of the Demon Race.”

“That’s awesome! He is truly an abnormal being!”

.....

The outcome of the battle caused commotions across the crowd. Even a genius who was only half a step away from the Great Saint realm was defeated by a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. No one would believe this if they didn’t saw it with their own eyes.

Now, Jiang Chen had gained the approval of everyone using his true strength. No one would deny him from entering the Suspended Tower with Big Yellow anymore because only the strong would be admired in the Demon Race.

Chapter 876 - On the Seventh Floor

Lang Xingtian's eyes blazed as he looked at Jiang Chen. Before the battle, he didn't have the confidence in Jiang Chen and was worried for him because his opponent was the 11th ranked genius on the Sky Ranking, which was entirely different compared to Desolate Liang. However, he wouldn't have thought that Leopard Wei couldn't even stand against Jiang Chen. In other words, Jiang Chen is now iligible to be the 10th place on the Sky Ranking after defeating Leopard Wei.

For so long that the Sky Ranking had existed in the Pure Land, this was the first time that a Sixth Grade Minor Saint got into the top ten position. This was a rare case, the probability of this occurring might be one in ten thousand.

“Brother Jiang is truly powerful.”

Golden Fur Lion King was delighted. Given the potential strength of Jiang Chen, his future would certainly be immeasurable.

“Alright. The gate of the Suspended Tower is open, all young generations of the Demon Race are allowed to enter now.”

Lang Xingtian announced. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were the first group to walk to the entrance. This time, no one blocked their path or showed any signs of disagreement. Jiang Chen had earned the right to enter the tower the moment he defeated Leopard Wei. Even Heavenly Leopard King had nothing to say. All he could do was sigh, his plan had failed, he could only hope that Big Yellow

wouldn't perform outstandingly in this tower hunt.

The Demon Race was one of the eight families. The sacred land of Demon Race was comprised of countless of races and independent cultivators. No one knew how many members there were on the Spiritual Space Mountain. The estimated number of young generations who went into this Suspended Tower this time was around twenty thousand.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow entered the Suspended Tower and appeared in an area filled with chaotic Qi. It wasn't a very large area, just roughly a thousand miles meter squared wide. This was the first floor of the Suspended Tower. Everyone who came in would arrive here first.

“Little Chen, why did the gate of the entrance enlarged?”

Big Yellow asked. He had already known Jiang Chen's identity. Even if Jiang Chen was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, this would not change the Suspended Tower. Even if Jiang Chen was a very powerful human now, something as great as this shouldn't have occurred to the Suspended Tower.

“It is probably related to my cultivation method. I cultivated the dragon transformation art. My transformation is part of the cultivation method. Back in Western Domain, the True Dragon bloodline emerged in my body. Although it was only a small amount, it was enough for me to transform into a human-dragon. The True Dragon is a supreme being, the king of thousands of beasts. Its position was higher than the Suspended Tower. Plus, I have absorbed the White Tiger bloodline as well, another mighty

bloodline. I reckon that the enlargement of the gate is related to one of these facts.”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow and added, “I think that you would be able to do it too, if it were you.”

Big Yellow possessed the complete Dragon-horse bloodline, which made him very extraordinary and incredible. The Suspended Tower was the symbol of holiness to the Demon Race. When some divine beast appeared, it would naturally create a resonance with the tower.

“That is for sure. It’s a pity that Master Dog’s spotlight has already been taken away by you.”

Big Yellow seemed annoyed.

“However, it is kind of intoxicating to see you defeat that Leopard Wei. I suppose that brat won’t come after me anymore while we are in the tower.”

He revealed a proud face when he thought about the previous battle.

“Although Leopard Wei is arrogant, he has the natural bearing of the Demon Race. He isn’t a person who will break a promise, and he willingly accepted his defeat. He is sort of a nice person to me despite the two of us having different standpoint.”

Jiang Chen said. The impression Leopard Wei gave was better than those geniuses of the other major powers. A genius who is willing to accept his defeat is considered a true genius.

“What benefits do you think would we obtain in this Suspended Tower? In fact, Master Dog doesn’t care about those ancient inheritances of the chieftains. As my cultivation grows, the innate abilities in my body will be awakened as well. This is much more powerful than those ancient inheritances that they were talking about.” Big Yellow said unconcernedly.

In fact, he wasn’t just boasting about himself. Even those ancient chieftain’s bloodline of the Demon Race wasn’t as extraordinary as Big Yellow’s. It was only normal that Big Yellow would look down on those inheritances.

“Unfortunately, your cultivation is still too low. This time, it would be a great chance for you to gain a firm status in the Demon Race. So those ancient inheritances of the chieftains would still very useful to you, at least, they will help you boost your growth in a short period of time.”

Jiang Chen said. He recalled the summoning signal from the Suspended Tower before this. He added, “While I was standing outside the gate just now, I could feel that someone is calling me from the tower. But it disappeared the moment I entered. It seems like the one that is calling me isn’t in the first floor.”

“What? Could it be there is something that you need in this tower? Is it a fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword again?”

Big Yellow was astonished. Jiang Chen was a human after all. Even if he had absorbed the bloodline of a Divine Beast, it wouldn't change the fact that he is a human. The Suspended Tower wouldn't have a connection with humans, but Jiang Chen told him that there was something that is calling for him inside the tower earlier. It only showed that that item wouldn't to be ordinary.

“No, it's a very strange signal. But there is a faint familiarity within. It's hard to say. Let's just proceed ahead.”

Jiang Chen said.

At this time, a silhouette came to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's side. He was the son of Peacock King, Kong Yu.

“Brother Jiang, Big Yellow.”

Kong Yu greeted the two of them with fists.

“Little Peacock, I don't feel anything special about this Suspended Tower.”

Big Yellow said.

“It seems like you don't understand the Suspended Tower quite well. The first five floors could be entered by anyone. There are some treasures in these places but they are scarce. From the sixth

floor onwards, anyone who entered must go through another recognition process like the gate of entrance. Only geniuses with great luck and potential could enter the sixth floor and above. It is already considered not bad if one in a hundred could enter the sixth floor. As for the seventh and eighth floor, the probability is even lesser. Over the past ten years, only my big brother, Kong Yang had entered the eighth floor. As for the legendary ninth floor, no one had ever entered it before. Due to many people participating in this event every year, the treasures in the floors below the sixth floor are getting lesser and scarce.”

Kong Yu gave a short introduction about the Suspended Tower to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“I see.”

Jiang Chen felt enlightened. It seemed like obtaining benefits wouldn't be as simple.

“My father has already predicted that Leopard Wei will target Big Yellow in this tower. But since you have already defeated him, Big Yellow's safety is secured now. Big Yellow possessed the great bloodline of a Divine Beast. He is very likely to produce miracles by entering the eighth floor and obtain the ancient inheritance of a chieftain. After that, his cultivation will grow by leaps and bounds. He could also gain a firm status in the Demon Race as well.”

Kong Yu said.

“That is of course.”

Big Yellow's self-confidence had reached the extent of being shameless.

Later, Big Yellow and Jiang Chen went in different directions. They didn't stop at the first floor like Kong Yu, and entered the second floor.

Jiang Chen didn't feel the summoning signal from the second floor, so they proceeded to the third floor.

Unfortunately, he still couldn't sense the signal even after reaching the fifth floor. The item that they were looking for wasn't in the first five floors, which only meant that it was located in the floors above.

At any rate, Jiang Chen was sure about his own senses. There wouldn't be a mistake that an item inside the tower was calling for him when he was still outside.

Very quickly, they had reached the door of the sixth floor.

This was an illusory door, unlike the doors of the first five floors. There was a rippling talisman pattern on the door. Clearly, anyone who wanted to enter the sixth floor must go through the recognition process first. There were a lot of geniuses who couldn't enter the sixth floor because they weren't recognize by the door.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were walking towards the door. The

door opened automatically as if it could feel the extraordinariness in their blood. A man and a dog walked into the sixth floor in a relaxed way. After that, some geniuses started to follow from behind.

Many others were observing the changes outside the Suspended Tower. Initially, the first five floors were the brightest and the floors above it were dimmest. Currently, the sixth floor had grown brighter. They could see every spot of light illuminated from the sixth floor. Every light spot indicated a person.

Those high ranked elders revealed a smile when they saw the increasing light spots.

Half an hour later, the light spots increased by two hundred before it slowed down gradually.

“Nearly three hundred people have entered the sixth floor this year. This is better than last year.”

An elder said.

“But the seventh floor is still dim. I’m not sure how many of them are able to enter the seventh floor.”

Many of them were fixing their eyes at the seventh floor. The sixth floor was merely the checkpoint. Any genius who could enter the seventh floor was considered a true genius.

In the Suspended Tower, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had circled around the sixth floor but got nothing. He didn't feel any signs coming from the signal like before. So, they flew towards the seventh floor.

When they reached the door of seventh floor, Leopard Wei was already there. He darted the two of them a glance before he walked onto the seventh floor.

Swoosh

There wasn't a single obstruction when he entered the seventh floor. The light in the seventh floor was lit up. People from outside could see the movement of light on the seventh floor clearly.

“Look, someone has entered the seventh floor. It's Leopard Wei.”

“I'm not surprised. Leopard Wei entered the seventh floor last year as well. His target this time is the eighth floor.”

Chapter 877 - The Eighth Floor, Three Candidates

This was not the first opening of the Suspended Tower. Every time it was opened, people were more concerned about the situation in the seventh floor. The eighth floor was extremely difficult to enter and it was even more impossible to enter the ninth floor. The sixth floor was merely a threshold for the geniuses to get through. As such, the seventh floor was the most important floor.

Currently, the seventh floor was already lit up, but the spectators didn't feel too excited about it, they knew that the light was coming from Leopard Wei. He had already entered the seventh floor last year. Naturally, he could also enter the seventh floor again this year. The other geniuses were the ones that caught their attention now.

Another two hundred geniuses had entered the sixth floor. According to their initial estimation, it was already considered not bad if ten geniuses managed to enter the seventh floor. It would all depend on their luck when it comes to obtaining the treasures on seventh floor.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow weren't in a hurry to step across the doorway to the seventh floor. The time given for the hunt was a day. It was more than enough for them.

The number of geniuses who arrived before the doorway was steadily increasing. A youth from the Eagle Race walked animatedly to the door. His face was full of confidence.

“Leopard Wei has already entered. I will be the second one to enter the seventh floor. Open your eyes and see.”

This man’s cultivation wasn’t weak and he looked peremptory. He strode towards the door while igniting the bloodline in his body. A clash occurred very quickly between him and the illusory door.

Bang

“Argh!”

A cry was heard. That animated youth from the Eagle Race was rebounded by the illusory door roughly forty meters away and landed with his butt. All the confidence on his face was replaced by frustration and annoyance.

After failing in his attempt, he went to the other places dispiritedly. Since there’s a day left and he couldn’t enter the seventh floor, the only option for him was to try his luck in this floor.

After the failed attempt of the youth from the Eagle Race, the remaining geniuses were itching to try, but unfortunately, all of them were rebounded back. Not a single one managed to enter the doorway.

“Let me try.”

This time, the son of the Peacock King, Kong Yu walked towards the door and unleashed his bloodline. He took a deep breath and strode into the doorway. When his body was in contact with the door, it trembled intensely but there wasn't a sign of him being rejected.

Swoosh

Kong Yu disappeared with a flash just like Leopard Wei. He had entered the seventh floor.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow nodded. Kong Yu was the son of Peacock King. He possessed a very strong bloodline. It wasn't surprising for him to enter the seventh floor.

In the subsequent time, over two hundred of them were trying to break past the doorway to the seventh floor, one after another. Majority of them failed and left. They headed towards different directions in the sixth floor. There might be some treasures that were still left behind in this floor. If they could obtain any of them, their trip would not be in vain.

Jiang Chen had calculated the number of people who entered the seventh floor. Besides he and Big Yellow, there were a total of ten people who entered the seventh floor.

“It seems like it would only get harder as we move higher. Out of all of them, only ten managed to enter the seventh floor. Now it's our turn.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He and Big Yellow strode forth to the door. Their bloodlines were too powerful. There wasn't a single resistance coming from the doorway. They walked through it smoothly.

Twelve light spots were moving in the seventh floor. The higher ups of Demon Race were quite satisfied with this number.

“This is better than last year. There were only ten of them last year. However, there are twelve of them this year.”

“As a matter of fact, it's still the same as before. The extra two were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. It seems like Jiang Chen really possessed the bloodline of a Divine Beast, otherwise he won't be able to enter the seventh floor so easily.”

“That's right, but he is still an outsider after all. Wouldn't it be an insult for us if he gets the ancient inheritance of the Demon Race chieftain?”

“I don't think it will happen. Although he has gotten pass the bloodline recognition of the entrance gate, he would be unable to hide the human bloodline flowing in his body. The chieftain of the Demon Race won't allow an outsider to inherit their scripture. The most that he can find is some other items. As for Big Yellow, I think it would be difficult for us to estimate what he would obtain because he possessed the Dragon-horse bloodline.”

.....

The spectators were discussing about the candidates outside the tower. They were able to distinguish the identity of the candidates through the light spot. Besides the ten who were from the Demon Race, the other two were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Those people were already considered rare geniuses for being able to enter the seventh floor. Every one of them were proud and arrogant. The lowest cultivation among the ten of them was a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. After entering the seventh floor, they immediately flew towards the door of the eighth floor without any hesitation.

Most of them were already very satisfied, to be able to enter the seventh floor, but they still wanted to try whether they could enter the eighth floor. That year, Kong Yang was able to enter the eighth floor and obtained an unimaginable benefit which pushed him to the third rank of the Sky Ranking.

Who didn't have a dream? Who didn't want to stand at the top? Who would be willing to stay ordinary?

They still wanted to try it despite knowing that they only have a slim chance. Even if they failed, but at least they tried. They wouldn't regret it if they had made their attempts.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow did the same thing as well after entering the seventh floor. They followed behind them to the doorway of the eighth floor. A few moments later, they reached the doorway. The doorway was no different than the other

doorways except for the ancient mysterious feeling and the mighty Qi that they felt from it.

When the others arrived, Leopard Wei was already there, attempting to break past the doorway to the eighth floor. Half of his body had already stepped on the eighth floor, the other half of his body was trembling intensely, as if he was going to be rebounded at any time.

Ka *Ka*

Cracking sounds were heard from his body. That was the sound of his bones compressing. It was imaginable that Leopard Wei was bearing an enormous pressure that came from the illusory door. It was like the pressure of a mountain. It was the pressure that no ordinary being could withstand.

Argh

Leopard Wei let out a wail as if he was enduring an extreme pain, but he still persisted. Both of his eyes had already turned red but he didn't give up. Half of his body had already gotten past the doorway, which meant that he still had a chance.

The geniuses behind all had their faces darkened. Even the half-a-step-Great-Saint Leopard Wei had to endure such a painful process when entering the doorway. It was hard to imagine what their situation would be if it was their turn. Probably, they would be rebounded instantly just like those weaker geniuses.

They had already come this far, they had to try it anyway.

Jiang Chen met Big Yellow's eyes. They both nodded, admiring Leopard Wei's spirit. They couldn't help but want to put aside their conflicts with Leopard Wei. This perseverance alone was enough to prove how extraordinary he was.

Outside the Suspended Tower, pairs of eyes were looking at the eighth floor. They saw half of a light spot was already in the eighth floor and the floor was currently shaking.

“Look, someone is going to break past the eighth floor. It's Leopard Wei.”

“Leopard Wei is really awesome! It seems he is very likely to succeed this time.”

Some of their blood were stirred. Anyone who was able to enter the eighth floor would be considered as a monstrous genius. As long as the genius could enter the eighth floor, the genius wouldn't return with an empty hand. Besides Kong Yang, no one else had managed to enter the eighth floor until now.

The Heavenly Leopard King's eyes sparkled, Leopard Wei's performance was better than what he had expected. However, the current situation was still very clear, Leopard Wei hadn't truly entered the eighth floor yet. He was still trying hard to enter it right now.

Many of them became nervous. They were all gazing at the eighth floor without blinking their eyes. This situation lasted for a minute before the eighth floor glowed all of a sudden. A brilliant light spot drifted in the eighth floor back and forth.

“Haha! Leopard Wei finally succeeded.”

The Heavenly Leopard King laughed happily.

“The eighth floor. He finally entered the eighth floor. He would surely obtain an ancient inheritance of a chieftain when he gets out. At that time, he will surely become one of the top ten geniuses in the Sky Ranking and be comparable with Kong Yang.”

“Amazing, truly amazing! He has seriously gotten into the eighth floor. Leopard Wei is truly amazing!”

.....

Many of them were overwhelmed with excitement. Although Lang Xingtian didn't have the similar bloodline with Leopard Wei, he still felt happy to be able to see the birth of another rare genius in his race.

In front of the eighth floor, the others also turned up when they saw Leopard Wei went through the eighth floor successfully. They started to make their attempts to get past the doorway, but all of them failed including Kong Yu. Then, they had no choice but to go to other places in search for their treasures.

Although they felt frustrated, they didn't feel dispirited. They were merely betting on their luck to get through the doorway. They were well aware of their chance of success in getting past the doorway. In fact, they were already considered a bunch of decent geniuses for being able to enter the seventh floor. So, they just have to depend on their luck now to search for their own treasures.

Now, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were the only two left, standing in front of the doorway. They just acted like before. Big Yellow unleashed his bloodline while Jiang Chen circulated his dragon transformation art to the maximum. A dog and a man clashed with the illusory door. Despite their bloodline, they still needed to bear a powerful resisting force. That was a shapeless force that worked against their bodies, as if it was trying to thoroughly examining their bodies.

The both of them bore the pressure and pushed forward. Half of their bodies had already reached the other side, just like Leopard Wei. Due to their bloodlines being higher than Leopard Wei, they should have no problems entering the eighth floor, just like Leopard Wei could.

“Look, another two geniuses are going to enter the eighth floor.”

Someone saw the changes in eighth floor and exclaimed.

“They are Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.”

Peacock King gleamed.

“I don’t know whether they can get past it or not.”

The Golden Fur Lion King became excited.

As soon as his voice faded, two brilliant light spots appeared in the eighth floor.

“Haha! They are in.”

Lang Xingtian laughed happily.

“This is amazing! There are three geniuses who managed to enter the eighth floor. Except for Jiang Chen who is an outsider, Big Yellow is another genius of our race just like Leopard Wei. The opening of the Suspended Tower this year was very fruitful.”

Many of the people felt delighted.

Chapter 878 - The Great Luck of the Demon Race

After Leopard Wei entered the eighth floor, he didn't hurry to seek for the inheritance but sat down cross-legged to heal his injuries. He had already been injured when he fought Jiang Chen before entering the tower. Plus the tremendous pressure that he received from entering the doorway of the eighth floor. Despite his powerful bloodline, he still needed to stabilize and restore his condition.

While Leopard Wei was recovering his injuries, two silhouettes walked into the eighth floor from the doorway and approached him. He widened his leopard eyes and his face was full of disbelief.

“You guys have broken past it as well.”

Leopard Wei couldn't feel indifferent about it. As a genius of the Demon Race, he knew too well the meaning of entering the eighth floor. If it was easy for anyone to enter the eighth floor, Kong Yang wouldn't be the only one to enter it over the past ten years. When he entered the eighth floor this time, it meant that luck was on his side. In his heart, he was really happy and was filled with wild excitement. He thought that he was the only one that could enter the eighth floor this time, but the unexpected struck him when he saw two geniuses coming in.

“Leopard Wei, it is true that the Heavenly Leopard bloodline is very powerful, but it isn't comparable to my bloodline. If you could enter here, it naturally means that we can also enter, and we did it much easier than you.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Humph! Don’t get all over yourself. Entering the eighth floor and obtaining the true benefits are two entirely different things. You are from the human race, even if you could enter here, it doesn’t mean that you could obtain any benefits.”

Leopard Wei let out a cold humph.

“That will depend on our capability.”

Jiang Chen smiled and brought Big Yellow into the deeper regions of the eighth floor. He didn’t try to make things difficult for Leopard Wei. If he killed Leopard Wei here, it would certainly infuriate the Heavenly Leopard race. The matter would certainly get out of anyone’s hands and the entire Demon Race would descended into chaos, which wasn’t a scenario that Jiang Chen hoped to see. He wouldn’t despise someone like Leopard Wei. If it wasn’t because of the different parties that they belonged to, he would surely befriend him.

“Little Chen, have you sensed the mysterious signal here? This is already the eighth floor.”

Big Yellow asked.

Jiang Chen shook his head. “Still nothing.”

“Dammit! Don’t tell me that it’s on the ninth floor. I’ve heard that no one has ever entered the ninth floor before.”

Big Yellow’s eyes sparkled.

“Do you think we would be able to break the history of this tower? By entering the ninth floor? In fact, I am very curious about the ninth floor as well.”

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and smiled.

“We don’t need to care whether we could enter it or not. Since we have already come this far, we have to give it a try. However, I think we should still check in this floor around first to see whether we are lucky enough to meet those beneficial items that they’ve said. We only have a days’ time in this tower. We can’t spend all of our time breaking past the doorway of the ninth floor. If we fail, we would lose the time to hunt for the items.”

Big Yellow said.

After a period of time, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were searching for some treasures or beneficial items in the eighth floor. Half a day passed very quickly. Unfortunately, despite Big Yellow’s sharp senses for treasures, nothing was found.

“For heaven’s sake! Didn’t they say that there would be great benefits in this floor?”

Big Yellow was getting frustrated.

“We don’t have much time left. Let’s go to the ninth floor to find out.”

Jiang Chen said, he moved towards the doorway of the ninth floor. As for Leopard Wei, he had obtained an ancient inheritance of a chieftain in this floor and was currently absorbing it. He didn’t think about entering the ninth floor. Although he was a self-proclaimed genius, he knew his own limits. For all the years that the Suspended Tower had existed and so many monstrous geniuses, none of them managed to enter the ninth floor, let alone him.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were staring at the illusory door of the ninth floor. It didn’t seem different from the previous doors but it was covered with dense talisman marks. Looking at it would make people’s eyes painful. If one gazed at it for a period of time, it would make the person suffocate.

This was not a formation or a restrictive spell, but the Qi within was so mighty, as if it was representing the supreme being of the Demon Race.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow took a deep breath and circulated their bloodlines to the limit before rushing to the doorway simultaneously.

Chi *Chi*

As soon as their bodies touched the illusory door, it let out a high pitched sound. The place where they made contact with the door created sparks. They felt a strong rebounding force was working against their bodies but when this energy sensed their bloodlines, it briefly weakened but strengthened again after a while. The entire process went back and forth.

Because of this to and fro, the both of them were unable to move forward or backwards however, they felt that if they choose to retreat now, they would lose the chance to enter the ninth floor forever. This was just like a test. They had to grit their teeth and moved forth and bear the severe squeezing pressure that felt like it would deform their physical figure.

There wasn't much time left until the event was over. It seemed like entering the ninth floor wasn't going to take them only a few seconds. They were attempting to move forth bit by bit. Now, the ninth floor had already recognized their bloodlines. As long as they could break past this doorway, they would succeed in entering the ninth floor. Jiang Chen was very confident in his perception. When the signal couldn't be found in the first eight floors, it must be in the ninth floor.

Very soon, the opening period of the Suspended Tower would be over. Silhouettes were continuously walking out of the tower. Those who failed to enter the sixth floor had all come out before this. Those who were walking out now were the geniuses in the sixth and seventh floor. There were roughly two hundred of them. Majority of them were shaking their heads and sighing as they walked out empty handed. There were some who were excited and high-spirited because they had obtained some kind of benefits or items from the tower. Naturally, they had a reason to be happy.

“Almost all of them have come out. None of them has gotten the ancient inheritance of a chieftain. Now, they placed their hopes on Big Yellow and Leopard Wei.”

Everyone was expectant of the outcome. All of the candidates had already come out of the tower except for the three in the eighth floor.

“Haha!”

A pleasant laugh suddenly came out of the gate, as soon as the voice faded. A silhouette illuminating a golden light shot out from the tower. He was Leopard Wei. Currently, he looked high spirited and enthusiastic. He didn't look like an injured person at all. Even the backlash that he received from the Heavenly Leopard King's Eyes could not be seen from him. More importantly, his Qi was stronger than before, as though he had obtained some kind of enhancement.

“Haha! Leopard Wei has gotten an ancient inheritance of a chieftain. His cultivation would surely soar from today onwards. I think that it wouldn't take him long to advance to the Great Saint realm.”

The Heavenly Leopard King laughed happily, the people from the Heavenly Leopard bloodline felt delighted too. Sure enough, Leopard Wei didn't disappoint them. He had obtained an ancient inheritance of a chieftain just like Kong Yang did.

“Leopard Wei, congratulations.”

Lang Xingtian said to Leopard Wei. It didn't matter what party Leopard Wei belonged to, he is a member of the Demon Race and would represent the Demon Race. He would certainly be ranked within the top ten after today's news was spread across the Pure Land.

“There are two more people inside. Why haven't Jiang Chen and Big Yellow come out yet?”

“I think they didn't get anything at all.”

“Yeah. They should've come out by now even if they got nothing. They shouldn't delay the time of closing the gate because they can't bear this responsibility.”

.....

At this time, many of them fixed their attention on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. All of the candidates had gotten out of the tower. Only the two of them were still inside. In fact, they had made the right guess, the both of them didn't obtain any items, but they wouldn't have thought that the both of them were breaking past the door of the ninth floor.

Hong Long

While many were still in their discussion, the Suspended Tower

intensely trembled all of a sudden, creating a deafening sound of bang. Many of them saw a faint glow from the ninth floor which had been totally dark all this while.

“Quickly, look, a light appeared in the ninth floor. My god! They are breaking past the ninth floor.”

“Oh god! They are really entering the ninth floor. It seems like half of their bodies have already gone through. For over so many years...this is the first time that I saw a light in the ninth floor. I feel grateful and lucky to be able to witness this.”

“It’s Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They were both abnormal freaks that have the audacity to break past the ninth floor. It is truly unimaginable. If they succeed, it would certainly become a miracle in the history of the Demon Race.”

.....

No one wasn’t startled by it. All of them were holding their breaths and dared not to speak. They raised their heads and focused on the top floor of the tower. Obviously, Lang Xingtian and Peacock King were too excited. That was the ninth floor after all. They were also one of the geniuses who entered the Suspended Tower many years ago. They knew what the ninth floor meant. None of them were able to enter it before. Today, a miracle was about to happen. Big Yellow possessed a Divine Beast bloodline while Jiang Chen was a super monstrous genius. If they could enter the ninth floor, no one knew what they would get. It might not be just an ancient inheritance of a chieftain.

Hong

Suddenly, a loud bang was heard from the Suspended Tower. The faintly lit ninth floor was now brightly lit. Two light spots that was as brilliant as the stars were drifting back and forth in the ninth floor. The entire Suspended Tower was illuminated with boundless light rays when the ninth floor was unlocked by the two. These light rays shone from the ninth floor and in every corner of this spatial zone. When these light rays permeated one's body, one would feel very comfortable as if one had entered an ocean of warmth.

“These light rays came from the sacred items of the Demon Race. It can change one's physique and improve one's demonic strength.”

“That's right. These are the sacred light rays. Everyone, quickly absorb them. This is a kindness that the ancient tower is giving us. Faster! absorb all of these light rays as fast and as much as you can. This only showed the great luck of the Demon Race. Everyone would be able to obtain unimaginable benefits.”

“This is awesome! The great luck of the Demon Race was finally upon us.”

Chapter 879 - The Descent of the Totem

Not one of them was able to keep their emotions in check, especially the members of the Heavenly Wolf bloodline. Lang Xingtian and Peacock King were not able to control their excitement too. Unlocking the ninth level was something which they hadn't dream of. They did not dare to imagine that their geniuses would be able to enter the ninth floor while they were still alive.

Nevertheless, they were more concerned about the benefits that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow would get in the ninth floor. There was one thing that was certain, when one entered the ninth floor, that person wouldn't come out empty handed.

As a matter of fact, the time of closing for the Suspended Tower was up, but due to the opening of the ninth floor, it changed everything. At this time, none of them wanted the tower to close, not even Heavenly Leopard King, as this was a miracle to the Demon Race. Even if Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stayed there for three days and three nights, no one would sound a complaint.

More importantly, after the two of them opened the ninth floor, it had brought a tremendous amount of luck to Demon Race. Those light rays that permeated the area from above would bring boundless benefits to them, including Lang Xingtian and Heavenly Leopard King.

Currently, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were paralysed. Despite their abilities, they felt like collapsing after breaking past the doorway of the ninth floor. The process of entering the doorway

was absolutely torturous.

In spite of them lying on the floor, they had a feeling, a feeling of mightiness. It made them feel like they were separated from the original world and were lying above the sky surrounded by a Qi of nobility. This was a true scared land. There were boundless of light that surrounded them and healed their injuries rapidly.

“This is the light of the Demon Race. It has great effect towards anyone who possess the bloodline of the Demon Race.”

Jiang Chen said.

“How is it now? Did you sense the signal yet?”

Big Yellow asked. This was the question that concerned him the most. If he still couldn't feel it in the ninth floor, it indicated that Jiang Chen's previous sense was just false.

“Yes, I can sense it. I can sense a very strong signal not far away. We will need to speed up our recovery.”

Jiang Chen's face was filled with excitement. He had a feeling that the mysterious signal would bring him great benefits. He would be able to meet a great luck in this floor.

After a short period of time, both of them recovered. They crawled up from the floor and their eyes swept their surroundings that was filled with sacred light. Then, they flew towards the

source of the mysterious signal.

The space in the ninth floor wasn't that big. It should be the smallest floor in the Suspended Tower. There was nothing in here but an ancient sacrificial altar at the centre of the floor. They approached it. The surface of the altar was full of variegated marks. Its height was roughly 300 meters but it still made them feel like it was as high as the sky.

Jiang Chen didn't have the mood to admire the antiquity and divinity of the altar. All of his attention was focused on the blood talisman floating above it.

The blood talisman was buzzing. The blood-red light that was released from it permeated the entire sacrificial altar. The top of the blood talisman was carved with lines of patterns that was filled with an ancient and divine Qi. From such a close distance, Jiang Chen could confirm that this blood talisman was the source of the signal earlier.

Nevertheless, it wasn't unfamiliar to Jiang Chen. Back when he was in Purgatory hell, he recalled that there was also a blood talisman just like this. At that time, he used the blood talisman to suppress the ground devil beast. It was a talisman that gave him the feeling of blood connection that made him feel detached and attached at the same time. Due to his weak cultivation, he was unable to bring it out of the Purgatory. He had never imagined that a similar blood talisman would appear on the ninth floor of the Suspended Tower.

He didn't know the secret behind this blood talisman, but he was

sure that it wasn't an ordinary stuff given the fact that it appeared in the ninth floor. Plus, the Qi that was released by the blood talisman had some connection with his dragon transformation art. Jiang Chen could feel his veins and blood as well as the dragon marks racing inside of him.

“Isn't this the blood talisman from Purgatory hell? Why did it appear here?”

Big Yellow's eyes widened in astonishment. He knew very well how mystical this blood talisman was. Back then, they were unable to go near the stone door because it was blocked by the blood talisman. Only Jiang Chen was able to gain the approval of the blood talisman.

“This isn't the exact same blood talisman but the Qi from it is exactly the same. This was the thing that was calling for me earlier.”

Jiang Chen said. He started to circulate his dragon transformation art to its peak and transformed into a human-dragon. The beating of the blood talisman intensified, as if it could sense the changes from Jiang Chen.

He was going to give it a try. He extended his dragon claw; the blood talisman flew towards Jiang Chen and landed on his dragon palm as though it was affected by Jiang Chen's bloodline.

Hong Long

Seconds after the blood talisman left the altar, a deafening rumble was heard. They saw a brilliant light pillar shooting down from above. They didn't know where the light pillar would lead them. The endpoint of the light pillar was like an abyss.

“Up.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. He and Big Yellow leaped onto the altar and flew into the light pillar.

Bang!

However, as Jiang Chen touched that light pillar, he bounced off by a strong force from the light pillar, sending him falling to the floor. Big Yellow on the other hand was fine and just stood stably at the centre of the light pillar.

“What happened?”

Big Yellow exclaimed.

“Don't talk. This is your great luck. Sit down and feel it. Although I have the True Dragon bloodline, my origin is still human, so I am unable to enter the light pillar. Getting this blood talisman is already good enough for me. I will refine it now while you receive your luck.” Jiang Chen quickly told Big Yellow.

The occurrence of the unusual change was an extremely lucky encounter to Big Yellow. If he missed such an encounter, it would

never appear again in his life.

After listening to Jiang Chen, Big Yellow quickly sat down and activated all the Dragon-horse bloodline in his body, forming a resonance with the ancient light pillar.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen sat down cross-legged and started to refine the blood talisman that seemingly belonged to his.

Weng *Weng*

As the blood talisman entered Jiang Chen's body, it trembled intensely. Seconds after he circulated the dragon transformation art, rays of blood-red light illuminated and rushed to Jiang Chen's limbs and bones. He was amazed that these blood-red light were helping him greatly. It enhanced the True Dragon bloodline in his body. He felt like the seventy thousand dragon marks had all become true dragons during the enhancement.

As the blood-red light increased, the condensation of dragon marks began in his body. The changes in the blood talisman had initiated the condensation of dragon marks.

“Good, I was unable to refine the blood talisman back in Purgatory because I haven't got the True Dragon bloodline yet. Now, it's different. I can fully refine this blood talisman, obtain great benefits and push my cultivation to the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. At that time, anyone under the Great Saint realm would not be my opponent.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled as this was a great encounter. The advancement of one grade wasn't the most important thing. It was the function of this blood talisman that was important. He could already feel the extraordinary features from the blood talisman. There were lots of secrets hidden in the talisman. He would explore them slowly when he had the time.

After a short period of time, the blood talisman was fully integrated in Jiang Chen's body. When Jiang Chen's Qi Sea returned to its calm state, two thousand dragon marks had been formed, making a total of seventy two thousand dragon marks, he broke through another level in cultivation – Seventh Grade Minor Saint. With so many high grade True Meta Stones, he didn't need to worry about the consumption during his advancement.

“Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Very good. Let me have a look on the secrets of this blood talisman.”

Jiang Chen shifted his focus on the blood talisman. He was trying to communicate with it, but the result shocked him. He saw that the blood talisman dominated a small portion of the corner of his Qi Sea like a boss. The blood talisman ignored him no matter how many times he commanded it.

“What the heck?”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but roll his eyes. This blood talisman was too snobbish. It seemed like he had picked up a stubborn and snobbish item this time.

The only explanation for such a condition was his lack of strength. It had now become impossible to probe the blood talisman.

Presently, outside of the Suspended Tower, everyone was trying hard to absorb the light rays. Some even had their cultivation advance during the process. They shouted happily and satisfyingly.

At this moment, a great change occurred in the Suspended Tower again. Everyone saw a drawing from the light pillar shot up to the sky. Inside the drawing was an ancient totem that looked very divine. It had a dragon head and a snake body. It looked real and illusory at the same time, as if it wasn't supposed to exist in this world.

“Quickly, look! It's the totem. My god! The totem has descended.”

“The totem of Demon Race! It's our belief and our ancestor. I can't believe that I can see this totem while I am still alive!”

“Fast, kneel down, everyone!”

Everyone was stupefied when Lang Xingtian and Heavenly Leopard King cried consistently and took the lead to kneel down. Every member of Demon Race were full of excitement. They couldn't believe their eyes. Everyone knelt down as commanded without a word, their faces were full of sincerity. They couldn't believe that the opening of the ninth floor would cause the totem to descend.

What is a totem? That was a myth. Some said that it wasn't true, but it was the belief of Demon Race. Every member of Demon Race was a sincere follower of the totem. None would dare to show any sign of disrespect in front of it. It was like a god that had never appeared in their hearts, but its descent made them elated.

Chapter 880 - Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint

The ancient and brilliant light pillar that floated above the Suspended Tower was like a supreme god. Thousands of cultivators of Demon Race were kneeling down with utmost sincerity. None of them dared to show a single sign of disrespect to the supreme totem.

The atmosphere had turned deathly silent. The tyrannical pressure from the totem made some of the weaker cultivators wouldn't dare to even lift their heads up, they felt that looking at the totem directly was a sign blasphemy.

On the sacrificial altar, in the ninth floor, Big Yellow's body was glowing with golden light from top to bottom. Tremendous changes happened to his dragon head and horse body. Two horns had grown out of his head. The third horn grew out between his brow, flickering with electrical light. The golden fur on his body was gone and replaced by a reddish-gold scale armor. Four of his hooves glowed a brilliant light that was glistening.

At this time, Big Yellow no longer looked like a dog but an extraordinarily valiant dragon-horse. A dragon-horse was a divine being of heaven and earth. It represented auspicious omen and destiny.

The divine seal of the totem gradually descended to Big Yellow's head, forming a straight line with his head impartially.

“This was the divine seal condensed by the legendary and supreme totem of the Demon Race but Big Yellow managed to draw it out. If this totem’s divine seal is giving its blessings to Big Yellow, it only means that Big Yellow is a supreme being of the Demon Race, the symbol of god that not even the cultivators of the Heavenly Leopard party would dare to show disrespect to him. At that time, Big Yellow will surely be able to unite the entire Demon Race, resolving every contradiction and conflict that existed internally. None of them would dare to oppose him any longer.”

Jiang Chen got excited too. He wouldn’t have thought that Big Yellow would be so awesome. Big Yellow’s luck was truly incomparable even to those who obtained the inheritance of a chieftain.

Roar

Suddenly, Big Yellow let out a resounding roar that shook the heaven and earth. Every space in the Suspended Tower trembled intensely, making the cultivators below raise their heads. They saw the ninth floor had turned transparent. The two light spots in the ninth floor were no longer there. They could see everything inside the ninth floor—the ancient sacrificial altar; the extraordinarily gallant Big Yellow who was roaring and the divine seal of the totem that floated above his head; attempting to achieve a resonance with him.

“My god! This is a remarkable spectacle. Demon Race has never seen such a miracle before. Is this the true physique of Big Yellow? The legendary Dragon-Horse Divine Beast surely look divinely valiant.”

“He is a mighty divine beast that represents auspicious omen and destiny. He even managed to draw the totem out. Big Yellow’s arrival is equivalent to auspiciousness. If the totem enters his body and integrates with him, he will become the symbol of the supreme god of the Demon Race and our spiritual belief.”

“The totem has descended...Big Yellow has become the hero of the Demon Race. Those sacred light that shone on us has already planted some beneficial seeds on us. After this event, the overall strength of the Demon Race will surely rise within a short period of time.”

.....

Everyone exclaimed in astonishment.

In the end, Big Yellow didn’t disappoint them. The totem divine seal finally entered his body.

Roar

The moment it entered his body, he roared once more. It was a roar of sacredness. The image of the totem was swirling on the top part of his body. Under the stimulation of the divine seal of the totem, his blood and veins started to surge and his cultivation also soared crazily.

Seventh Grade Minor Demon Saint, until he reached the Ninth

Grade Minor Demon Saint. The advancement only stopped when it reached the peak of Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint. Given his natural endowment as a divine beast, he would be fearless in front of a First Grade Great Saint. He could even finish the Great Saint off.

This was incredibly terrifying. What terrified them more was that not one of them knew the true power of the totem's divine seal.

“Oh god! Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint. Such incredible advancement rendered me speechless.”

“That's the power of the totem. Big Yellow has become the incarnation of the totem. He is now the totem of our race, the auspicious omen of our race and our future.”

“Truly amazing! This is a truly lucky encounter.”

.....

Every cultivator of the Demon Race was amazed and astonished to the point that they couldn't even control it. Lang Xingtian and Heavenly Leopard King were still kneeling down at the front most position. That's right, although they were mighty Sixth Grade Great Saints, they had to kneel down before Big Yellow. They weren't kneeling for Big Yellow but to the god of their race, it was the belief in their hearts.

Presently, Heavenly Leopard King had already eliminated the thought of killing Big Yellow completely. He wouldn't dare to show any disrespect to Big Yellow anymore. Every member of the Heavenly Leopard bloodline had the same thought in their heads. Blasphemy against the totem was unforgivable.

Roar

Big Yellow roared non-stop. Every roar shook the heaven and earth, even their souls. His sturdy Dragon-Horse physique could no longer be described by the word 'mystical'. However, after he had completely absorbed the totem divine seal, he wag his tail and turned to his original form – the big and yellow dog.

The vast difference in impression blew their minds off. Most of them were holding the urge to spurt out a mouthful of blood. This was nonsense. He was supposed to be a naturally and richly endowed Dragon-Horse, but he had turned into a doggy shape now.

“Haha...”

Big Yellow could feel his current cultivation level. He then laughed in satisfaction. It was a kind of pleasantness that couldn't be put into words. If he fought against Leopard Wei now, he was sure that he could finished him off with one strike. Of course, after absorbing the divine seal, Leopard Wei wouldn't dare to fight him. Even the hot-blooded and very competitive geniuses of the Demon Race wouldn't dare to pick a fight with the totem.

“Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint, amazing!”

Jiang Chen was delighted. Clearly, Big Yellow had obtained the greatest reward in the Suspended Tower. With his current ability, he would have no problem in dealing with a First Grade Great Saint.

Swoosh

The moment the divine seal vanished, the entire Suspended Tower dimmed. Then, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow walked out of the tower. The entrance gate of the tower closed as they walked out. Big Yellow was drifting in the air and when he saw the crowd of people kneeling down below his feet, it petrified him.

“What happened to them? Why are they kneeling down? Are they trying to kowtow for Master Dog?”

Big Yellow was confused.

“You are an idiot. You have just absorbed the divine seal. You are now the incarnation of the totem. You are a godlike figure in their hearts now. Naturally, they will worship you. You have made a large contribution by bringing an enormous benefits to the Demon Race when you entered the ninth floor. The overall combat strength of the Demon Race would surely be raised to another level.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Chapter 881 - The Unforeseen Event of the Demon Race

After listening to Jiang Chen's words, Big Yellow coughed twice and switched to a serious face. Yet, his serious look seemed worse than his normal look. His narcissism was already planted deep into his bones. Jiang Chen shook his head and tried to maintain a distance with this freak.

This bastard gave a feigned pose. He cleared his throat before saying. "Everyone, don't kneel anymore, come, stand up to your feet."

Judging from his high and mighty tone, he had surely imagined himself as the totem. From Jiang Chen's point of view, it wasn't easy for Big Yellow to not say 'stand up on your feet after kowtowing before me'.

Anyway, in the eyes of the Demon Race, Big Yellow was their totem. No one would dare to disrespect him. From today onwards, his status in the Demon Race would be unshakable. Although the decision maker for all the important matters was still Lang Xingtian, even Lang Xingtian wouldn't dare to cold-shoulder him.

Lang Xingtian and the Heavenly Leopard King were the first two to stand up, followed by the rest. The atmosphere was still as silent as before.

"Big Yellow, you have brought great luck and destiny to our Demon Race. Your contribution is invaluable."

Lang Xingtian said.

“Patriarch, Great Elder, come forward.”

Big Yellow looked at the two of them and spoke.

Lang Xingtian and the Heavenly Leopard King exchanged a glance. According to their current internal status in the Demon Race, they should be enemies, but they didn't dare refuse Big Yellow's command. They walked towards Big Yellow and cupped their fists.

“When the divine seal of the totem descended, I received a message from it. It said that the world will be thrown into chaos in the near future. The Demon Race must be united in order to survive this chaos. Internal disorder will only weaken the overall strength of our race and eventually causing the extinction of our race. The totem hopes that you two will understand the bigger picture and be united.”

Big Yellow said solemnly.

“This is the message from the totem. I will not defy it.”

Lang Xingtian and the Heavenly Leopard King said simultaneously. The present scenario relieved the worries in Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's heart. It seemed like the totem was really powerful. It occupied an unshakable position in the Demon Race's

heart. It was only one word and it immediately resolved all of the conflicts in the Demon Race.

As a matter of fact, the internal disorder in the Demon Race did not just happen for a day or two. The only way to resolve it was with the help of the totem. It was undeniably the simplest way to settle the issue. It was imaginable that after today, their internal conflicts would gradually disappear and they would all become as united as a steel plank. This was something that Jiang Chen desired to see because he was going to establish a good rapport with the entire Demon Race, instead of a party in the Demon Race.

The spatial zone that contained the Suspended Tower was closed. Big Yellow went into seclusion. After refining the divine seal, he needed some time to digest them. The benefits weren't only given to him but to all the cultivators of the Demon Race. Plenty of them had made an advancement under the blessing of the light rays.

Leopard Wei also went into seclusion when he returned to his place to digest the ancient inheritance. When Jiang Chen returned to his courtyard, he tried to unlock the secrets in the blood talisman, but, the blood talisman was as snobbish as a boss. It ignored Jiang Chen regardless of what ways Jiang Chen used.

“Motherf*cker.”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes and cursed. He initially thought that he had gotten some kind of unique treasure. Now, it seemed like it was useless even if the item was a unique treasure. He certainly had brought back a boss that didn't cooperate with his demands.

Lang Xingtian, the Heavenly Leopard King and Peacock King came to his courtyard. This was probably the first time that three of them were so harmonious. This was all because of Big Yellow's action. Jiang Chen knew that they were here to inquire about the situation in ninth floor. Big Yellow had gone into seclusion but Jiang Chen was also one of the candidates who had entered the ninth floor. He would be the most suitable person to ask right now.

“Patriarch, Great Elder, Peacock King.”

Jiang Chen greeted them. As for Heavenly Leopard King, he didn't hold any grudges against him. The previous conflict was only because they were standing at different sides. Now that the problem was solved, Jiang Chen had accepted him as an ally.

“Jiang Chen, you have created miracles for the Demon Race when the two of you entered the ninth floor. Big Yellow has attracted the divine seal to descend. What about you? What benefits have you gotten from the ninth floor?”

Lang Xingtian asked.

Jiang Chen was briefly stunned when they asked what benefits had he gotten. Anyway, this was what they should do because he had entered the ninth floor after all. They knew that Jiang Chen wouldn't be empty handed.

“To be honest, I didn't obtain anything in the Suspended Tower this time. There is a sacrificial altar at the center of the ninth floor.

Probably because I am a human, despite the bloodline of a Divine Beast in my body, I was repelled by the altar the moment I got close to it. But, when Big Yellow attracted the divine seal, there was a light beam that shot down from the void. I absorbed it, pushing me to the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. I'm already quite satisfied for that. My trip in the Suspended Tower wasn't in vain."

Jiang Chen sighed for a few times in between his word. He certainly wouldn't tell them about the blood talisman, it was related to the dragon transformation art. He couldn't let outsiders know about his cultivation method.

"I see."

The three of them nodded. They didn't have any doubts about what Jiang Chen said because when the divine seal descended, they could also see the situation inside the ninth floor clearly. There was no doubt that there was an ancient altar inside. At that time, only Big Yellow was on the altar whereas Jiang Chen was waiting below. So, they concluded that Jiang Chen was telling the truth.

Furthermore, the reason that Jiang Chen gave was perfectly logical. He was a human after all. They might be annoyed if he could also stay above the altar along with Big Yellow, the Suspended Tower was the inheritance of the Demon Race after all. They wouldn't feel comfortable if they saw a human obtain great benefits from it.

"Big Yellow has obtained tremendous benefits this time. He is now meditating on the power of the divine seal. I expect that he

would break through the Great Saint realm when he comes out.”

Jiang Chen said. He was quite confident in Big Yellow’s ability. Once the bloodline of the Dragon-Horse was fully activated, the improvements would go beyond people’s imagination. More importantly, the divine seal must have some kind of impressive feature that was yet to be discovered.

“That’s right. Seems like a true monstrous genius of the Demon Race is going to be born in no time. We’ll just wait until he gets to the Great Saint realm and then we’ll send him to Saint Origin Palace to cultivate.”

Lang Xingtian said. Heavenly Leopard King and Peacock King didn’t have any thoughts regarding Lang Xingtian’s word. Every Great Saint geniuses of the eight families would proceed to Saint Origin Palace to cultivate.

“Alright Jiang Chen, you should take some rest. We’ll leave now.”

Peacock King said to Jiang Chen. Then, the three of them left. Jiang Chen glanced at the place where Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow were in. He then found a rocky stool to sit. He didn’t go into seclusion because that wouldn’t help him much given his current condition. His cultivation was already very stable. What he needed the most now was a fight. He imagined that those geniuses of the Sky Ranking were going to confront him now after all, he had killed Desolate Liang.

The next day, early in the morning, the Golden Fur Lion King arrived at the courtyard, bring a cultivator from the Gu Family along, Gu Mu.

“Prince Jiang.”

Gu Mu saw Jiang Chen and cupped his fists at him. When he sensed Jiang Chen’s cultivation, besides feeling astonished, he also felt more relieved. Although the Gu Family wasn’t involved in those series of incidents, they were crystal clear about the things that happened outside of their family. Currently, turbulent movements were happening across the Pure Land. Many geniuses were preparing to kill Jiang Chen. As such, it was necessary for Jiang Chen to advanced his cultivation to handle these confrontations.

“Gu Mu, why have you come here?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Prince, I’m afraid that you will have to come along with me back to the Gu Family. Only you can resolve the matter in the Gu Family right now.”

Gu Mu said with a frown. His tone was full of concern.

“What has happened to sister Ning?”

Jiang Chen’s facial expression changed. Wu Ningzhu must be

involved in this matter or at least related to her mother, otherwise Gu Mu wouldn't personally come here to find him.

“Prince is indeed farsighted. After miss Ningzhu joined the Gu Family, her bloodline was unlocked by the patriarch, causing her cultivation s to improve by leaps and bounds. Besides that, she also had a lucky encounter, pushing her cultivation to the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Her excellent abilities has attracted a lot of young pursuers, including those monstrous geniuses. Three days later is the Gu family's meeting. Our patriarch would announce the betrothal of miss Ningzhu to Gu Liufeng. As long as miss Ningzhu agrees to marry Gu Liufeng, the patriarch would pardon all of the mistakes that her mother, Gu Lan has made and would release her from prison. You should know that miss Ningzhu's main purpose of coming to Saint Origin World is to find her mother.”

Gu Mu told everything that happened to Jiang Chen. He didn't explanation more, he believed that Jiang Chen had the wisdom to see through the situation.

Jiang Chen knitted his brows when he heard what Gu Mu said. It seemed like he had to pay a visit to the Gu Family, otherwise his wife would be snatched away by the others. Besides that, he had also promised Wu Ningzhu that he would help her find Gu Lan. Now that Gu Lan has been found, but that didn't mean that Wu Ningzhu had to exchange her happiness for her mother's freedom, because that would make Wu Ningzhu more unhappy and Gu Lan perturbed.

“Alright, I will go with you to the Gu Family now.”

Jiang Chen replied without hesitation. The things in the Demon Race had already been resolved. He was going to go to the Gu Family anyway. He only managed establish a good rapport with Gu Mu. There was still a long way to go for him to establish a firm rapport with the Gu Family. In this trip to the Gu Family, he would resolve everything – the matter of Wu Ningzhu and Gu Lan.

“Oh ya, brother Jiang, I heard that the 2th genius of the Sky Ranking, Shi Han has already come out of his seclusion. He declared that he is going to take your life. You have to be more careful.”

Golden Fur Lion King said.

Chapter 882 - Shi Han

“The second genius of the Sky Ranking? They can’t hold it in after all. It doesn’t matter anyway because even the second genius of the Sky Ranking will only face one outcome and that is death.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smirk. What he needed the most right now was a battle. The second genius of the Sky Ranking wouldn’t be a weak opponent, which would make the battle meaningful.

“Brother, you can’t take this Shi Han for granted. Not even the genius who entered the eighth floor of the Suspended Tower – Kong Yang is his opponent. Only the super monstrous genius of the Desolate Family was able to suppress him. There are three categories in the Sky Ranking. The top three, top ten and those below the top ten. There are major differences among the top three despite being ranked close to each other. The Shi Family is different from the other families as they were born fighters. They have a boosting effect in their bloodlines. When they use this ability, their combat strength will drastically increase. Although Shi Han is only a half-step Great Saint, any ordinary First Grade Great Saint is no match for him.”

Golden Fur Lion King was afraid that Jiang Chen would be reckless in the battle, so he quickly reminded and warned him that none of the geniuses in the top three were an easy opponent.

“I appreciate Lion King’s reminder. I know what to do.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Golden Fur Lion King. He had a good

understanding about the eight families of the Pure Land. Although the Desolate Family was the strongest amongst them, but if all the families were compared on their fighting prowess, the Shi Family would be first, especially after they have used their ability. Every cultivator who had solidified themselves would be unusually powerful. Thus, Shi Han must be powerful enough to be ranked second in the Sky Ranking.

Yet, the more challenging it was, the more excited Jiang Chen became. He thirsted to fight someone like Shi Han. It was conceivable that even though Leopard Wei and Shi Han are at the same level, there was a huge gap between their powers. However, that didn't concern Jiang Chen. He was able to defeat Leopard Wei when he was still a Sixth Grade Minor Saint. Now that he had advanced to the Seventh Grade Minor Saint, he have full confidence in defeating Shi Han. They said that Shi Han could defeat any ordinary First Grade Great Saint. Jiang Chen could do that as well. With his current ability, after transforming into his human-dragon form, no ordinary First Grade Great Saint would be able to stand up against him.

“I have heard about the relationship between you and miss Wu Ningzhu. I hope that you will handle the matters of the Gu Family appropriately this time.”

Golden Fur Lion King reminded. Due to Jiang Chen being a hot-blooded young man, he feared that Jiang Chen would provoke the Gu Family as well. Now that five families had already been offended, Jiang Chen couldn't afford to offend the last family that was left among the eight families, otherwise, he would be doomed.

“Of course, sister Ning is a member of the Gu Family, aunt Gu Lan is too. I won’t go against the Gu Family for their sake. I have my own ways in dealing with this matter.”

Jiang Chen revealed a confident face. Due to the connection of Wu Ningzhu and Gu Lan to the Gu Family, he couldn’t take the risk of offending the Gu Family. On the contrary, allying himself with the Gu Family would bring him some advantages.

Jiang Chen then took his leave after bidding goodbye to Golden Fur Lion King. He left the Spiritual Space Mountain with Gu Mu without bidding goodbye to Lang Xingtian and Peacock King and headed to the Gu Family.

“Gu Mu, what is the cultivation of Gu Liufeng?”

On the way, Jiang Chen asked.

“Gu Liufeng is the number one genius of the Gu Family. He is ranked 4th in the Sky Ranking. Although he wasn’t as powerful as Shi Han, don’t underestimate his power. In a recent expedition, he had gotten pretty lucky. He is now only half a step away from the Great Saint realm. Our patriarch thinks that Gu Liufeng is qualified enough to compete with Kong Yang and Shi Han now.”

Gu Mu said.

“The number one genius of Gu Family, this is interesting.”

Jiang Chen smiled. It would be very meaningful if he could fight with a genius like him.

“Prince, when you arrive at the Gu Family this time, don’t act rashly because that is the territory of the Gu Family after all. At any rate, you are just an outsider. Gu Liufeng was cultivated and nurtured by the patriarch. He is a genius who is highly regarded by the patriarch.”

Gu Mu reminded Jiang Chen. He had the same concern as Golden Fur Lion King. Given Jiang Chen’s temper, a little conflict or disagreement might mess up the whole thing.

“Don’t worry about it. Your patriarch has also put a lot of effort in nurturing sister Ning, this allowed her to break through so many grades, to a point where she reached the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. This fact alone indicates how much kindness your patriarch has.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Patriarch and Gu Lan are siblings. Miss Ningzhu is considered the niece of the patriarch. Last time, patriarch was very angry with her when she was brought back from the Eastern Continent. At that time, an old patriarch was still the patriarch at that time. Over the years, the patriarch would visit Gu Lan in a fixed period of time. Gu Lan had been kept imprisoned due to the fact that she doesn’t admit her faults. When miss Ningzhu arrived, the patriarch compensated miss Ningzhu as he felt guilty of leaving her mother inside the cell all these years. Otherwise, he wouldn’t betroth her to Gu Liufeng.”

Gu Mu said. Although his status in the Gu Family wasn't comparable to the patriarch and the other higher ups, his understanding of the relationship between the brother and sister was deep.

“Seems like he isn't a truly heartless person.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He recalled that Wu Ningzhu would always gnash her teeth when she recalled her uncle.

They weren't travelling at a high speed. Along the journey, Gu Mu told him everything that was related to the Gu Family, especially the circumstances of Wu Ningzhu in this period of time. In conclusion, Wu Ningzhu didn't receive any harm in the Gu Family.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen knitted his brows. A cold intent surged out of his body. His eyes became as chilling as a blade.

“What happened?”

Gu Mu noticed the changes on Jiang Chen. His eyes swept through their surroundings, but nothing unusual was detected. He then asked.

Jiang Chen's eyes were fixed on a position, in the void behind him and said coldly. “Your haunting is relentless, show yourself.”

Gu Mu was stunned and quickly looked at the direction where Jiang Chen was looking at. The void bent and a black clothed man emerged. His face was veiled with a black cloth. His eyes were emotionless, giving people a gruesome feeling.

“You have sharp senses.”

The black clothed man said. It was the voice of an elder. His cultivation grade was half-step Great Saint.

“The people of Dark Shadow surely doesn’t know what death is. It seems like the lesson of the Moon Pavilion wasn’t enough.”

Jiang Chen said in a cold tone.

“So it was really you who did it.”

His opponent’s eyes turned colder, exuding a chilling murderous intent.

“People of Dark Shadow.”

Gu Mu’s facial expression changed. He had naturally heard of this organization. It was a special group. They wouldn’t usually be seen, but people would always be assassinated when they appear. This organization had very strong foundation and forces. Its overall strength wasn’t weaker than any of the eight families in Pure Land. None of the families would dare to provoke them, because if they were targeted, it would be like they were haunted

by ghosts.

However, Gu Mu was impressed by Jiang Chen's perception. The assassins of Dark Shadow were highly-trained in stealth and assassination. He didn't think that Jiang Chen would be able to notice the assassin, before he tried to even attacked.

"That's right. It was me who did it. However, it's a pity that the information flow within Dark Shadow has fallen behind. Otherwise, they won't send you to assassinate me because that would only be sending you to your death."

Jiang Chen said coldly.

"I know that you have killed Desolate Liang, but killing a Ninth Grade Minor Saint and a half-step Great Saint are two entirely different things. Brat! You have made Dark Shadow suffer major losses, and today I will take your life!"

The assassin unleashed his murderous intent.

"I have already said that the news you received was not accurate. You only knew that I have killed Desolate Liang, but you don't know that I have defeated the 11th genius of the Sky Ranking, Leopard Wei and the fact that I have already advanced to the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. The day will come when I will wipe out the entire Dark Shadow organization."

Jiang Chen gave a violent smirk. He didn't need to be soft-

hearted to these phantom assassins.

“What?”

The assassin exclaimed. He surely didn't know anything about the battle between Jiang Chen and Leopard Wei. Not just him, Gu Mu didn't even know about this either. One should know that their battle inside the spatial zone of the Suspended Tower wasn't known to everyone, except for the cultivators of Demon Race.

Pu Chi

At this time, a cold and long sword impaled the assassin's skull, causing him to die on the spot. Gu Mu changed his expression dramatically, because the killer of this assassin wasn't Jiang Chen. The sword came from behind and pierced the assassin's head instantly.

It was a stone sword. There wasn't a single lustre on the surface, but it was incredibly sharp. A powerful energy rippled out of the stone sword, pulverizing the assassin, turning him into a blood mist. Then, a youth in bronze-coloured robe appeared. His hand was still holding onto the stone sword. His face carried a smile while gazing at Jiang Chen.

He looked very sturdy. He didn't look very handsome, but he wasn't ugly either. His body was filled with domineering arrogance. It was imaginable how great his ability was, to be able to kill a half-step Great Saint with a single sword strike.

“Shi Han.”

Gu Mu exclaimed. This youth wasn't any stranger, he was the 2nd genius of the Sky Ranking – Shi Han.

“This piece of trash is really annoying, but I have already gotten rid of him for you. Now, I am going to kill you. Your life is mine.”

Shi Han slowly kept his stone sword and said emotionlessly.

“There were many of them who wanted to kill me, but they all ended up dead in my hands. You won't be an exception.”

Jiang Chen replied in calm tone. He had already noticed Shi Han's presence before this but he didn't expect him to kill the Dark Shadow assassin. Plus, it was an instant skill. This had stirred up Jiang Chen's powerful combat intent. Sure enough, the second genius of the Sky Ranking was uncommonly strong.

“Good, you are truly arrogant. Three strikes. I will only need three strikes to kill you.”

Shi Han was even more arrogant. He didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes at all. Of course, he had the right to be arrogant.

“Prince, you have to be careful. This man is not easy to be dealt with.”

Gu Mu reminded. He couldn't provide any aid in the battle, because if he did, he would be killed instantly by Shi Han.

“It doesn't matter. Wait for me from a distance. I will continue the journey to the Gu Family after killing Shi Han.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone. His face was full of confidence.

“Alright. If you can take Shi Han's head to the patriarch, I'm sure that he would be pleased.”

Gu Mu's eyes sparkled.

Chapter 883 - The Climaxing Battle

“Oh?”

Jiang Chen was stunned as he couldn't grasp the meaning in Gu Mu's words. He wondered why would the mighty patriarch of the Gu Family be interested in Shi Han's head.

“Correct. I have killed Gu Xuantian's youngest son. Because of that, he detests me. If you can bring my head back to the Gu Family, Gu Xuantian will certainly treat you as a distinguished guest. But it looks like you won't have that chance.”

Shi Han shrugged as if it didn't even concern him in the slightest bit.

“He's right. But it was a life-and-death battle. Even if Shi Han had killed the patriarch's youngest son at that time, the patriarch couldn't do anything about it.”

Gu Mu said.

“I understand.”

Jiang Chen flexed his body and turned into a human-dragon. There were somethings that didn't need to be explained. It was true that Shi Han and the patriarch's son fought in a life-and-death match and Gu Xuantian couldn't say anything about it, but it was still impossible for him to forget the bereavement of his child. It

was imaginable how much hatred he was feeling right now. If Jiang Chen could kill Shi Han and bring his head back to the Gu Family, it would be, without a doubt, a great gift to Gu Xuantian, it would also be very advantageous in his trip to the Gu Family.

Swoosh

Gu Mu moved to a far distance without delay when he saw that the two of them were already in combat mode. Given his current cultivation grade, he wouldn't be able to withstand the combat waves that would leak out of their battle. Currently, Jiang Chen was feeling quite nervous, Shi Han wasn't an ordinary genius after all. Although Jiang Chen was abnormally strong, he was still not certain if he could defeat Shi Han.

On the contrary, if Jiang Chen could really kill Shi Han, it would instantly gain him the respect of the Gu Family and it would act as a meeting gift to Gu Xuantian. If he could defeat Shi Han, it also meant that he could defeat Gu Liufeng.

While observing the transformation of Jiang Chen, Shi Han couldn't help but be alarmed. He could feel that Jiang Chen's combat strength has drastically increased.

"That is a very powerful transformation technique. It is even more powerful than our race's Rock Form. Anyhow, the gap in our strength is just too wide. It is a gap that he could never fill for the rest of his life."

Shi Han was as proud as usual. He totally did not put Jiang Chen

in his eyes because the difference between their cultivation was no doubt enormous. Shi Han was the second genius on the Sky Ranking. He disdained all the young generations below the heaven. He wasn't scared even if he faced the monstrous genius of the Desolate Family again.

“Come on, let me see how strong you have become after your transformation.”

Shi Han fluctuated his Qi, unleashing the Qi of half-step Great Saint, as if he was surrounded by a tidal wave, creating popping sounds as it hit against the void.

“True Dragon Palm.”

Jiang Chen launched his True Dragon Palm. With his current strength and dragon transformation, it enhanced the power of his True Dragon Palm enormously. The damage of this single attack could cause an apocalypse.

Shi Han reacted. He lightly sent out a palm seal. It was a common and insipid palm seal that seemed powerless but the Qi that exploded from it was like a power that could topple mountains and overturn seas. It was a great combat technique but it wasn't a technique that came from the Shi Family, as their combat techniques were usually strong and powerful. It must be a combat technique that he acquired during his experience outside his family.

Hong Long

True Dragon Palm collided with Shi Han's huge palm seal, producing a world-shaking rumble. The sky was instantly destroyed causing the turbulent current from the void to flow out. Almost everything around was vibrating with destructive energy.

With such a big commotion, it could not be concealed from other people. It had attracted the attention of many people.

“There are cultivators that are fighting over there. The combat waves are very strong. Let's go there and have a look.”

“I have no idea who's fighting over there but it seems massive. We'll go and find out.”

.....

Within moments, people were flying towards the source of the commotion. The Pure Land had never been in peace since the arrival of Jiang Chen. Naturally, people would be interested in today's unexpected battle.

On the battlefield, Shi Han's large palm seal was pulverized by the True Dragon Palm. He was sent around 40 meters away due to the backlash. His facial expression changed drastically as he stared at Jiang Chen in disbelief. It was truly unimaginable that he lost in their first exchange of attacks.

“Yes.”

From a far distance, Gu Mu clapped his hands and said yay excitedly. Jiang Chen's power amazed him once more. Initially, he was very worried when Jiang Chen decided to fight Shi Han, as his opponent was just too powerful this time. However, he wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen would gain the upper hand in the first round. However, the fact still remained that it would still be very hard for Jiang Chen to kill or even defeat Shi Han because he wasn't in his Rock Form yet.

“Good, Jiang Chen, you could actually send me away with just your Seventh Grade Minor Saint combat strength. I have to admit that even I am astonished. It seems like it would require me to put some more effort to kill you. Rock Form!”

Shi Han bellowed and turned into his Rock Form. The surface of his body produced cracking sounds. Layers of chipseal started to form on the surface of his body. His sturdy body grew a fold sturdier. His height was now 9 meters tall. Currently, he is now a stone man. His was like fragments of stones and rocks that were put together.

“Look. That is Jiang Chen. The stone man is Shi Han. He announced that he would kill Jiang Chen yesterday. I had never expected that the two of them will really engage in a fight.”

“My god, they both started an intense battle as soon as Jiang Chen left the Demon Race. Luckily, we managed to come here early, otherwise we will miss this exciting battle. Who do you all think would win in this fight?”

“Isn’t it already obvious? It will be Shi Han for sure. He is the second most powerful genius on the Sky Ranking. Not even a First Grade Great Saint could fight him. Although Jiang Chen was able to kill Desolate Liang, his cultivation is just too weak to fight Shi Han. He is no match for him.”

“That isn’t certain yet. I could sense that Jiang Chen’s Qi is a lot stronger than the time he killed Desolate Liang. Have you all noticed that even Shi Han has to use his Rock Form to fight Jiang Chen?”

.....

A lot of people had arrive on the scene. They had been expecting this battle after Shi Han made the declaration to kill Jiang Chen, but they had never imagined that these two competitors would silently start a fight here. It would be a great loss if they missed such an intense and world-shaking battle.

The rock-formed Shi Han’s combat strength had been enhanced enormously. Judging by his Qi, it wasn’t the slightest bit weaker than Jiang Chen’s. This would be one of the most dazzling war among geniuses. If Jiang Chen could really defeat Shi Han, the second genius on the Sky Ranking, it would no doubt create a myth. He would also earn an unshakable reputation amongst the geniuses on the Pure Land.

“Jiang Chen, do you dare to compete with me with your physique?”

Shi Han challenged Jiang Chen. Physique was the thing that the cultivators of the Shi Family was most confident about, especially when they were in their Rock Form. Their skin had reached an indestructible stage.

“No problem.”

Jiang Chen answered spontaneously. He too liked to fight using his physique. Although the physique of the Shi Family was strong, his dragon scale physique wouldn't be weaker either.

“Now, receive my attack.”

Shi Han attacked. His attack was swift and violent. He appeared in front of Jiang Chen in just a few blinks. He sent a violent punch, crushing the void ahead before reaching Jiang Chen.

He! (A form of bellow)

Jiang Chen let out a bellow. He clenched his dragon fist tightly, producing dazzling sparks, before it met Shi Han's attack. Both of their fists carried a power that could destroy the heaven and earth. No one knew what kind of shocking impact it would create when both of their fists collide.

Hong Long

They both collided. It was the collision of two physiques—the most traditional and barbaric way of fighting. They were

rebounded by the impact but they collided again in the next instant. They were both full of pride. They would never give up and surrender in their fights.

Bang *Bang* *Bang*

The following scene showed them how a real barbaric fight looked like. Every impact shivered the souls of the bystanders. They wouldn't have imagined that there were such barbaric people left in the world. They were certain that if they were hit by any of those impacts, their only end would be crushed into powder.

The battle of physique continued for a few minutes but the result was a dead heat.

‘The physique of the Shi Family is without a doubt powerful. This genius who was ranked 2th on the Sky Ranking is incomparably stronger to the other geniuses. But this is just what I wanted. Only a battle like this could ignite my potential power.’

Jiang Chen was amazed. He had to admit that Shi Han's strength was beyond his expectation, but it didn't concern him much because he would have ways, many of them, even if Shi Han was unimaginably powerful.

Shi Han on the other hand was astonished even more. Before coming out of his seclusion, he didn't even put Jiang Chen in his eyes because their difference in cultivation was just too wide. It would be a piece of cake for him to kill Jiang Chen. However, the current scenario told him otherwise. His opponent had reached the

point where he could match his rocky physique. He didn't gain the upper hand during their collision just now. Plus, because of the intense impacts, it caused disruption in the flow of his Qi and blood, but Jiang Chen was still as fine as before. There wasn't a single unstable fluctuation in his Qi.

“Jiang Chen, I will certainly kill you today.”

Shi Han was infuriated. Both of his eyes were glittering non-stop. He suddenly bellowed. “Heavenly Tyrant Stone Fist!”

Shi Han launched the powerful Heavenly Tyrant Stone Fist. It was the most formidable combat technique of Shi Family. It was unimaginably greater when this technique was used by Shi Han. He knew that his physique could no longer harm Jiang Chen, it's now impossible to kill Jiang Chen that way. As such, he must use a stronger technique.

Hong Long

Shi Han struck out a punch. The wind and clouds in the surrounding changed. The huge fist destroyed the void around it, it was like a mountain crushing the void in the sky. Fiery sparks were created everywhere. They were created because of the attack's great power and speed. This punch was going to destroy everything.

Chapter 884 - Ten Thousands Spears That Can Extinguish the World

This was a punch with heavenly power that could crush everything. Everyone's face changed dramatically. They were sure that not even a First Grade Great Saint would be able to withstand this Heavenly Tyrant Stone Fist. Gu Mu's facial expression became nervous. He had no idea how Jiang Chen would deal this punch.

Despite that, Jiang Chen's expression remained unchanged. His eyes were as still as the water in a well, as though they were always unperturbed. That was his self-confidence, an unshakable self-confidence that originated from his heart and bones.

Jiang Chen moved. He adjusted all the dragon marks in his Qi Sea. Then, seventy two thousand dragon marks rippled and rushed out of his body, surrounding him. Numerous deep dragon roars were heard. These dragons provided the perfect foil for Jiang Chen's divinity.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen flew and circled towards the incoming fist. Someone noticed that the dragons marks were all under his legs. It contained a tremendous energy wave, creating a terrifying whirlwind that could kill everything.

Azure Dragon Five Steps.

That's right. It was the great Azure Dragon Five Steps that could deal unimaginable amount of damage. It was certainly greater than the Heavenly Tyrant Stone Fist. Jiang Chen's speed was very fast. He was already on his fifth step when he met the punch. It heavily stamped the stone fist.

Ka Cha

Hong Long

Jiang Chen's body was like a light pillar. Even if the stone fist was undeniably strong, it was unable to push Jiang Chen away. Instead, the large stone fist cracked as Jiang Chen made the final stamp. Then, it exploded and turned into countless of pieces.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

Under the backlash of the impact, Shi Han wasn't able to control his body from moving more than ten steps backwards. Jiang Chen on the other hand was fine. This round of battle obviously wasn't in Shi Han's favour.

“How is that possible? Why am I being rebounded?”

Shi Han couldn't believe what happened. He was a half-step Great Saint, the second genius of the Sky Ranking, but now he was defeated by a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. This must be a joke. It was unacceptable to him.

“My god, isn’t Jiang Chen exceedingly terrifying? His current strength is a lot stronger back when he killed Desolate Liang. I remember that he was merely a Sixth Grade Minor Saint at that time. His speed of improvement is really heaven defying.”

“Have you all noticed that both of their strength were on par? When they were fighting using their physique, no one was the clear winner. It only indicates that there isn’t any significant difference between the two of them. But when they were fighting using their combat techniques, Shi Han lost. It only means that his combat technique isn’t as great as Jiang Chen.”

“That’s right. The Heavenly Tyrant Stone Fist is a very powerful technique of the Shi Family, but Jiang Chen’s technique seems scarier. It exuded the feeling of might. If we are comparing the strength of their combat techniques, Jiang Chen’s combat technique is certainly higher than Shi Han. And because of that, Shi Han was defeated in this round.”

“We’ll see. Shi Han isn’t easy to deal with. He must have some greater techniques. No one knows what the outcome of this battle will be. But I have to admit that this battle is more exciting than the battle between Jiang Chen and Desolate Liang who died in just a single strike.”

.....

Many bystanders were amazed. There was no way to hide their astonishment. Jiang Chen had left an unforgettable impression in their heads. One should know that Shi Han was the number two genius of the Sky Ranking and majority of them were betting on

him to win, but the current scenario proved them otherwise. The battle has just started not long ago, but Jiang Chen was already in control of the battle.

“You aren’t my opponent. So this is all the rock form of the Shi Family is about. Is this the strength of the number two genius of the Sky Ranking.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was flat, but the sneer really provoked Shi Han. Due to him losing this round of exchange, he didn’t have the right to rebut Jiang Chen’s word.

“Jiang Chen, I won’t lose.”

Shi Han was enraged. His nine meter tall body looked like a stone god. The chipseal on the surface of his body fluctuated, creating a stronger energy wave than before.

“Mountain Splitting Seal.”

Shi Han bellowed. Both of his palm faced upwards. A huge mountain was being condensed above his palms. It was condensed fully by the energy but it looked exactly like a real mountain.

It was unknown how much weight this mountain carried. It might be billions of kilograms as the pressure from this mountain made Shi Han’s body produce cracking sounds.

“Go.”

Shi Han hurled it. As the huge mountain moved, a thunderous sound was heard. It charged at Jiang Chen after locking on his Qi.

“Good, Mountain Splitting Seal...it’s a pity that it is still not going to harm me. Shi Han, don’t waste your time. Nine Solar Profound Finger.”

Jiang Chen put his hands together. Billions of light rays illuminated from his finger tip and runes were speedily condensed around it. Jiang Chen was using the power of the Saint Bone. He pointed his finger forward and nine large golden finger rushed forth. Every void that it passed by were ripped into shreds. The nine large golden fingers were like nine heavenly rivers that hung in the sky. No one knew how much damage it would do.

This time, the nine fingers didn’t combine into one. It only charged forward.

Hong Long

The heaven was falling, the earth was shattering and mountains were shaking. When the Nine Solar Profound Finger smashed against Mountain Splitting Seal, the sky above was ruined. A hole that was hundred of miles large appeared in the sky. It looked black and gruesome.

Due to the additional power coming from the Saint Bone, the damage that was unleashed from the Nine Solar Profound Finger was doubled. The Mountain Splitting Seal couldn’t take it and was

penetrated through by the fingers before it exploded into boundless of energy and vanished in the void.

.....

This time, Shi Han spurted out a mouthful of blood, but this injury couldn't be compared to the psychological impact that he suffered. He thought that today's battle would be effortless, but since the very beginning of the battle until now, he had always been suppressed by Jiang Chen. Now he was being beaten until he spurted out blood. He have never imagined that Jiang Chen had reached such a terrifying stage.

On the other side, Jiang Chen knitted his brows. Shi Han's power was beyond his imagination as well. One should know that he was now a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Although he defeated Shi Han in almost every round, his opponent didn't receive any severe injuries. It would certainly not be easy to kill Shi Han. Shi Han could just flee away from him easily if he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen.

However, Jiang Chen would never let Shi Han escape. Such a powerful opponent would certainly be a great threat in the future. Given Shi Han's talent, he must have gained tremendous amount knowledge and experience from this battle. If he escaped, he probably would have a break through in a short period of time, and reach the Great Saint realm. At that time, it would be more than difficult to defeat him.

Jiang Chen slowly drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword. The next thing that he would do was to try whatever he could to kill Shi

Han. He wouldn't give him a chance.

Shi Han didn't have any thoughts of running away as he hadn't shown his true strength yet. If he left now, his heroic reputation would be destroyed and he would become the biggest laughing stock in the Pure Land. It would be hard for him to raise his head in public. This was the outcome that he wouldn't accept.

Shi Han waved his arm and a long spear materialized. That was a stone spear. It looked dull and lackluster but don't be fooled by it.

"Jiang Chen, you have totally enraged me. Receive my attack, Ten Thousand Spears."

Shi Han went ballistic. The long spear in his hand was rippling intensely. Countless of club length spear was formed. The land was covered by the shades of the spears. The ground was shaking as if it was transforming into a world of spears.

"Truly awesome. This is Shi Han's ultimate technique. Every spear was lethally destructive. It has formed a power sphere of spear, like an inner world. Did you all see that? Even if those long spears are broken, they will automatically be condensed again without limits. I can't tell how terrifying this technique is."

"Yeah. There is no skill that can break this attack. Any powerful cultivator who goes into the world of spear will be impaled alive."

"Let's see how would Jiang Chen deal this."

.....

The intense battle was too exciting, it had stirred the countless of bystanders' emotion. Currently, the battle was approaching its end, Shi Han had already used his greatest attack. If Jiang Chen was able to break this attack, the loser would be Shi Han. If he couldn't, he would die in the rain of spears.

Howl

A howl was heard from the Heavenly Saint Sword. Jiang Chen didn't have a single sign of fear. He rushed into the ocean of stone spears. These stone spears could probably stop other experts but not Jiang Chen. He had already found the weak spot of this technique, which was the original stone spear – the one that Shi Han was holding now. If he could find the original stone spear and destroy it, the other spears would also be destroyed.

It was without a doubt a very difficult task, the original stone spear looked exactly like the other stone spears in the ocean of spears, not to mention, that these stone spears were moving in high speed to attack him. It would still be impossible even if one had a very sharp perceptive ability.

However, the Great Soul Derivation Technique was exceedingly terrifying. It allowed his soul's perception to reach an unimaginable level. Adding the Illusion Heart Sutra which he had also cultivated, he would be able to accurately distinguish the original weapon from the condensed weapons. As such, Shi Han

was destined to face his defeat when he used this skill against Jiang Chen.

Chapter 885 - A Visit to Propose Marriage

Hong Long

Rumbling sounds resounded throughout the world of spears. Countless of sharp stone spears bombarded Jiang Chen crazily, but Jiang Chen was undaunted by. A swing of his Heavenly Saint Sword destroyed a large number of stone spears. The light of the sword that moved around him blocked any attack from getting near him.

Despite Jiang Chen's powerful performance, Gu Mu was still worried for him. One should know that destroying these several portions of stone spears wasn't a big deal, as they were unlimited. It would be impossible to eliminate all of the stone spears unless the original spear was found.

While Jiang Chen was destroying the stone spears, he was also circulating his Great Soul Derivation Technique to the maximum. A shapeless soul energy permeated every corner and place of the world of spears. He found out that there was a stone spear that circulated quicker than the other stone spears. It had a random movement unlike the other spears, which followed a fixed pattern of directions. It appeared at different places randomly, leaving no traces for the target to find out its real location.

“Found it.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. Without any consideration, he concluded that this was the original combat weapon of Shi Han.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen was moving at maximum speed, like a haunting specter. He appeared in front of the stone spear in a few blinks. The divine-like Heavenly Saint Sword slashed at the stone spear abruptly.

Clang

The force of the strike was already too powerful, adding the incredible sharpness of the Heavenly Saint Sword to it, the stone spear was not able to withstand it. However, the body of the stone spear was sturdy enough that it was not broken by the slash, but plaintive howls were heard.

“Not good.”

Shi Han said. His face was filled with astonishment. He wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen could locate his original stone spear so quickly. This was truly unbelievable, the biggest advantage of this technique was that the combat weapon could move in random locations, making it extremely difficult for the opponent to lock on its position. As long as the opponent was trapped by thousands of spears, even if the opponent was a very powerful expert, the opponent would still end up dead because of fatigue, but this no longer worked on Jiang Chen.

Clang

The Heavenly Saint Sword slashed once more on the stone spear. This time, all the condensed stone spears around were pulverized, ending the world of stone spears.

Blood gushed out of Shi Han's mouth. The backlash he absorbed this time was greater and more severe than before, the stone spear was his natal weapon. The destruction of the illusory world had greatly impacted him. It caused his combat strength drop by a grade.

“Return to me.”

Shi Han ordered the Stone Spear back to him. It was clear to him that Jiang Chen's power was beyond his. It would be impossible to kill Jiang Chen today, but he couldn't afford to lose the stone spear.

“Trying to recall your natal weapon? Unfortunately, you won't have that chance anymore.”

How could Jiang Chen possibly give Shi Han the chance? Currently, Shi Han was no longer his opponent. He struck out his True Dragon Palm and grabbed the stone spear.

Weng *Weng*

The stone spear began to shudder and produced a buzzing sound as it fell into Jiang Chen's grip. It was trying to escape from Jiang

Chen's grip but his grip was as firm as an iron clamp. No matter how hard the stone spear shook, it couldn't escape from his grip.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen immediately casted a few sealing stamps on it before keeping it into his Qi Sea.

Shi Han facial expression changed dramatically, he couldn't feel his stone spear the moment it vanished, their connection was lost. This was an incident that had never happened before. It indicated that the spear was already sealed by Jiang Chen. His natal weapon was seized by Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, return my stone spear.”

Shi Han's eyes turned red. He absolutely couldn't lose this stone spear because he couldn't afford to.

“Humph! Shi Han, you don't have a chance. Nine Phantom Wolves.”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. His murderous aura surged before he casted the Nine Phantom Wolves. At this moment, nine figures that looked exactly like Jiang Chen emerged in the void. Every one of them was in dragon-form, Jiang Chen held the sparkling Heavenly Saint Sword. Nine of them besieged Shi Han.

“What?”

Shi Han exclaimed. His mind was already messed up greatly. He was unable to determine the true Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen wouldn't give him the time to analyze the shadows thoroughly. The Heavenly Saint Swords stabbed forth like a cobra

Pu Chi

The real Heavenly Saint Sword violent pierced through Shi Han's body. Blood gushed out of the wound like a fountain. The chip seal on the surface of his body started to fall off. His body shrunk and returned to his human form, he no longer had the strength to sustain the rock form.

Currently, Shi Han looked completely fazed. Blood was gushing out of his mouth like pipe water. The vigorous expression in his eyes started to fade. He felt hopeless when he sensed that his vital force was leaking out of his body continuously.

He was the number one genius of the Shi Family and the 2th genius on the Sky Ranking. He was at the pinnacle, he was the one who usually decides the fates of his opponents. He had never thought that he would be killed. He had never thought that death would find him so quickly.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen drew out the sword from his body and cut off Shi Han's head. Initially, he wasn't interested in Shi Han's head, but after knowing the conflicts between Shi Han and Gu Xuantian, he

thought that he could use it as a present for Gu Xuantian. He was sure that Gu Xuantian would be pleased to accept this gift.

The death of Shi Han had turned the entire atmosphere silent. Everyone was dumbfounded by the incident. No one would have thought that Shi Han would be killed at the end of the battle. Even if Jiang Chen had suppressed Shi Han in their battle, none of them thought that he would die, even if Shi Han couldn't win, he could always flee. The second genius of the Sky Ranking died in Jiang Chen's hands just like that.

Jiang Chen was holding Shi Han's head while approaching the stunned Gu Mu. Clearly, he hasn't regained his senses from the shock yet.

“Good, very good prince. We will proceed to the Gu Family now.”

Gu Mu was very excited. There was no way that he wouldn't be excited. Before this, there was a higher chance that Jiang Chen would be rejected by the members of the Gu Family. Now, with the head of Shi Han, Gu Xuantian wouldn't decline Jiang Chen's visit because in Gu Xuantian point of view, he had helped resolve the grudge in his heart.

“Let's go.”

Jiang Chen nodded. The two of them vanished in the bystanders' line of sight very quickly and headed to the direction of the Gu Family. Despite that, the atmosphere still boiled even more.

“This is a big incident, this is going to be a big incident! Jiang Chen has killed Shi Han. If this news is spread, I have no idea how much it will shake the others.”

“The second genius of the Sky Ranking is dead. Across the Pure Land, I’m afraid only that monstrous freak of the Desolate Family can deal with Jiang Chen now. Jiang Chen was able to kill Shi Han, it only showed that he is qualified enough to be the second genius of the Sky Ranking. He may even have the power to fight the number genius of the Sky Ranking.”

“Nothing this big has ever happened in the Pure Land for a long time. Shi Han’s death would certainly cause chaos across the Pure Land. I’m afraid that the Pure Land won’t have its peace anymore.”

.....

Everyone was no doubt amazed. Many sigh could be heard everywhere. It was imaginable that it wouldn’t take long for the news of Shi Han’s death to be spread across the entire Pure Land. At that time, the higher ups of the eight families wouldn’t be able to sit still. Many people assumed that the monstrous genius of the Desolate Family would take his action soon.

Besides the monstrous freak of the Desolate Family, no one else could be Jiang Chen’s opponent. Jiang Chen had declared to fight all the young generations of the Pure Land, but now, it seemed like only one person could accept Jiang Chen’s challenge.

Jiang Chen on the other hand wasn't concerned about all of these. He had already placed all of his concerns on the Gu Family. In this trip, he would certainly fulfill the promise that he made to Wu Ningzhu and established a good rapport with the Gu Family.

Gu Family was one of the eight families which made them one of the large-scale sects. They had settled in a large stretch of mountains. Judging by its scale, it wasn't smaller or weaker than the Spiritual Space Mountain. The vigorous Yuan Force in this place made it one of the most exuberant place for cultivation. Every space and corner was suitable for cultivation. It was a scared land for cultivators.

All the while, countless of people were trying their best to join the Gu Family. They had very strict rules in recruitment. So, it was impossible for any ordinary people to join, unless they had a great luck or they were one of those gifted geniuses.

Jiang Chen and Gu Mu arrived at the boundary of mountains. Looking from atop the mountains, the sunshine hovered and seven-colored sunglow drifted in the sky above the Gu Family. There were plenty of palaces and buildings. Some of them were floating in the air, above the summit. The overall view of this scenery made it look like a world of Immortals. This was the atmosphere in a large family. This kind of noble aura made people want to worship them.

“Prince, this is our Gu Family.”

Gu Mu looked over at Jiang Chen. He noticed that there were no changes on Jiang Chen's facial expression. Despite the imposing

atmosphere of the Gu Family, there was not a single reaction coming from Jiang Chen. His composure was really so extraordinary. One should know that any normal cultivator who came here for the first time would gape at the scene and would exclaim every time he or she saw a building or a place.

Of course, Gu Mu didn't know that Jiang Chen had dominated the world in his past life and has already gone to every family's territory. Back then, even the old ancestor of the Gu Family had to show full respect to him.

“Gu Mu, when you return, inform the higher ups that I am here today to propose a marriage.”

Jiang Chen added. “1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills, ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water, Shi Han's head and his natal weapon are my betrothal presents.”

Chapter 886 - The Super Betrothal Gift

After hearing Jiang Chen's words, Gu Mu was stunned, leaving his mouth open. He didn't think that he heard him correctly. He had never expect that Jiang Chen would use such a method – proposing marriage. It was too stimulating anyway, not to mention, those crazy betrothal gifts that could stimulate you even more.

1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones... For god's sake, does anyone know how much was that? Back in Void Triangular Domain, Jiang Chen promised to give away 500 million but he had increased it by a billion just now. With such a vast amount of fortune, even Gu Xuantian, the patriarch of Gu Family would be emotionally moved.

The 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones are merely the appetizers. There were also three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills to be given. He couldn't believe that such a pill existed in the world, that pill is a holy pill that only exist in legends. One Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill was already priceless, let alone three of those pills.

Besides these two items, there were also ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water. All of these seemingly non-existing holy items were given out by Jiang Chen in the simplest and easiest way. It was totally unimaginable how much these items could improve the overall strength of the Gu Family. Gu Mu could not settle his excitement. He was sure that this would shake the entire Gu Family.

“Prince has extraordinary generosity and is truly an outstanding hero that is rarely seen. Miss Ningzhu absolutely has a far-sighted vision.”

Gu Mu took a deep breath, trying his best to calm his emotions down. Jiang Chen was an overbearing person who also defied trivial conventions and had powerful strength. Plus, he had an innate spirit of a king. If you were his enemy, you had certainly meet your greatest misfortune, but if you were his friend, it would be your greatest fortune.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Alright.”

Gu Mu nodded. After settling himself down, he took the lead and headed to the Gu Family, followed by Jiang Chen. There were four youths standing outside the gate. They moved forth when they saw someone coming. When they saw Gu Mu, their facial expression revealed reverence. They quickly bowed to Gu Mu.

“Elder Gu Mu.”

They didn’t dare to show any sign of disrespect. Gu Mu was an inner member of Gu Family and had a strong cultivation – Ninth Grade Minor Saint. Compared to them, either in the aspect of identity or status, they were on different level.

“Go and inform miss Ningzhu that Jiang Chen has come to propose marriage.”

Gu Mu said to the four of them. Wu Ningzhu must be informed that Jiang Chen has come.

“What? Propose marriage? To whom?”

“He is that Jiang Chen?”

The four of them were stunned. They weren't able to grasp the meaning of Gu Mu's words. What was the relation between Wu Ningzhu and proposing marriage? Hadn't the patriarch already betrothed Wu Ningzhu to Gu Liufeng?

“Listen, I am Jiang Chen. Wu Ningzhu is my woman. My purpose of coming here today is to propose marriage. If that Gu Liufeng can't get over it, ask him to find me. You can also tell him that I have just killed Shi Han.”

Jiang Chen crossed his arms behind his back while saying that to the four of them. Then, he followed Gu Mu's lead to the interior of the Gu Family.

The four of them heard Jiang Chen clearly. They were astonished. Their eyes widened. They were doubting if their ears had heard wrongly.

“Is that man really Jiang Chen? He is really young. What did he say just now? He had killed Shi Han? How is that possible? Shi Han is the second genius on the Sky Ranking. Not even brother Liufeng is his opponent. I can’t believe this.”

“Did you all hear that? He said that miss Ningzhu is his woman and he is here to propose marriage.”

“Dang! Something big is going to happen. Patriarch had already announced that he will betroth miss Ningzhu to Gu Liufeng three days later. I didn’t expect that Jiang Chen will come within this period. But if he had really killed Shi Han, I’m afraid that Gu Liufeng isn’t going to be his opponent.”

“Let’s go. Spread the news to the others. We will inform miss Ningzhu. You two will find brother Liufeng. Tell him that Jiang Chen has come for a marriage proposal. I’m sure that patriarch won’t agree to this. It’s not that easy to marry a genius of the Gu Family.”

The four of them divided into two teams and flew towards the interior of the Gu Family. This matter was undeniably big. Jiang Chen’s arrival would snatch peace away in Gu Family. Today, Jiang Chen’s name had given rise to numerous discussions and conversations across the Pure Land. He would descend chaos in wherever he went. If he was right about killing Shi Han, there would be no one else in the young generations that could defeat him. Gu Liufeng wouldn’t be an exception, even if he had gone through the toughest trials.

Gu Mu brought Jiang Chen to his home. Given Gu Mu’s current

identity and status, it earned him a hilltop and a personal training ground.

“Prince, you are an outsider. You aren’t allowed to intrude into the inner palace of the Gu Family. Take some rest in my place first. I will go and inform the inner members of the Gu Family about your message of proposal. I believe that patriarch won’t decline in meeting you.”

Gu Mu said to Jiang Chen.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He agreed to what Gu Mu said. He was an outsider who came to a foreign land to propose marriage. If he walked into the inner palace of the Gu Family, it would be viewed as a rude conduct. One should know that the inner palace of the Gu Family was the core of their family. Even Gu Mu didn’t get a lot of chances to enter such a place.

However, that didn’t really concern Jiang Chen because he was confident in his deal. If the higher ups of the Gu Family heard about the betrothal gifts, they would certainly be shaken up by the vast amount and value of the gifts. At that time, they would need to view Jiang Chen as a distinguished guest. Plus, there were no conflicts between him and the Gu Family. He had also given plenty of benefits to the Gu Family back in Void Triangular Domain.

Gu Mu hadn’t returned from the inner palace yet but the entire Gu Family had already turned chaotic. The news was spreading

very quickly, like a wildfire. Now, nearly everyone in the family knew about the latest news.

“That Jiang Chen has come to our family to propose a marriage? I have witnessed his divine powers in Void Triangular Domain. He was undeniably amazing. I heard that miss Ningzhu was supposed to get married with Jiang Chen but she was brought back to the Gu Family by Gu Mu. According to elder Gu Mu, at that time, he was able to break through the bottleneck because of Jiang Chen’s pointers. After that, he continued to advance until he reached the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, which is truly terrifying to me.”

“I heard that Jiang Chen had just killed Shi Han. I don’t know whether it is real or not, but it seems more like a boast to me. One should know that Shi Han is the second genius of the Sky Ranking. How could he be killed so easily?”

“This man’s action will definitely affect brother Liufeng’s reputation, but the family meeting hasn’t ended yet right? That means we don’t know the patriarch’s view on this yet. Anyway, I don’t think that patriarch will approve Jiang Chen’s proposal of marriage. He is just a rogue cultivator. What rights does he have to marry a genius of the Gu Family.”

.....

Every conversation and discussion in the Gu Family was about Jiang Chen’s arrival. As the news of Shi Han’s death hasn’t spread to the whole Gu Family yet, majority of them didn’t believe that Jiang Chen has killed the second genius of the Sky Ranking. How could he possibly kill Shi Han so easily? Especially since his

opponent wasn't as weak as his previous opponent, Desolate Liang

Gu Mu came to the inner palace and saw a Second Grade Great Saint elder on guard. He conveyed Jiang Chen's message to the elder.

“This is outrageous. This man is overly audacious. He dares to come to our family and propose a marriage? If there is a conflict between us, I would chase him out of our family. Gu Mu, never come to the inner palace if you only have trivial matters. This isn't a place for you to come.”

The Great Saint elder berated Gu Mu. Although Jiang Chen's monstrous ability had already spread across the Pure Land, he had also offended a lot of people. It was fine if he just want to visit our family, but coming here to propose a marriage was absurd.

“Calm down elder. Jiang Chen has come here with utmost sincerity. He was already betrothed to miss Ningzhu before she came to our family, it was me who brought miss Ningzhu back. Jiang Chen had presented a generous betrothal gift to us – 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills, ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water, Shi Han's head and his natal weapon.”

Gu Mu was frightened. He quickly told the elder everything he knew about Jiang Chen's betrothal gifts.

“What?”

The Great Saint elder exclaimed after listening to Gu Mu's words, even though he was a Second Grade Great Saint. The Gu Family could not give away this kind of gifts to anyone. Even if they could, they wouldn't be willing to give them away to other people.

“He killed Shi Han?”

The Great Saint elder asked Gu Mu again to confirm.

“Yes, sir. I was at the scene when he killed Shi Han.”

Gu Mu said.

“Good. He actually have the power to kill Shi Han. Our Gu Family won't oppose in establishing a friendly relationship with a genius like him. Wait here for a while. I will go and inform the patriarch.”

After he spoke, he vanished. There was no way that he wouldn't be amazed by Jiang Chen's betrothal gifts and his ability to kill Shi Han. Adding the legends that he had heard about Jiang Chen all this time, it was enough to show that Jiang Chen was really a remarkable genius.

More importantly, Shi Han was the person who killed the patriarch's youngest son in a life-and-death battle. Gu Xuantian could not do anything about it because this could only be explained by the incompetence of his youngest son, but that didn't mean that Gu Xuantian had forgotten about the vengeance. Bringing Shi

Han's head to him today would undoubtedly resolve an unsettling problem that had existed in his heart for a long time. This fact alone would prompt Gu Xuantian to meet Jiang Chen.

Chapter 887 - Astounding

It was only a short period of time before the elder came out of the inner palace. He went to Gu Mu and said, “Gu Mu, go and bring the kid here, the patriarch wants to see him.”

“Alright, I will go now.”

Gu Mu was delighted. He knew that Gu Xuantian would surely meet Jiang Chen, the betrothal gifts that he offered were just too generous after all. No ordinary person would be willing to fork out such gifts. Even if Gu Xuantian refused to betroth Wu Ningzhu to Jiang Chen, he would be pleased to meet such a young genius who had caused a stir across the Pure Land. As a matter of fact, the Gu Family was one of the families who wished to see such a chaotic situation in the Pure Land.

Gu Mu quickly returned to his residence and brought Jiang Chen to the inner palace. On the way, they met Wu Ningzhu who was also heading to Gu Mu’s residence. Her facial expression revealed delightfulness when she saw Jiang Chen.

“I knew that you would eventually come. I knew that you wouldn’t let me marry another man.”

Wu Ningzhu gave a smile. The beauty of her smile could put the entire world in a trance.

“Even if I didn’t come, I’m sure that sister Ning wouldn’t marry another man.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He knew that Wu Ningzhu's heart belonged to him. She believed that Jiang Chen was her only knight in shining armor the moment he unmasked her veil. Besides, in her heart, there was no one that could be more excellent than Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Are you sure about that?”

Wu Ningzhu let out a cold humph.

“When did your husband ever lose his confidence?”

Jiang Chen didn't care much about what Gu Mu thought. He tugged Wu Ningzhu into his embrace. She laughed with delight as she was embraced by her man. There was nothing to be shy about. This was in fact, a kind of bliss. She was the one who sent Gu Mu to look for Jiang Chen. She knew that he would come after knowing that Gu Xuantian would betroth her to another man three days later.

cough *cough*

Gu Mu let out two coughs, this couple just treated him like air.

Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu laughed. Then, Jiang Chen released his arms from Wu Ningzhu. They needed to consider this old man's feelings anyhow.

“Prince, miss Ningzhu, I think we should continue our way to the inner palace now.”

Sighed Gu Mu.

“Little Chen, I have no idea how the patriarch will react to your arrival. He has already promised to marry me to Gu Liufeng and released my mother when this condition is fulfilled. I’m afraid that your emergence will...”

Wu Ningzhu didn’t finished her words but it was enough to express what she wanted to say. She knew Jiang Chen’s capabilities but this was still the Gu Family after all. There are experts here that had a cultivation level that was as high as the clouds. Jiang Chen would not be able to start a commotion here. If it was only for her sake, Jiang Chen could just simply take her away from the Gu Family, but her mother, Gu Lan was still in their custody. Her mother was the main reason why she came to the Divine Continent.

“Don’t worry, I’m here.”

Jiang Chen held Wu Ningzhu’s hands. Her worries were somewhat alleviated when she felt his sturdy and firm hands.

In a woman’s perspective, regardless of how powerful or independent the woman is, she would need someone to rely on, and that someone would often be a man. Jiang Chen was the man that Wu Ningzhu had relied on. This was a man who would never let anyone harm her.

Inside the inner palace of the Gu Family, seven to eight people were seated. They were all Great Saints of the Gu Family with lofty status and power. The one who sat on the most important seat was a seemingly forty-year-old man with a medium body size. He was wearing a blue robe that projected the feeling of cleanliness. Although he was just sitting there, it gave people the feeling that he was a big mountain. The imposing expression on his face exuded a domineering aura.

This man was the patriarch of the Gu Family, Gu Xuantian. He was the leader of the Gu Family in the Pure Land. While Gu Mu was leading Jiang Chen to them, all of their eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen. They were astounded by his looks, because no one had thought that Jiang Chen would be so young.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

An elder asked.

“That’s right. I’m Jiang Chen. I have come here to propose a marriage to Wu Ningzhu. I suppose patriarch has already known about my marriage with Wu Ningzhu before. If Gu Mu hadn’t went to Dan Yuan City and interrupted our wedding ceremony, we would’ve been a married couple by now. So, it only makes sense that would I come here and propose a marriage.”

Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you talk in such a way in the inner palace

of my Gu Family? Who do you think you are?”

An elder yelled at Jiang Chen.

“I, Jiang Chen never liked to beat around the bush. I have brought sufficient betrothal gifts to show my utmost sincerity. These are 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water. So, are you telling me to be soft-spoken when I am the one who proposes the marriage to Wu Ningzhu? If you all think that all of these gifts here are still disrespecting you all, then I, Jiang Chen have nothing to say.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand. A golden spatial ring, three exuberant Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water emerged and floated in mid-air inside the palace. The strong Qi that was released from the Nine Solar Saint Water rippled the air inside the building. Even the Great Saints couldn't help but stare at these items, let alone by other people.

The elder who berated Jiang Chen remained silent. Jiang Chen was right. These items absolutely weren't a sign of disrespect.

1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones was a fortune that would make people drool. As for the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills, it was their first time seeing it, this pill only existed in legends. They could feel the exuberant medicinal energy that produced low crackling sounds and the flickering image of a dragon. It was similar to the description in the legends. This pill would also bring tremendous benefits to these Great Saints if they consumed it. About the ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water, they were

similarly rare. With so many bottles here, they had no idea how many genius disciples they could nurture.

At the same time, they were amazed by Jiang Chen's demeanour, no young person could remain this calm in the inner palace, a place that was filled with Great Saints. This kind of calmness was absolutely not a pretence, because no one could pretend in front of a Great Saint.

Even if they refused to admit that Jiang Chen was an outstanding genius, it goes without saying that no genius nor geniuses of the Gu Family could be compared to him.

“Jiang Chen, how did you obtain these Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills?”

A Fourth Grade Great Saint elder asked.

“I concocted them with my own hands. These pills required large amounts of Nine Solar Saint Water and the combination of different herbs. Most importantly, it has to be concocted during the heavenly tribulation. I am an alchemist and have experienced lightning tribulations four times.”

Jiang Chen didn't try to hide that fact. He wanted the Gu Family to know his true abilities, to raise his own value. He wanted them to know that befriending him wouldn't be a bad choice.

Wu Ningzhu who was on the side was lost in a trance. Her eyes

were glued on Jiang Chen's attractive face. She wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen would give away such valuable items for her sake. This was also a kind of bliss, when a man you love was willing to give out valuable things. This kind of action would give any woman an unstoppable surging sensation, akin to tidal waves.

“What?”

This time, Gu Xuantian almost exclaimed. He thought that these Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills were the items that Jiang Chen obtained from some sort of encounter. He couldn't imagine that they were personally concocted by him. Besides, they could also feel that Jiang Chen was telling the truth.

Those who were present here had already experienced heavenly tribulation. They knew how terrifying a heavenly tribulation was. It happened to them while they were breaking through the Great Saint realm. It nearly took their lives away. Jiang Chen on the other hand, was merely a Seventh Grade Minor Saint, but he had already experienced it for four times. That only showed that he was a heaven defying being. Only those kinds of people could initiate a heavenly tribulation. Until now, no one from the Gu Family was able to initiate a heavenly tribulation before they reached the Great Saint realm.

The ability to concoct pills in a heavenly tribulation was also unbelievable. This point alone suggested Jiang Chen's exceptional skills in alchemy. It also suggested that he had the ability to instantly kill anyone of the Gu Family. What reasons does the Gu Family have, to not befriend such a rare genius?

“Jiang Chen, you have also said that you killed Shi Han?”

Gu Xuantian didn't keep the betrothal gifts. Although they were very important to the Gu Family, keeping them would mean accepting his marriage proposal, which would destroy Gu Liufeng's chance. Besides, he had already made the promise that Gu Lan would be released once Wu Ningzhu agrees to marry Gu Liufeng.

“Of course, he wanted to kill me while I was heading here, but he was killed by me instead.”

Gu Xuantian's facial expression changed when he saw Shi Han's head. He stood up from his seat and glared at the head, along with the stone spear.

“He is merely a Seventh Grade Minor Saint, but he was able to kill the second genius – Shi Han. I really can't believe this.”

“Yeah. This genius is overly heaven defying. No genius like him has ever appeared in the history of Saint Origin World.”

“Furthermore, he is also a powerful alchemist at such a young age. It is hard to imagine what he will become in the future. Today, the Demon Race has already allied themselves with him. It won't bring us any disadvantages if we allied ourselves to him.”

.....

Chapter 888 - What Mistakes Had Gu Lan Made?

The Great Saints had changed their opinions of Jiang Chen dramatically. Firstly, they didn't hate Jiang Chen even before he showed them these items, he didn't make the Gu Family suffer any losses be it in cultivators or reputation. Instead, he had helped an elder of their family breakthrough his cultivation bottleneck and brought Wu Ningzhu to Divine Continent.

Secondly, his previous performances in battles and actions were truly astounding. They had been longing for the status quo of the eight families to change. Coincidentally, a rare genius like him emerged and created a mess in the Pure Land.

Thirdly, it didn't really matter to the elders who Wu Ningzhu would marry. What concerned them the most was the future of the Gu Family, and it just so happened that Jiang Chen was a young genius that had given them a very good impression.

The atmosphere in the inner palace turned heavy when Shi Han's head was presented. Everyone could feel that Gu Xuantian's emotion has drastically changed. No matter how firm and tenacious a man is, he wouldn't be able to maintain his composure if he saw the murderer of his son.

Bang

Gu Xuantian didn't move but a shapeless wave of energy rushed out of his body and pulverized Shi Han's head including the stone

spear. It seemed like those two things were never there.

“Jiang Chen, I owe you a favor but I can’t agree to your terms.”

Gu Xuantian returned to his seat and said.

“Patriarch.”

Wu Ningzhu’s expression changed.

Gu Xuantian raised his hand. “Ning Er, you don’t have to say anything about it. I have already decided to marry you to Gu Liufeng. Liufeng is the number one genius of our family, a talent trained by the higher ups of our family. And, don’t you forget about your mother. She will be freed when you marry Liufeng.”

“I don’t want to marry Gu Liufeng. I am already engaged to Jiang Chen. If it wasn’t because of your interruption, we would’ve been husband and wife now.”

Wu Ningzhu rebutted. Although Gu Liufeng was the number one genius of their family, he certainly couldn’t replace Jiang Chen in her heart.

“Ning Er, I have already made a solemn promise that cannot be broken. Besides, you should also consider your mother. Do you still remember your purpose of coming here all the way from the Southern Continent? It’s to find your mother and take her away right? So, you have to marry a member of the Gu Family in order

to compensate the mistakes that your mother had made. If you insist to marry Jiang Chen, your mother would be kept in prison.” Gu Xuantian said.

As the patriarch of the family, he couldn't change the things that he had already promised. Otherwise, it would negatively affect his dignity. If Wu Ningzhu married Jiang Chen, what would Gu Liufeng think? Jiang Chen was an outsider after all.

“Haha! Gu Xuantian, what you just said is very funny and doesn't make sense at all.”

Jiang Chen suddenly laughed and called out the name of the patriarch outrageously.

Hiss

Gu Mu caught his breath, staggered and almost sat on the ground. What he feared the most had come. He feared Jiang Chen's hot temper because once Jiang Chen got angry, he would no longer care who was in front of him. This was the inner palace of the Gu Family, a dignified and sacred place, no one would dare to behave here atrociously and disrespect the patriarch.

The previous harmonious atmosphere changed immediately.

“This is outrageous!”

A Great Saint elder bellowed, a powerful Qi rushed out of his

body. Although they admired Jiang Chen very much, if he would be rude here, they wouldn't allow it.

Wu Ningzhu seemed nervous. Her hand grabbed Jiang Chen's arm tightly, fearing that he would do something out of the line.

"I would like to hear your explanation why you insulted me."

Gu Xuantian squinted his eyes at Jiang Chen. It was impossible to say that he was not angry when a junior disrespected him.

"I will share it with you then. You said that you owe me a favor for bringing Shi Han's head and his natal weapon here. I won't ask you to repay me the favor but I will need to ask you a few questions."

Jiang Chen's tone was composed. He was totally unaffected by those raging Great Saints.

"Go ahead." Gu Xuantian replied.

He would like to know what would Jiang Chen ask, an outsider like him would not usually be allowed to interfere in family matters.

"I would like to know what mistakes did Gu Lan committed for you to imprison her for so many years?"

Jiang Chen asked.

“Gu Lan is a sacred girl of the Gu Family but she privately went to the Southern Continent and started a relationship with the lowly Wu Tianyang. Isn’t this a great mistake? Do you have any idea how it affected the reputation of our Gu Family?”

Gu Xuantian said in a flat tone.

After hearing that her father was called a lowly person, her facial expression revealed fury. Her father, Wu Tianyang, has an irreplaceable place in her heart.

“Humph! Gu Xuantian, so you think that saying these words won’t affect the reputation of your Gu Family? I think you are just a typical shameless person.”

Jiang Chen berated loudly.

“Kid, you are courting death!”

A Great Saint raged and was about to strike Jiang Chen if he wasn’t stopped by Gu Xuantian.

“Jiang Chen, you better give me a solid reason for this. You are the very first person who called me shameless. Despite the favor that I owed you, this comment alone could cost you your life.”

Gu Xuantian's tone turned cold.

Gu Mu, who was watching at the side, was frightened. He was begging for Jiang Chen's ancestor to help him.

“I, Jiang Chen, can kill Shi Han while I am still a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Even if you send a First Grade Great Saint, I will have no problem killing him. Tell me, have your family, ever cultivated or nurtured someone as talented and as strong as me? Have your family produce a Seventh Grade Minor Saint like me who can kill a Great Saint? If you all think that I am just boasting about myself, you can try sending a First Grade Great Saint to fight me.”

Jiang Chen said loudly.

Everyone, including Gu Xuantian became quiet. Jiang Chen was right, there were no Seventh Grade Minor Saint genius in the Gu Family or even across the Saint Origin World that could kill a First Grade Great Saint, not even the Greatest Saint.

However, what has this got to do with Gu Xuantian being shameless and Gu Lan?

“Since none of you in the Gu Family could do it, does that mean that I am a higher being than all of you? Does it also mean that I can call the cultivators of the Gu Family lowly beings? But I am here today to propose a marriage with great sincerity. I came here with the status of a junior and called you ‘patriarch’. If I have married sister Ning, I will have to call you uncle. I never have the feeling of being high and mighty. In my heart, everyone, including

people of the Gu Family and Wu Tianyang, is equal and has their own reputation and dignity.

Jiang Chen didn't hide any of the fact that he was trying to express. He ignored all the expressions of the listeners and continued. "You should know that Gu Lan married Wu Tianyang and had given birth to a baby. Wu Tainyang saved her life when she was severely injured. In other words, the lowly human was the saviour of Gu Lan's life, the saviour of your sister's life. In order to be a patriarch, you must be someone that values relationship and kindness. You know what you felt when your sister's life was in danger. As such, what right do you have to call the saviour of your sister's life a lowly being?"

This time, Gu Xuantian was petrified. Strangely, he wasn't angered, he felt that Jiang Chen's words were very reasonable. He grew up together with Gu Lan. The relationship between the two of them couldn't be understood by an outsider. Gu Lan had become a sore spot in his emotions, for imprisoning her because of the rules of the family all these years.

"Besides, what other mistakes had she done? In my opinion, Gu Lan is a person who truly values relationship and kindness. She didn't care about status and power when she married Wu Tianyang. Not only because Wu Tianyang was her saviour, but because of the feelings that they have for each other. According to my knowledge, your wife is from the Cold Sect right? Since you can marry a woman from an external sect, why can't Gu Lan marry Wu Tianyang? Let me ask you again, what mistakes had Gu Lan done?"

Jiang Chen's eyes swept across the hall. His words weren't only directed to Gu Xuantian, but to all the people who were present. Silence permeated the atmosphere in that moment. They felt that Gu Lan had broken the rules of the family so, she had to accept her punishment. However, they weren't really sure what mistake she had committed.

Wu Ningzhu's face was covered with tears. These were the words that had been buried inside of her for many years. Today, they were all spat out from Jiang Chen's mouth. She felt sorry for her father and mother, who loved each other very much, being separated for so long. She knew very well how her father, Wu Tianyang, passed each day of his life without the company of his lover. This was also the reason she insisted to come to the Divine Continent to search for her mother.

“Gu Xuantian, when I said that you are shameless, it is certainly not to insult you. If it wasn't for Wu Tianyang saving Gu Lan at that time, you should've already lost a sister. Have you ever thought what would happen to you if Gu Lan died? I'm afraid that you will grieve for the rest of your life, just like when your son was killed by Shi Han.”

Jiang Chen's every word struck Gu Xuantian by surprise. These were the questions that he hadn't really pondered about. He just thought that Gu Lan had made terrible mistakes.

“Gu Xuantian, let me ask you again, after so many years of imprisoning your sister. Every time you visit your sister, did you ever feel guilty seeing her becoming so thin with each passing day?”

Jiang Chen's voice became louder, "What mistakes had Gu Lan made?"

Chapter 889 - Finally Freed After Twelve years

Hong

Jiang Chen's words exploded in their ears like a ballistic missile. He purposely raised his voice using the Great Soul Derivation technique. Doing so, every word entered their ears and into their hearts like sharp blades, especially for Gu Xuantian.

All the elders present were senior experts. Gu Lan was a junior, a child to them. They were the people who saw her grew up. It was impossible to say there were no attachment between them and Gu Lan.

The one who was shaken up the most was Gu Xuantian. He was totally petrified. In the twelve years that Gu Lan had been imprisoned, there wasn't a single day that he thought of reconsidering the mistake that his sister had made. He just followed the rules of the family and sentenced her biological sister to imprisonment.

'Gu Xuantian, did you ever feel guilty about what you did to your sister, Gu Lan, all these years?'

This sentence of Jiang Chen lingered beside his ears. Did he really have no guilt? No, it was just like what Jiang Chen had said. Every time he saw Gu Lan's haggard face, his heart would ache. So, he reduced the frequency of his visit.

Not only did he feel guilty for imprisoning her, but he also attempted to release her sister many times, but he needed her to admit her mistakes. If Gu Lan said ‘I was wrong’, these three words, he would grant her freedom, she was his sister after all. However, her sister did not admit anything over these past twelve years.

All along, he didn’t understand why was it so hard to say those words. It was just now that he finally understood the reason why Gu Lan refused to say those words. It was because she didn’t do anything wrong. The fault lied within himself and the rules of the Gu Family.

Why is it that humans are called humans? This is because humans have emotions and feelings. Gu Lan was a person who would never forget people’s kindness. She even pledged herself to marry Wu Tianyang, her true lover. Gu Xuantian, the patriarch, on the other hand had separated the both of them and imprisoned Gu Lan, which didn’t make any sense at all.

“Mother...”

Wu Ningzhu couldn’t stand it anymore. She fell to the ground with a puff and cried loudly. Over the past twelve years, she had never forgotten her mother’s face, she would remember it for the rest of her life. At that time, she was merely a ten-year-old kid but she could still remember her mother’s features.

Every word of Jiang Chen was like a blade, landing on her body.

She couldn't imagine how her mother survived through all these years.

Jiang Chen knelt down to embrace Wu Ningzhu's shoulders. His heart ached, seeing her becoming like this. She was a very persistent woman, he had never seen her drop a single tear. She was many times stronger than other men, but only Jiang Chen knew how much bitterness she endured in her life. Jiang Chen was the one who expressed all the bitterness that had been suffocating her for the past twelve years, like a large opened pipe that flowed until the tank was empty.

“Ning Er.”

Wu Ningzhu cried bitterly. It had broken down the emotional barrier in Gu Xuantian's heart, causing tears to well up in his eyes. No matter how tenacious or how dignified a person is, he or she would play many roles in life. Gu Xuantian was the highly respected patriarch of the Gu Family, but he was also a brother and an uncle. Regardless of how high he stood in the hierarchy, they were his family. Only he could understand what the term family meant to him. He had lost his son, so he understood very well the importance of family.

“Could it be that I was wrong?”

Gu Xuantian shook his head. He looked like a man who just aged for another forty years. It was undeniable that Jiang Chen's words were very disrespectful but he didn't hate Jiang Chen for that. Instead, he was grateful that Jiang Chen said this to him. Because of these words, he was awoken. Suddenly, he felt that despite all

the experiences that he had in his life, his wisdom was worse than a young man.

“That’s right. You were wrong, terribly wrong. During the twelve years that Gu Lan was imprisoned, you had been blaming yourself for that. You love your sister very much but you had made her suffer twelve years of imprisonment. That’s why you blame yourself. You have a high and mighty position in the Gu Family and because of that, you think that whatever decision you made is the right decision. You thought that despite Gu Lan being your sister, she still had to admit her mistake in order to be freed while she was missing her family for twelve years. She wasn’t able to watch her daughter grow up and be with her husband all these years. She didn’t even have the chance to see the two of them. Wu Tianyang, on the other hand, had suffered as well, he blamed himself for being a useless man who couldn’t even protect his woman, but he had to persist in life because of his daughter. So, how could Wu Ningzhu not see the painful expressions on her father’s face? She had seen how depressed her father was over these past twelve years. She knew her mother was still alive but she wasn’t able to meet her.”

Jiang Chen continued, “So, this is what happened these past twelve years. You have blamed yourself throughout these years, Gu Lan had been missing them for twelve years, Wu Tianyang had suffered, and Wu Ningzhu had been living bitterly for twelve years. If you are a man, end these twelve years of mistakes and suffering. I hope that you will personally release Gu Lan from the prison instead of exchanging Wu Ningzhu’s happiness for her freedom. If that really happened, Wu Ningzhu won’t be happy. She will stay bitter for the rest of her life and Gu Lan won’t forgive you even if you released her.”

“Stop it. Don’t say anymore!”

Gu Xuantian bellowed. His eyes were red. Clearly, Jiang Chen’s words were like a mirror that had shone all his repressed feelings and had shattered his emotional barrier.

In fact, Gu Xuantian wanted to release Gu Lan all along but she wouldn’t admit her mistake. So, he needed to find an excuse to release her. Marrying Wu Ningzhu to the youngest genius of the Gu Family was the best excuse that he could use. It was true that he had been feeling guilty and blamed himself these past few years. Otherwise, he wouldn’t spend so much effort in nurturing Wu Ningzhu.

However, he didn’t think that marrying Wu Ningzhu to Gu Liufeng would bring her unhappiness.

“I want to say it even if you won’t allow. You have already hurt Gu Lan. Do you still want to hurt her daughter? You said that Gu Liufeng is the number one genius of the Gu Family, but I am not even putting him in my eyes. If he can’t accept it, I will make him accept it through battle.”

“Ai! Patriarch, whether Gu Lan is wrong or right in the past, you have already imprisoned her for twelve years. In my opinion, this punishment is more than enough.”

“That’s right, Patriarch. Although Jiang Chen is being disrespectful today, he is a man with love and sacredness. It is rare to see a man who is willing to go such lengths in order to be with

his lover. If Ning Er marries him, I don't think that it will be an insult to the bloodline of the Gu Family.”

“Patriarch, it's already been twelve years. I think, it's time to wrap this up.”

.....

The other Great Saints countenance changed because of Jiang Chen's words. They were the seniors of the Gu Family and had blood relation with Gu Lan. They had grown very fond of her in the past. In their opinion, disregarding what she had done in the past, being imprisoned for twelve years was already enough to end this all. They should return the freedom of Gu Lan.

The author of DMWG : “These two chapters were full of emotions. Old Su (the author) was lying on the keyboard crying bitterly. I too had a sister but she had left us four years ago in one night. That was an extremely cold night that could freeze our body in seconds. Over the four years, I was reluctant to think of her because it would bring back all the bitter memories. I hated myself for not giving her enough love and kindness. I never thought that I would relive this memory again in my novel. There are too many fighting and killing scenes in my novel, so I have used another way to write the plot for Gu Family. I hope all of you brothers and sisters cherish your family members. Pass every day of your life with them in happiness.”

Chapter 890 - Mother and Daughter Reunited

Even a steel heart would be melted by such touching words. These old and conventional elders who were slaves to the rules of the Gu Family were touched by Jiang Chen's words, let alone Gu Xuantian. Gu Xuantian was once a tenacious youth who fought many battles and a great man who was as tender as water.

He took a deep breath, trying hard to control his emotions. He stood up from his seat and said to Jiang Chen, "Jiang Chen, you have helped me unlock my heart. I owe you another favour."

Gu Xuantian didn't mind Jiang Chen's disrespectful behaviour anymore. Due to his rank and position, no one has ever said a rude word in front of him before, let alone someone who could unlock his heart, but Jiang Chen did.

Hua La

Gu Xuantian gently made a stroke at the void. A large line of crack appeared in the void. A chilling spatial energy leaked out from the opening. Gu Xuantian looked at Wu Ningzhu and Jiang Chen. "Ning Er, let's go. Uncle will take you to see your mother."

That's right. The current Gu Xuantian was no longer the patriarch but was an uncle and a senior. The twelve years of unsettling problem in his heart had been resolved. Now, even he, couldn't wait to see Gu Lan.

After hearing Gu Xuantian's words, Wu Ningzhu cried even more loudly. She had longed for this day to come. The tears that had been accumulated over the past twelve years were flowing non-stop. No one spoke, Gu Xuantian just stood rooted in the spot. No one tried to interrupt her, her tears made everyone feel heartache. It was just like what Jiang Chen had said, this child had borne countless of bitter memories and experiences over the past twelve years.

Wu Ningzhu buried her head into Jiang Chen's embrace, crying for another five minutes. After that, she stood up calmly and saluted Gu Xuantian without saying anything. This was a salute to thank Gu Xuantian, but she still had conflicting feelings about him. She had hated her uncle for twelve years and today, she had seen her uncle's other side which reduced a large part of the hate that she had for him. She didn't want to live in her hatred. She just wanted to see her mother as soon as possible.

“Let's go.”

Gu Xuantian swayed and disappeared in the spatial gap. Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu followed. All the Great Saints remained on their seats, it was pointless for them to go there. It was the old score of their family. So they should be the one to solve their problems.

“Gu Mu, you have done well this time. I will reward you when I return.”

A Great Saint said to Gu Mu.

“Thank you, Elder.”

Gu Mu deeply saluted the elders. He was almost scared to death just a while ago but now, besides feeling impressed, his respect for Jiang Chen grew deeper. Those words that Jiang Chen uttered were the words coming from a real man who valued love.

“Elder, what are you going to do with these treasures?”

Gu Mu asked as he looked at the items left by Jiang Chen. There were 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and ten Nine Solar Saint Water. These unbelievably great fortunes were currently floating in mid-air.

“Gu Mu, keep them all first. We will wait for them to return and see what the Patriarch would do about it. If the Patriarch agrees to Jiang Chen’s marriage proposal, we will accept these items.”

A noble-looking elder said. Jiang Chen had made it clear when he offered these items. They were the betrothal gifts for Wu Ningzhu’s marriage. If Gu Xuantian would not agree to their marriage, how could our Gu Family accept these treasures?

“Yes, Elder.”

Gu Mu carefully kept the treasures while silently praying that the matter would end soon. The matter of Gu Lan was almost settled.

What was left now was the marriage between Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu. Gu Mu wouldn't hope to see this matter fail because he knew Jiang Chen's temper all too well. If Gu Xuantian insisted to marry Wu Ningzhu to Gu Liufeng, it was hard to imagine what Jiang Chen would do.

As a matter of fact, Gu Mu felt guilty for what he did to Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu. Back in Dan Yuan City, both of them were about to bow to the heavens and earth before he interrupted and brought Wu Ningzhu back to the Gu Family. So, what he hoped the most right now was to see the both of them being together again.

The cold prison was an independent spatial zone but it didn't seem cold because there were flowers, grasses and birds, it looked like a land with idyllic beauty. There was a stretch of purple bamboo forest ahead. Behind the forest was a cottage. In order to distinguish that this cottage was a prison, you would need some extraordinary skills.

That's right. This was a beautiful place, but it was also an isolated world filled with sadness and dreariness. Seeing the illusory surroundings here, Wu Ningzhu's last feeling of hate for Gu Xuantian disappeared. Jiang Chen nodded silently. He was right in his judgement that Gu Xuantian was a person with love. Despite the fact that this was an isolated place for Gu Lan's imprisonment, Gu Xuantian had created a very good environment for her.

Suddenly, a wave of musical sound was heard from the other side of the purple bamboo forest. It was a very beautiful music but it was filled with dreariness. There were emotions of longing within

its rhythm that gave people an irresistible impulse to stay in the trance of the music.

“Mother...”

Wu Ningzhu called out for her mother with a shivering voice, the music was just too familiar.

“What a beautiful music...”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but praise. He finally knew why Wu Ningzhu could play the zither so well.

Gu Xuantian led the way into the purple bamboo forest unto the other end. Suddenly, they saw a woman in white. Her face was a little scrawny but that didn't affect her unique, and beautiful face. Her facial expression was gloomy though. One look was enough to tell that she was a person with sad stories. Her eyes were focused on the strings of the zither. Her jade-like palms danced on the strings like butterflies. This was a very nice and pleasant picture. She seemed totally immersed in her music as she hadn't noticed that someone was already in front of her.

Jiang Chen discerned Gu Lan's cultivation, she was a rare Great Saint cultivator. Although she was merely a First Grade Great Saint, it already showed how gifted she was. One should know how sharp the perceptive abilities of a First Grade Great Saint was, but Gu Lan wasn't able to perceive their arrival. It only showed that her heart was fully immersed in her musical world, as if her music had brought her back to Wu Yang City, to her family and to her

carefree life.

Wu Ningzhu couldn't hold her tears when she saw her mother. That's right. This was her mother. Although it's already been twelve years, the face of her mother was never blurry in her mind. Her mother hadn't aged but only became a little thinner. She always thought that her mother was the most beautiful woman in the world, be it in the past or now. That kind of beauty was one of a kind.

'Greatness' was the word to describe a mother in every child's heart. Their mother was always the most beautiful and unique person in the world.

"Mother!"

Wu Ningzhu yelled. Her voice was loud and clear.

Bang

Gu Lan's body shuddered. A string on the zither was broken. She raised her head slowly. When she saw Wu Ningzhu, her pupils widened. Her body started to shiver. She felt that her world has drastically changed at this moment.

"Ning... Ning Er."

Gu Lan's tone was shaky. She felt like this was just a dream but it was also so real to her. Although she hadn't seen Wu Ningzhu for

twelve years, she was able to tell that this was her daughter with just a single look, even if her daughter had grown so much from a little girl to a slim and graceful beauty.

“Ning Er, is that really you?”

She moved closer to Wu Ningzhu unknowingly.

“Mother, it’s me. I’m your Ning Er.”

Wu Ningzhu was unable to control her emotions. She fell into her mother embrace and wept uncontrollably.

Gu Lan raised her shivering arms and placed them behind Wu Ningzhu’s back. She couldn’t believe that this was real. “This must be an illusion. It must be.”

After seeing the current scenario, Gu Xuantian met Jiang Chen’s gaze. As if they understood each other implicitly, they walked to the side to avoid disturbing the reunion of the mother and daughter. They knew that this scenario would last for quite some time. They were afraid that an hour or two would not be enough.

“Jiang Chen, I have to thank you for what you did today. You have unlocked a big portion of my heart that was stifled for many years.”

Gu Xuantian said with a smile. One should know that it was extremely rare and difficult to hear the words ‘thank you’ from Gu

Xuantian. At this moment, he had truly let go of his high and might status, he was like a friend conversing with Jiang Chen.

“You are the one who unlocked your heart. Not me. If you are truly a man without love and kindness, you won’t have Gu Lan and Wu Ningzhu until today.”

Jiang Chen smiled as if he had seen through Gu Xuantian’s feelings.

“Did you know that it was very likely for me to slap you to death because of your disrespect today?”

Gu Xuantian looked at Jiang Chen.

“I would never do things that I’m not confident about. If you are really a ruthless person, you shouldn’t have become the patriarch. If that’s really the case, I won’t use this kind of method to deal with the Gu Family, instead, I will wait until I am strong enough to launch a massive strike unto your family and seize Wu Ningzhu and Gu Lan away. Then, I will erase the entire Gu Family from the world.”

Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

Gu Xuantian sucked in a breath of cold air. Across the entire Saint Origin World, Jiang Chen was the first one who dared to say ‘erase the entire Gu Family’, but Gu Xuantian had the feeling that Jiang Chen would be able to do it. He is an exceedingly terrifying

young man.

Gu Xuantian not only sensed great confidence from Jiang Chen, but also an aura of dominance. That was the innate dominance, the Qi of a ruler that could intimidate people.

Chapter 891 - Lan Ning World

“Jiang Chen, do you think that I will agree to marry Ning Er to you?”

Gu Xuantian turned and asked.

“You will.”

Jiang Chen replied resolutely.

“You are overly confident. Although you have helped me unlock my stifled heart and helped Gu Lan obtain her freedom, these two things are completely different from your proposal of marriage. As the patriarch of Gu Family, I must keep my promise, and that is to marry Ning Er to Liufeng three days later. If I let Ning Er marry you, where should I place my dignity?”

“Gu Xuantian, do you know what are the things that I admire about you? The betrothal gifts that I brought are enough to stir up anyone’s emotions, but you are able to resist those impressive gifts for your dignity as a patriarch and insisted that Sister Ning must marry Gu Liufeng. This is also the thing that impressed me. You are a man with great conscience. I’m sure that anyone who you nurtured will flourish. We have to consider Wu Ningzhu’s willingness on this marriage with Gu Liufeng. If we force Gu Liufeng to forget about the marriage, he won’t accept it due to his arrogance. Anyway, this is actually a matter between Gu Liufeng and me. In this world, only the strong will live. The fastest way to solve problems is to fight. Every genius is considered a soldier. I

will personally defeat Gu Liufeng and seize Sister Ning from his hands, and make him retreat willingly. That surely will not hurt any of your dignity.”

Jiang Chen said.

The way Gu Xuantian looked at Jiang Chen was full of shock. He realised that this young man was too scary. He had such a great vision that seemed everything was in his control. He was a man who could see through everything with one look and a man who wouldn't give up. It could be perceived when he dared to come to Gu Family and presented so many impressive gifts. It indicated how important Wu Ningzhu was in his heart.

Although Jiang Chen didn't see Gu Liufeng before, he was able to determine what Gu Liufeng was with his foresight. What surprised Gu Xuantian was Jiang Chen's judgement was exactly right. Gu Liufeng was an outstanding genius among the young generations of Gu Family, otherwise he wouldn't be highly regarded by the patriarch.

“Furthermore, Patriarch Gu isn't a fool. Your insight is sharper than everyone. The situation in Saint Origin World is becoming obvious. The forces of Desolate Family is becoming stronger day after day. They are powerful enough to suppress any of the seven families. If this continued to go on, you should know what will happen. You won't believe it if somebody tells you that Desolate Family doesn't have wild ambition. Gu Family should have known that the crisis will descend in the future given the current trend of the development. Currently, chaos finally struck Saint Origin World after so many years of peaceful stagnation. You should

know that only me, Jiang Chen, is able to throw Saint Origin World into disorder in time to come. So, establishing a friendly relationship with me will bring your family no harm but hundreds of benefits.”

Jiang Chen said, looking straight at Gu Xuantian. Jiang Chen’s words made him sigh, “Ai...”

He couldn’t deny that Jiang Chen was in fact too smart to the point that he could see through everything. Jiang Chen was able to spit out his thoughts and the thoughts of the Great Saints who were in the inner palace. They all thought that Saint Origin World had been peaceful for a long time and thus, it was only a matter of time before it would turn chaotic again. Jiang Chen’s emergence to this world was like a dazzling star that was destined to shake the entire world.

It was true that there wasn’t a single disadvantage in making friends with Jiang Chen despite his weak cultivation grade. The reason Jiang Chen wanted to ally himself with them was to get a safety net. On the other hand, Gu Family wouldn’t be alone if they allied themselves with Jiang Chen because Demon Race had already allied themselves with him. The eight families had never got along well. Due to the chaos this time, it was without a doubt a good thing if Demon Race and Gu Family were able to join forces.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had brought many benefits to Gu Family in his trip here. He had helped Gu Xuantian unlock his depressed heart, taken the revenge for his son and given Gu Lan freedom. To Gu Xuantian, he had owed Jiang Chen a deep favour. So if Jiang Chen and Wu Ninigzhu married, Jiang Chen would

become half-member of Gu Family, which gave Gu Family no reason to refuse helping him.

Gu Xuantian only predicted that Jiang Chen would be a very important figure in the future chaos but he wouldn't have thought of the importance of this decision. If Jiang Chen reached the peak in the future, he would be able to dominate the entire world. When that time comes, it was unimaginable how much benefits Gu Family would get. Of course, this was all in the future.

On the other side, both Wu Ningzhu and Gu Lan had settled their overwhelming emotions. Gu Lan finally determined that it wasn't a dream but a reality. She had waited for twelve years for this moment and it finally arrived.

The mother and the daughter nestled against each other on the grassy land. Gu Lan patiently listened to Wu Ningzhu talking about the details of her story and her father's story in the past twelve years. They included the things that happened during the time she was in Gu Family and how much Jiang Chen had helped when he came to Gu Family.

The conversation lasted for three hours but within these hours, Jiang Chen and Gu Xuantian were also having a joyful chat even though there were times when they would turn serious as if they were talking about some kind of pressing matters. The three hours had made Gu Xuantian and Jiang Chen friends. Gu Xuantian was able to laugh freely in front of Jiang Chen without the need to care about his image as if he was no longer the high and mighty patriarch but an elder brother talking to a younger brother.

Gu Xuantian was impressed by Jiang Chen. They had talked a lot in the matters of cultivation. Jiang Chen was like a man who knew everything – from concocting pills, crafting of items, formations and many things, name it. Jiang Chen was able to provide crucial insights to the obstacles Gu Xuantian faced in his cultivation.

Gu Xuantian's impression of Jiang Chen grew higher in his heart. To him, Jiang Chen was a miracle, a peerless, monstrous genius.

“You have really amazed me. You know so many things despite your young age. It seems all your achievements aren't accidental.”

Gu Xuantian praised Jiang Chen generously. He was nurturing Gu Liufeng all these years. Although Gu Liufeng was an elite among his peers, he was as insignificant as a sand if he were compared to Jiang Chen. Even the little monstrous genius of Desolate Family on Sky Ranking wasn't comparable to Jiang Chen. Even those geniuses who had entered the Saint Origin Palace had a great difference with Jiang Chen.

At this instant, a sound was heard from behind. Jiang Chen and Gu Xuantian turned their heads and saw the mother and sister was walking towards them while holding hands. Currently, Gu Lan's face looked younger as if she had become twelve years younger and returned to her young time.

“Aunty.”

Jiang Chen held his fists at Gu Lan. He was impressed by Gu Lan's spirited energy.

“Jiang Chen, I really have to thank you this time. Thank you for taking care of my daughter all this this while.”

Gu Lan deeply saluted Jiang Chen with utmost sincerity. In the three hours of conversation, Wu Ningzhu didn't say a lot about Wu Tianyang and herself but Jiang Chen. She had told her mother nearly every courageous thing Jiang Chen had done. It made Gu Lan couldn't help but sigh because she couldn't believe there was such a genius in the world.

There was no doubt that there were an abundance of geniuses in this world but it was extremely rare to see a genius who was as loving as Jiang Chen.

“Aunty, those are the things which I have to do. Those are the promises I made to Sister Ning.”

Jiang Chen moved a step forward and held Gu Lan up.

“Xiao Lan.”

Gu Xuantian called his sister.

Gu Lan raised her head to look at Gu Xuantian. It was impossible to say that she wasn't angry at her brother but her brother's actions today gave her the reason to forgive him.

“Big Brother, twelve years have passed. You have been forcing me to admit my faults but Xiao Lan has no faults. I would like to seriously ask you again today, have I made any mistakes?”

“Xiao Lan, it’s your big brother who made the mistakes.”

Gu Xuantian sighed.

Gu Lan heaved a long sigh. Twelve years of problems had finally been resolved. She knew that it wasn’t easy for Gu Xuantian to admit his own mistakes, but he had done it in front of her today.

Gu Lan looked over at Jiang Chen. He had undeniably impressed her. It was hard for her to imagine what kind of methods Jiang Chen had used to convince Gu Xuantian to admit his mistakes.

“You two have spent twelve years of stubbornness because of a single mistake. Today, all these problems are finally settled.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He had been worrying about the matter of Gu Family as he didn’t know how he was going to resolve the matter of Gu Lan, but it was all over now.

“Xiao Lan, after you left, I will destroy this land of prison.”

Gu Xuantian said.

“No, this is a good place. I will use it as my cultivation place next

time. I have named this place Lan Ning World.”

Gu Lan said.

“Lan Ning World, alright. Since Xiao Lan like it, I will leave this place for you. You can enter whenever you like.”

Gu Xuantian nodded.

“Patriarch, I think, why don’t you do another good deed for them? You can bring Wu Tianyang to Gu Family so that their family can have a reunion.”

Jiang Chen said.

After listening to this, Gu Lan and Wu Ningzhu’s facial expression switch to nervousness. They now looked at Gu Xuantian nervously. A family reunion had been their dream over the twelve years. It would be perfect if Wu Tianyang was able to join them in Gu Family.

However, this would require the nod of Gu Xuantian as he was the patriarch. If he disagreed, Wu Tianyang would not be able to make even one step into Gu Family.

Gu Xuantian knitted his brows. In his heart, Wu Tianyang was an outsider, a tiny being in Southern Continent, which couldn’t be compared to anyone in Gu Family.

“Alright, I will send Gu Mu to Southern Continent to bring Wu Tianyang back here to reunite with you two.”

Gu Xuantian nodded as he felt that he had owed Gu Lan too much. He would treat this as a way to compensate the loss he created for her. Similarly, this was Jiang Chen’s suggestion, so he owed another favour to Jiang Chen.

“Thank you, Big Brother.”

“Thank you, Uncle.”

Gu Lan and Wu Ningzhu rejoiced with wild excitement. A family reunion was a dream that had been in their minds for twelve long years. How could they not feel excited about it? It was hard to imagine how Wu Tianyang would react after getting this news. They were afraid that he would cry for a night.

Chapter 892 - Gu Family Meeting

Jiang Chen and the others had vanished into Lan Ning World for several hours. Despite it being only several hours, the situation in Gu Family had turned chaotic. They did not know what had happened in inner palace yet or the fact that Jiang Chen had gone to inner palace, but news of Shi Han's death had reached the Gu Family. They now had the confirmation that Jiang Chen had killed Shi Han.

The news said that while Jiang Chen was following Gu Mu to Gu Family, they were met with Shi Han. Later, a world-shaking battle started. In the end, Shi Han was slashed into half and Jiang Chen beheaded him.

“My god, Jiang Chen was telling the truth. He had actually killed Shi Han, who was the second genius on the Sky Ranking, but Jiang Chen is merely a Seventh Grade Minor Saint...”

“Yeah. The second genius on the Sky Ranking is killed...this is going to be a huge incident that will shake the Pure Land. I'm afraid amendments must be made to the current Sky Ranking soon. I have no idea what kind of monstrous genius Jiang Chen is. I'm afraid Brother Liufeng isn't his opponent at all.”

“That's right. Although Brother Liufeng had obtained great benefits during a tough trial and has the ability to challenge the top three geniuses on the Sky Ranking, he don't have the power to kill Shi Han. If Jiang Chen and him were to be engaged in a battle, I'm afraid the outcome will be unpleasant.”

“I heard that Jiang Chen is coming here to propose marriage to Miss Ningzhu, but the patriarch have announced to betroth Miss Ningzhu to Brother Liufeng three days later. I’m sure the event is going to turn hot this time.”

.....

Everyone in Gu Family was discussing about Jiang Chen – a genius who had killed Shi Han. In fact, this was not only happening in Gu Family as the news had spread across Pure Land. This single battle had pushed Jiang Chen’s reputation to the peak.

Now, no one had doubts about Jiang Chen’s strength anymore. While the astonishment was still in their body, another shocking news was spread.

Jiang Chen had brought great betrothal gifts to Gu Family, 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and ten bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water. Such extraordinary gifts would naturally create waves of commotion among the people.

“My god, isn’t this Jiang Chen too aggressive for giving out so many incredible treasures?”

“It seems he is determined to marry Miss Ningzhu. It means Brother Liufeng is going to be in danger.”

“Yea. Although Patriarch had made the announcement, the gifts

that Jiang Chen brought are too attractive. It can bring unimaginable benefits to Gu Family. If we are thinking in the perspective of bringing advantages to our family, marrying Miss Ningzhu to Jiang Chen will be more advantageous to us.”

The betrothal gifts had shocked everyone. Apparently, it was Gu Mu who leaked the news. This old man was trying his best to gather support for Jiang Chen.

Everyone was waiting for the family meeting that would be held after three days. Jiang Chen’s arrival was going to make the family meeting hot. Wu Ningzhu and Gu Liufeng were going to play the leading role but Jiang Chen, an outsider, had also taken the leading role.

Another thing that surprised the people was that Gu Liufeng was unusually silent, as though he had never received any of those news outside. However, the youths of Gu Family knew that Gu Liufeng couldn’t continue to stay silent. If he didn’t do anything about it, it would greatly hurt his reputation. Many people predicted that Gu Liufeng would rise in revolt in the family meeting three days later.

In the subsequent three days, Gu Lan and Wu Ningzhu didn’t leave Lan Ning World. Jiang Chen too stayed with them. Even Gu Xuantian didn’t leave the place. Why would the patriarch leave the peaceful place when he could choose to spend leisure time here? As for the setting up and arrangement of the family meeting, his absence wouldn’t affect any of them.

As for Wu Tianyang, Gu Xuantian was going to send Gu Mu to

Southern Continent when the family meeting was over.

In these three days, Gu Lan and Wu Ningzhu were filled with laughter. The silent and depressing atmosphere had turned lively by their laughter. Wu Ningzhu told her mother again about her things, the most important one was the matter about Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng.

“Mother, do you think Uncle will marry me to Little Chen?”

Wu Ningzhu asked doubtfully. Gu Xuantian was the patriarch after all. He would never eat the words he gave.

“Look at them. They have already become friends that can chat without reserve. I have never seen your dignified uncle being friends with an outsider, especially with a junior. This is enough to prove Jiang Chen’s exceptional charisma. If you don’t believe your uncle, you should believe Jiang Chen.”

Gu Lan said with a smile. Jiang Chen was the most excellent young man she had ever seen. If her daughter could marry such an outstanding hero, it would be her daughter’s great fortune. It was her wish to see her daughter having a happy life.

“That’s right. There is nothing in this world which Little Chen can’t do.”

Wu Ningzhu’s face was filled with delight. Her understanding of Jiang Chen was far beyond what Gu Xuantian or Gu Lan had. Jiang

Chen would never give up once he had decided to do a thing and there was nothing he couldn't achieve.

After three days, drumbeats resounded in the sky above the Gu Family. Nobody's ears were able to escape from the sound. Today was the most important day of the Gu Family, it was a day that represented by all the young generations of the family.

The battle drum was an indication of ardor. It was used to stir up the morale of the young fighters who would always move forward in the battlefield.

The martial stage of Gu Family was incomparably huge. It had a radius of ten miles. The martial stage was erected with a number of battle platforms. Every platform was imprinted with various marks and stains that were left by previous battles.

Early in the morning, countless of cultivators have arrived at the martial stage. Their faces were filled with excitement. The center of the stage was occupied by genius young men because this would be their main battlefield.

At this moment, two silhouettes passed through the air and landed at the center of the martial stage. They were a couple consisting of a good-looking man and a beautiful girl. They were Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu. They were holding hands which showed that they were in deep love. When those young men who had chased Wu Ningzhu saw this, their eyes spurt out fire. She was a noble goddess in their eyes but she was now holding hands with an outsider. This was undoubtedly a huge blow to them.

“Look, that man is Jiang Chen. He is too young, much younger than I think.”

“Do you see how well-matched they are? I have no idea what Gu Liufeng would feel when he sees this.”

“He definitely won’t feel good, but Jiang Chen is powerful enough to kill Shi Han. I don’t know whether Gu Liufeng will dare to challenge him or not.”

.....

Chapter 893 - A Conclusion

Jiang Chen became the center of attention. The attention was created because his emergence had provoked their anger. It was a great provocation to all the young men of Gu Family to see the two of them being in love in public. Of course, that was just their emotion. They were smart enough to know their own limitations and were definitely not qualified to compete with Jiang Chen.

However, that didn't mean that Gu Liufeng wasn't qualified to battle against him. Today was the family meeting and Gu Liufeng couldn't stay silent anymore. However, Jiang Chen was the man who had killed Shi Han, so Gu Liufeng wouldn't have a high chance of defeating him.

Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu had turned a deaf ear to these comments.

Dong *Dong* *Dong*

The rhythm of the drum became rapid. Over twenty silhouettes suddenly emerged on a tall platform ahead. The atmosphere turned silent the moment they appeared and as a light majestic aura was drifting in the air. Each and everyone in Gu Family was looking at the tall platform with respect.

The people on the platform were high ranked seniors. The weakest among them was a First Grade Great Saint. The Qi that was released from these Great Saints created a shapeless pressure that suffocated the people below.

Gu Family was one of the eight large families. Naturally, these weren't the only Great Saints the family had. As this was a mere family meeting, it didn't require all of the Great Saints to be present.

The one that stood at the very front was Gu Xuantian. His face looked majestic. He was the supreme person in Gu Family. He was like a god to the people of Gu Family, but the attention of many were shifted to the lady in white standing beside Gu Xuantian.

“Look! That's Elder Gu Lan. She had been imprisoned for twelve years. I never thought that she will appear today.”

“Elder Gu Lan is really pretty. It seems that the conflict between her and Patriarch has been resolved.”

“This is great. I heard that not only does Elder Gu Lan look like a celestial beauty, she is also gifted with innate talents. I have to admit that these facts are true seeing her now.”

.....

Gu Lan's appearance caused a commotion from the crowd. There were many young people who hadn't seen Gu Lan before. In the year that Gu Lan left Gu Family, she had been living in Southern Continent until she was brought back and imprisoned for twelve years. So it was natural that not many people recognized her.

However, it didn't mean they hadn't heard about her before. In Gu Family, there was no one who didn't know about Gu Lan and her life, but due to the fact that discussing Gu Lan's story was considered a highly sensitive thing, no one dared to talk about it.

It seemed the matters had finally come to a conclusion since Wu Ningzhu and Gu Lan are both present today.

“Patriarch, nearly all of them are here. We can start now.”

An elder said.

“En, let's start.”

Gu Xuantian nodded.

The moment Gu Xuantian nodded, a silhouette landed on a battle platform in a flash. He looked to be roughly twenty five years old. He had an aura of grace and elegance and also a handsome face. He was wearing purple clothes, and his body was filled with a domineering aura. His eyes locked on Jiang Chen the moment he arrived.

“It's Gu Liufeng!”

“He finally appeared. Let's see what he will do.”

That person was Gu Liufeng. His arrival made the surrounding

atmosphere slightly heavier.

Gu Liufeng stared at Jiang Chen and shouted, “Jiang Chen, I know the purpose of you coming here. But you have to be capable enough to marry Ningzhu. I, Gu Liufeng is declaring a direct challenge to you. As long as you can defeat me, I will withdraw myself from the marriage.”

“Liufeng.”

Gu Xuantian frowned.

“Patriarch, the conflict is between the two of us. Let us resolve it ourselves.”

Gu Liufeng held his fists at Gu Xuantian.

Gu Liufeng was a very smart person. His words had given Gu Xuantian a solid excuse to save face. Both him and Jiang Chen would settle the conflict between them themselves. If he lost the battle, he would admit his defeat. So, it was his own decision to withdraw from the marriage if he was defeated. It wouldn't create any negative impact to Gu Xuantian's reputation. More importantly, it was vitally important for one to settle his own problems, otherwise, the person would be looked down upon.

Gu Xuantian nodded slightly. He was relieved that he didn't pick the wrong genius. He was relieved that Gu Liufeng didn't let him down.

Swoosh

Without saying any word, Jiang Chen leaped onto the battle platform, standing at the opposite side of Gu Liufeng.

“Gu Liufeng, you are considered a hero here but don’t feel aggrieved and don’t think I have affected you and Wu Ningzhu because of my arrival here. I suppose you have heard about our engagement before this. She doesn’t have you in her heart. Of course, I agree to what you said. Only the strongest is eligible to marry Sister Ning, as such I accept your challenge. I have promised Sister Ning that I will defeat everyone for her.”

Jiang Chen said in a flat tone. He had to admit Gu Liufeng’s laudable spirit. He stood out even though he knew that Jiang Chen had killed Shi Han. Firstly, he was doing this because he wanted to try his best. Secondly, he wanted to provide an excuse for Gu Xuantian. If he refused to solve the problem with Jiang Chen today, Gu Xuantian would be put in a very difficult position because it was Gu Xuantian who announced the marriage of Wu Ningzhu and Gu Liufeng.

As the saying goes, what is said carries weight. The status of the patriarch in Gu Family was more noble than those common emperors.

“Jiang Chen, I know that you have killed Shi Han but I have gained tremendous benefits from the recent tough trial, which had significantly improved my cultivation grade. Initially I was

thinking to find Shi Han and Kong Yang to test my strength. But since you have killed Shi Han, I would like to see how powerful the killer of Shi Han is.”

Gu Liufeng Qi fluctuated. His facial expression was fearless. He was certainly a man whose hobby was fighting.

“It’s a pity that you are still not my opponent.”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“I know that it is impossible to kill Shi Han with my current strength but the battle between you and me is unavoidable and I won’t back away.”

Gu Liufeng replied. His Qi erupted like a volcano. His hand pressed forth, sucking a portion of the void ahead. Then, a large hand materialized and turned into a cloud on one side of the sky, which then came crashing down on Jiang Chen.

Bang

Jiang Chen didn’t slow his reaction. He transformed into a human-dragon. In order to defeat a monstrous genius like Gu Liufeng, he would need the dragon transformation to take him down. This had been obvious during the time when battling Shi Han.

Hong Long

It was the True Dragon Palm. A large dragon claw collided with the giant cloud, creating deafening rumbles. Gu Liufeng's attack was pulverized. Thanks to the powerful seal formation that was set on the battle platform, the platform was not destroyed, otherwise, the impact would pulverize it and other structures.

Gu Liufeng was shaken and started to stagger backwards. His face dropped with shock immediately. Although he had anticipated it, he didn't know Jiang Chen was this powerful.

“What? He is so powerful?!”

“Exceedingly powerful. No wonder he was able to kill Shi Han. But, Brother Liufeng is ranked fourth on the Sky Ranking, he is a half-step Great Saint. I can't believe that, given his current cultivation grade, he can't even stand a single attack from a Seventh Grade Minor Saint.”

“This is terrifying. That man is truly a monster. Do you all realize that Jiang Chen's combat strength has improved by many times after he transformed? Brother Liufeng has acquired great benefits from his recent trial. His current strength is enough to deal with Shi Han and Kong Yan but it is no match to Jiang Chen's strength.”

.....

Everyone was astonished. Not only the young generations, but Gu Xuantian, Gu Lan and the higher ups of Gu Family also were

flabbergasted. As a matter of fact, hearing and witnessing the battle were two entirely different experience. They didn't see how Jiang Chen managed to kill Shi Han, but they knew Gu Liufeng was an outstanding genius. Now, this outstanding genius had lost in the first round of the battle.

“Gu Liufeng. You are strong, but you aren't as strong as Shi Han. But I know that you will be reluctant if I ask you to admit defeat. So, I will convince you that you are at the jaws of defeat.”

The bones in Jiang Chen's body created cracking sounds. Every part of his body was pumped with busting energy that roared continuously. Dharma seals were condensing around Jiang Chen's body before it turned into real dragons. Every dragon illuminated five different lights, as if real dragons had descended from the heavens.

He struck out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Five different seals were launched at the same time. Fifteen dragons with different attributes formed a circle that surrounded Gu Liufeng.

It was no doubt that Gu Liufeng was powerful but he was still weaker than Shi Han. Jiang Chen needed a lot more effort to kill Shi Han but his strike was enough to take Gu Liufeng down as his purpose was to defeat him, not to kill him.

“Big Brother, Jiang Chen's combat technique is really powerful. Did you notice that his attack consists of five different elements? I have to admit that it is truly a scary technique.”

“That’s right. The five elements should be repelling each other but Jiang Chen is able to integrate them perfectly into his technique. It’s extremely rare. I never imagined that there is such unbelievable techniques in the world.”

Gu Lan and Gu Xuantian were truly shaken. Even with their knowledge and experience, they had never seen such a technique before.

“This kid is super scary. His future is inestimable.”

“Too powerful in my opinion! Even though I am a First Grade Great Saint, I will probably be dead if I receive this attack.”

“It seems Liufeng is going to lose the battle. It is clear that it wasn’t a fluke that Jiang Chen killed Shi Han. It was his true ability. His combat strength really frightens me.”

.....

No one was able to calm themselves. The outcome of the battle was already decided. Jiang Chen didn’t try to play tricks on Gu Liufeng. He had struck out his most powerful attack to defeat Gu Liufeng. This indicated a form of respect towards Gu Liufeng.

On the battle platform, even if Gu Liufeng exhausted all his skills and techniques, he wouldn’t be able to withstand Jiang Chen’s Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. When all the violent combat

waves faded and dissipated, Gu Liufeng became visible again. Currently, he looked fazed. Blood was trickling from the corner of his mouth. His Qi had gone unstable. It was obvious, that Gu Liufeng had received severe backlash from the attack just now.

“I lost.”

Gu Liufeng revealed a wry smile. Although he still had some strength left, the previous impact had told him everything. Any further, the battle would be pointless as he was no match for Jiang Chen. In other words, if this was a life-and-death battle, Jiang Chen would have killed him.

Jiang Chen kept his dragon transformation and jumped down from the battle platform, and came to Wu Ningzhu's side. Her current facial expression was full of joy. She still remembered that Jiang Chen would defeat all men for her. And Jiang Chen had never lost before.

“Patriarch, Liufeng has fully accepted his defeat. Brother Jiang is truly a rare genius who only appears once every thousand years. It won't be a humiliation to marry Ningzhu to him.”

Gu Liufeng held his fists to Gu Xuantian and said. As a matter of fact, he had already known the intimacy between Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu but he refused to accept it. However, today's battle with Jiang Chen had finally made him convinced. He was like Gu Xuantian, a man of conscience. There was nothing to be said when he lost the battle. Meanwhile, Jiang Chen had Gu Liufeng's respect for fighting with his true strength.

At this time, Gu Mu stood up from the group. He took out the betrothal gifts and passed it to Gu Xuantian and Gu Lan.

“Patriarch, Elder Gu Lan, these are the betrothal gifts from Jiang Chen, 1.5 billion high grade True Meta Stones, 3 Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pills and 10 bottles of Nine Solar Saint Water.”

Gu Mu was shrewd at picking the right timing. He announced all the items of betrothal gifts right after Gu Liufeng admitted defeat, causing a commotion from the crowd below. It was a different feeling when they saw these items with their own eyes. Many of them started to look at Jiang Chen in an ablazed gaze, agreeing that Jiang Chen was absolutely rich.

“Xiao Lan, what do you think?”

Gu Xuantian looked over at Gu Lan.

“I’m fine with him.”

Gu Lan was very satisfied with her son-in-law.

“Alright. Jiang Chen. In this trip to propose marriage, you have faced numerous tests but you overcame them with sincerity. Given your talent, it is our honor to accept you as the son-in-law of Gu Family. I am now using the authority of patriarch to permit your proposal of marriage with Wu Ningzhu.”

Gu Xuantian kept all the betrothal gifts and said. This matter had finally come to a conclusion. As for Gu Liufeng, he was fully convinced after his defeat. Gu Xuantian wouldn't need to worry about his feelings anymore. If the person he selected couldn't even deal with this defeat, it meant he had selected the wrong one.

“Thank you, Patriarch.”

Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu said at the same time. Jiang Chen's expression seemed ordinary but Wu Ningzhu's facial expression was filled with intense joy that couldn't be concealed.

Jiang Chen heaved a sigh of relief in his heart as the matter of Gu Family had finally come to an end.

Chapter 894 - Earth Devil Beast

“Jiang Chen, Ning Er, since your marriage has already been approved, why not choose a date for the wedding?”

Gu Lan said with a smile.

“That’s right. From now on, you are one of us, Jiang Chen.”

Gu Xuantian smiled. It was no doubt a great thing for the Gu Family to be able to accept a genius like Jiang Chen.

Wu Ningzhu was feeling very delighted right now. She had experienced so many things along the way and finally, it had come to an end. She glanced at Jiang Chen, before saying, “Uncle, mother, about the wedding, I think we should talk about it some other time, Jiang Chen still has many things that he needed to handle. Besides, Jiang Chen’s father is still in the Eastern Continent. I’ll wait until Little Chen finished all of his stuff before we can talk about our wedding.”

Other people might not understand Jiang Chen but she knew him very well. She knew that she wasn’t the only person in his heart, there’s still Yan Chenyu. If they decided to get married today, it would be very unfair to Yan Chenyu. She and Yan Chenyu had already decided to marry the same man, thus the wedding should be postponed to another day.

Jiang Chen glanced at Wu Ningzhu, feeling gratified. A thoughtful woman was always a man’s favorite.

“It may not be a bad idea. In which case, you two are already engaged. Consider the wedding again when the time is ripe.” Gu Xuantian said.

It was better to leave their matters to them. He felt sorry that he had harmed Gu Lan and Wu Tianyang very much last time. However, he was now relieved to see that Wu Ningzhu found her true love again.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu left the martial stage. They were uninterested in the Gu Family meeting. His objective for coming here was considered accomplished. From now on, he, the Demon Race and Gu Family would be tied together in a team. It was undeniably favourable to Jiang Chen. As for these two large families, they were doing this for the sake of their own future, they saw Jiang Chen’s potential and foresee his future.

“Sister Ning, the matters in the Gu Family has already been resolved. I have done the promise that I made to you. Today, you and your mother are together once again. Days later, your father will come to the Gu Family and reunite with you all. As for me, I am leaving the Gu Family for now.” Jiang Chen said.

“I will go with you.” Wu Ningzhu replied.

“No, you can’t. You should know my current circumstances. I have offended so many people, someone might pop out at any second to kill me. The five large families and the Dark Shadow assassins are hidden dangers. Although they had verbally agreed

that the conflict would be settled by their young generations but with Shi Han's death, it will make them understand that there are no young geniuses that can match me. So, it is very likely for them to send Great Saint experts to hunt after me stealthily. Following me is too dangerous for you. It's safest to stay in the Gu Family. Besides, you and your mother have just reunited. It's not the right time to leave now." Jiang Chen said.

"Okay. You have to be careful." Wu Ningzhu nodded.

Although she felt loathsome to be parted from Jiang Chen, her man was telling her the truth. Even though she was a powerful Seventh Grade Minor Saint, she would only be a liability if she followed him, his opponents were just too strong.

"Be at ease. There have been many people who wanted to kill me, but I'm still alive until now." Jiang Chen shrugged.

He bade farewell to her and left while the Gu Family meeting was still ongoing. He left Pure Land and headed to Mysterious Domain.

When Jiang Chen left, Nangong Wentian and Han Yan were in seclusion. Jiang Chen was afraid that they didn't even know what had happened outside. He had obtained tremendous benefits from Void Triangular Domain, and he wouldn't forget his brothers.

Let's not talk about Nangong Wentian; those dark spirits that Jiang Chen gathered in Void Triangular Domain would bring boundless benefits to Han Yan. His Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline allowed him to absorb all kinds of dark energy. The gains he would

get from these dark spirits would be tremendous compared to the devil souls.

Travelling from the Gu Family to Nebula Sect was way further compared to travelling from the Demon Race to the Gu Family, Mysterious Domain wasn't in the area of the Pure Land, but then again, distance wasn't a problem to Jiang Chen. He arrived to his destination quickly.

High in the sky, Jiang Chen flickered and disappeared. He was thousands of miles away every time after he vanished. He was travelling in the spatial zone as he had already perfected the mastery of the spatial energy.

Suddenly, the void ahead was blocked by some layer of shadow that forced Jiang Chen out of the spatial zone. Two silhouettes emerged in the white clouds ahead. They were a man and a beast. The man was an elder wearing black clothes. His body was exuding a cold murderous intent which was an exclusive trait of the Dark Shadow. Beside him was a hill-sized giant beast.

The beast looked extremely ferocious. Its body was roughly 200 meters long and was covered with black scales. The surface of the scales was suffused with black flames. It was the steam-like devil Qi. The giant beast had four eyes. Each of the eye was shooting out a cold light, as if they came from the underworld. There were two long tusks at the corner of its mouth which frightened people.

“Earth devil beast.” Jiang Chen exclaimed.

He wasn't unfamiliar with this giant beast. Back in purgatory, he had exerted all of his efforts to kill an earth devil beast. He hadn't imagined that another earth devil beast would emerge today. The strength of this beast was definitely way more powerful than the one in purgatory. They were on totally different levels.

To one's surprise, this earth devil beast was actually a Second Grade Great Saint. The elder had the same cultivation too. Given Jiang Chen's current cultivation, he wouldn't have a chance of winning if he fought against these two Second Grade Great Saints. Fleeing would be his best option. Besides, an earth devil beast had a super strong combat strength. This Second Grade Great Saint earth devil beast would be able to take down an ordinary Third Grade Great Saint cultivator.

“You people of the Dark Shadow are really annoying.”

Jiang Chen spoke in a cold tone.

“Kid, since our establishment, we have only suffered a great loss from a single person once. You are the second person to do that. I have to admit that I am astonished by your power, but it will all end here today. I will kill you personally without using any assassination technique, and I will make sure that you will not have a complete corpse when you die.” The elder spoke.

He and the earth devil beast had locked the void in the surrounding area, giving Jiang Chen no chance of escaping.

“Haha, a Second Grade Great Saint is bullshitting about killing

me without using an assassination technique. I'm afraid that only the people of the Dark Shadow would dare to say something as shameless as this. Unfortunately, you can't kill me today." Jiang Chen gave a cold smile.

The elder didn't know that the two people that he mentioned were actually the same person.

"A puny little Seventh Grade Minor Saint, it's just a piece of cake for me to kill you."

The elder certainly did not put Jiang Chen in his eyes whatsoever, however he was qualified to act in such a way.

"If you were alone, you might have a chance to severely injure or even kill me. However, it's a pity that you brought an earth devil beast with you. I have already killed an earth devil beast before and I have a special technique that I use in dealing with earth devil beasts. To me, killing that beast is just a piece of cake." Jiang Chen said to the earth devil beast.

Clearly, he said these words on purpose. He knew the Dark Shadow organization all too well. Once he was hunted, they would go after him until he died. This time, the Dark Shadow sent a Second Grade Great Saint to kill him. It showed how much the Dark Shadow wanted him dead.

However, the emergence of the earth devil beast had given him a chance. It's true that he had ways to deal with this beast. That was why he didn't run away. This earth devil beast would probably be

his great assistant in the future. The earth devil beast was the king of devils, which meant that Edifying Light would work on it. The fact remained that his cultivation was still too low to subdue this earth devil beast by using the skill, but he had another way to deal with it—the blood talisman.

Jiang Chen wouldn't forget the fact that he only succeeded in killing the earth devil beast back in purgatory due to the help of the blood talisman. The blood talisman had an enormous suppressive effect on earth devil beasts. In fact, it did not only work on earth devil beasts, but also on all demon beasts.

Plus the fact that the current blood talisman was obtained from the ninth floor of the Suspended Tower, the blood talisman was the apex item of the Demon Race.

So, Jiang Chen would largely be betting on this. He tried to provoke the earth devil beast to attack him, which would give him the chance to edify it using the power of the blood talisman and Edifying Light. Once the earth devil beast was in his possession, the dead one would be the elder instead of him. It also meant that he would obtain a mighty assistant.

Nevertheless, there was still a problem. The blood talisman glued itself into the corner of his Qi Sea like a super arrogant boss, regardless of how many times Jiang Chen tried to call it. If he couldn't use the blood talisman, it would be extremely difficult to deal with the earth devil beast.

At any rate, Jiang Chen had to give it a try.

Roar

Just as expected, the earth devil beast was enraged after hearing Jiang Chen's words.

"Allow me to kill him for looking down on me and killing my descendant. He is truly seeking death. I am going to rip him into pieces." The earth devil beast raged.

"Alright, earth devil beast, I will let you kill him but make sure that there is no mistake this time." The elder said.

Dong

The earth devil beast moved. Its very sturdy body reached Jiang Chen in a blink. It opened its large mouth, its voice was thunderous. "Damn you boy! You dare to look down on me? Don't you know how to write the word 'die'?"

"Humph! You will know why later."

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph and turned into a human-dragon instantly. Without saying a word, he struck out the powerful Fire Dragon Seal. His flames had a certain suppressive effect on the earth devil beast.

"Die boy!"

The devil Qi of the earth devil beast shot up to the sky. It spat out devil flames that instantly pulverized Jiang Chen's fire dragon. Although the flames had a suppressive effect on devil flames, the difference in cultivation was just too big.

Chapter 895 - The Miserable Elder

The devil Qi of the earth devil beast was rushed speedily to the sky. It opened its large bloody mouth that could swallow everything. The devil Qi that dashed out of its mouth looked as deadly as sharp blades while lunging at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen facial expression changed drastically. The Second Grade Great Saint earth devil beast was totally beyond his ability to handle. Although he could defeat ordinary First Grade Great Saints, Second Grade Great Saints were still too powerful for him. As a matter of fact, a Second Grade Great Saint earth devil beast was as powerful as an ordinary Third Grade Great Saint. There was no way that he could compensate the gap between the two of them.

Jiang Chen groaned silently while circulating the dragon transformation art to the maximum. He attempted to circulate the blood talisman but it was still as stubborn and unresponsive as before. It gave Jiang Chen the urge to curse it.

In the moment of helplessness, Jiang Chen drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword to defend himself.

Hong Long

The powerful and sharp Heavenly Saint Sword couldn't match the earth devil beast. If Jiang Chen wasn't quick enough, he would've been devoured by the earth devil beast alive. It is undeniably true that this king of devils isn't someone that you would want to deal with.

Jiang Chen was sent flying away for over ten steps. He felt that the Qi and blood in his body were surging unpleasantly. It was a feeling that he couldn't put into words. A trickle of blood flowed out from the corner of his mouth.

“Motherf*cker! I'm no match for this giant guy. If I couldn't use the blood talisman, I can only run. It would be impossible to subdue this earth devil beast with Edifying Light given my current strength.” Jiang Chen cursed and was frustrated.

He initially thought that the blood talisman would be able to help him, but now, it seemed like his hope was all in vain.

“Good, a Seventh Grade Minor Saint boy is still alive after receiving my attack. You should already be proud even if you die.”

The earth devil beast swayed and turned into a middle-aged brawny man. He had a majestic look, his domineering aura dashed to the sky and his face was filled with ferociousness. This was the king of devils, a matchless being among the devils. It was a rare species; this was only the second earth devil beast that he had ever seen across the entire Saint Origin World.

“Die now.”

The earth devil beast moved again. The human earth devil beast had sealed the entire void. He struck out a large, black palm the size of a hill, crushing down on Jiang Chen. If a person received this attack head-on, the outcome would be unimaginable.

However, Jiang Chen was proficient in Spatial Shift. It wouldn't be easy for the earth devil beast to kill him. He could in fact run away from it using the Spatial Shift, but he gritted his teeth and stayed in his position, unmoving. He was betting, betting that the blood talisman in his Qi Sea wouldn't turn a blind eye to his circumstance.

He was sure that the blood talisman was related to the dragon transformation art. He was a cultivator of the dragon transformation art, the master. He had witnessed the power of the blood talisman before. He was sure that if the blood talisman attacked, it would certainly suppress the earth devil beast. So, this was the thing that he was betting on. He bet that the blood talisman wouldn't want to see him die under the hands of the earth devil beast.

As much as he wanted to bet, he might as well go all in. He held the Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand but did not make a single move or gesture to defend himself.

This was an unrestrained gamble, and he used his life as the bet. If the blood talisman was still not going to respond, his consequences would be disastrous.

Weng *Weng*

The blood talisman didn't disappoint Jiang Chen. When he felt a tremendous amount of danger, the blood talisman flew out of his body and turned into a blood light. It didn't look very divine but it

pulverised the earth devil beast's attack with ease. Subsequently, the blood talisman flew towards the head of the earth devil beast, a bloody light shone from above and formed a blood-red giant net, wrapping the earth devil beast within.

“Truly awesome.”

Jiang Chen let out a sigh of relief. This snobbish boss finally reacted. Back in purgatory, it was because of the blood talisman that no demon beasts dared to take a step into the purgatory. It only showed how powerful the blood talisman is in suppressing demon beasts. It was also the reason they succeeded in killing the earth devil beast in the purgatory.

“What is this thing? I can feel some kind of desolate and ancient existence in it. It gives me the urge to worship it. The shapeless energy that is released from this talisman suffocates me.” The earth devil beast facial expression changed drastically.

It glared at the blood talisman. The blood talisman was like an ancient ancestor of all the demon beasts, it could subdue all of them. Although it was a devil, it was also a demon beast. Currently, it was suppressed by the blood-red cage firmly. Its soul was shivering as if it had offended a mighty god. It felt that it was going to die soon. So, how could it still manage to kill Jiang Chen?

“The chance has come.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. This moment was his best chance. With a sway, he reached the earth devil beast. He circulated the

Great Soul Derivation Technique and shouted, “Earth Devil Beast!”

The suppressed earth devil beast was pounded by the Great Soul Derivation Technique, causing it to lose its consciousness temporarily. It raised its head unconsciously, and saw a serpent-like light swoosh into the spot between its brows.

Then, the earth devil beast felt like a spell had been marked in its deepest soul. It resisted intensely and howled uncontrollably and helplessly. Despite its power, it was still unable to resist the pressure of the blood talisman and the Edifying Light. It would be subdued completely in no time.

Jiang Chen’s big claw moved in a grabbing motion, and kept the blood talisman. It returned to its usual spot in his Qi Sea and stayed there like a boss, but Jiang Chen’s impression towards it was slightly better now. He was feeling a lot better than the previous times because if it wasn’t for this boss, he would be doomed.

The earth devil beast howled non-stop. The wild and intractable Qi on its body vanished. It now looked as tame as a sheep. It bowed to Jiang Chen and called him respectfully, “Master.”

“Haha! Good.” Jiang Chen laughed pleasantly.

Today was truly a great and lucky day. The Dark Shadow had just given him a great gift not long after he left the Gu Family. It also allowed him to understand the power of the blood talisman.

With this earth devil beast by his side, it would be impossible for any assassin to make an attempt on his life.

“Earth devil beast, what are you doing?”

From a distance, the elder assassin of the Dark Shadow instantly changed his expression. Things happened too quickly. He initially thought that the earth devil beast would be able to get rid of Jiang Chen with ease, and had not thought that something like this would occur. He heard it clearly, the earth devil beast has just called Jiang Chen ‘Master’. The earth devil beast must be seriously joking.

Yet, the earth devil beast turned a deaf ear to the elder’s words. It moved and stood beside Jiang Chen.

“Earth devil beast, what the f*ck are you doing? Kill him now!”

The elder roared, but he wasn’t a fool. He was able to discern the changes in the earth devil beast. He guessed that it must be Jiang Chen’s doing that something like this happened.

“Earth devil beast, kill him!”

Jiang Chen extended his finger and pointed at the elder.

“Yes, Master.”

Without saying another word, a mighty devil Qi was unleashed from its body. It had returned to its previous devil-king state in an instant. It lunged at the elder. It wouldn't dare defy Jiang Chen's commands. Even if Jiang Chen wanted it dead, it would still follow the command without hesitation.

“Earth devil beast...”

The elder's eyeballs nearly popped out of its socket. He felt that something unbelievable had just happened to the earth devil beast. It was supposed to be his friend, his assistant, but after a few blinks, it turned into his enemy. What on earth actually happened?

The devil beast's attack was only an inch away from him but he was still calling out for it. He had no choice but to defend. A long and chilling sword that was used to kill appeared in his hand and he slashed at the devil beast.

Unfortunately, how could he possibly be an opponent for the earth devil beast? The earth devil beast was just too strong. Even though both of them were at the Second Grade Great Saint realm, their combat strength varied greatly. Plus, the elder was an assassin but was fighting in the open now. The higher ups of the Dark Shadow had sent him with the earth devil beast. But then, it seemed like he had brought an enemy with him.

Bang

He was thrown far away after their initial collision and landed three hundred meters away. He opened his mouth and spurted a

mouthful of blood. A Second Grade Great Saint was definitely no match for the earth devil beast.

Roar

The earth devil beast was indifferent about the elder's emotions, it was doing its best to complete the task given by its master. Without saying a word, it made another lunge at the elder.

“What the hell? What has happened? Jiang Chen, what did you do to the earth devil beast?”

The elder spurted out blood. This time it was because of anger. He didn't know what spell Jiang Chen used to control the earth devil beast. Facing the earth devil beast gave him the feeling that thousands of alpaca was galloping in his heart, he couldn't put it into words.

“Haha! I have to thank the Dark Shadow for giving me this great present – earth devil beast. What are you waiting for? Kill him!” Jiang Chen laughed in delight and commanded the earth devil beast again.

Roar

The earth devil beast turned frenzied in a second. Surging energy erupted out from its body, it once again lunged at the elder wildly. The elder was wailing continuously. If he chose to flee in the very beginning, he would've been able to escape from the grip of the

earth devil beast, given the speed of a Second Grade Great Saint, but he was severely injured now. It had become impossible for him to go anywhere that was out of the earth devil beast's sight.

The sharp claw of the earth devil beast grabbed and clutched the elder. The severely injured elder was unable to struggle himself free from the grip of the beast.

“Earth devil beast, f*ck you!”

The elder swore loudly. His death today was an aggrieved death.

Chapter 896 - Killing the First Grade Great Saint

“Argh...”

The elder was no match for the earth devil beast after all. He made a piercing wail as he was crushed by the earth devil beast. His death was tragic. Before he came, he had ninety percent confidence in killing Jiang Chen even without the evil devil beast. His own ability could've taken Jiang Chen's life with ease.

Actually, the reason that he brought the earth devil beast along was to frighten Jiang Chen to death. That explained why the earth devil beast was in his devil form in the beginning, instead of its human form. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen wasn't frightened in the slightest bit and he died under the hands of the earth devil beast instead. This was absolutely the most infuriating death under the Heavens.

Dark Shadow suffered another major loss because of Jiang Chen - a powerful Second Grade Great Saint and a mighty earth devil beast. This loss would hurt the bones and sinews of the organization. As for Jiang Chen, the Dark Shadow has just presented him a huge gift. With the presence of earth devil beast by his side, he wouldn't need to act cautiously anywhere he went.

“Earth devil beast, let me ask you something. Do you know where the stronghold of the Dark Shadow is?”

Asked Jiang Chen.

“Yes, I know.”

The earth devil beast said.

“How many Great Saints are there in Dark Shadows and what is the highest grade among the Great Saints?”

Jiang Chen continued to ask. He hated Dark Shadow thoroughly for haunting his peaceful life like undying spectres. He was resolute to annihilate the entire organization, making them disappear in this world eternally.

“There are thirteen Great Saint experts in the Dark Shadow. Excluding me and the one that i just killed, there are eleven left. The general is a mighty Fifth Grade Great Saint. There are two Fourth Grade Great Saints, three Third Grade Great Saints and the remainder are either Second Grade Great Saint or First Grade Great Saint.”

The earth devil beast didn't dare to show the least bit of disrespect in his answer. He only answered with facts.

“Humph! Their formation is quite strong. Let's go. Follow me back to the Western Domain. When we return, we will go and annihilate the Dark Shadow.”

Jiang Chen gave out a cold humph. He changed his initial thought of going to Nebula Sect. After subduing the mighty earth

devil beast, he thought of raising his cultivation to another level. He would bring the earth devil beast to the Devil World in Western Domain and edify another batch of devils that are Third Grade Great Saints. With his current cultivation strength, he could edify at most two Third Grade Great Saints. As soon as he had edified two Third Grade Great Saints, he would seek the help of Peacock King for them to jointly annihilate the Dark Shadow once and for all.

The strongest Great Saint in the Dark Shadow was only a Fifth Grade Great Saint. Although Peacock King was only a Fourth Grade Great Saint, his combat power was extraordinarily strong. His bloodline was rarer than the earth devil beast. As such, his combat power would be powerful enough to handle any ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saints.

“If master wants me to kill someone, I will kill anyone.”

The earth devil beast’s reply made Jiang Chen very satisfied. This was the great advantage of the edifying light. Once a devil was completely edified, it would become his slave. It would obey and take any orders from him without the slightest bit of defiance.

“Very good, earth devil beast. Let’s go to the Devil World.”

Jiang Chen spoke. Then, he vanished into the void with a sway. The earth devil beast followed behind him. The both of them were moving at their maximum speed, heading to the direction of the Devil World in Western Domain.

He was quite cautious when he arrived in the Western Domain because he didn't really get along with the Great Lightning Tune Temple with the previous incident. It would cause him trouble if they found out any of his traces here. His destination was the Devil World, as such he didn't pause when he passed the Greenlotus Mountain.

Greenlotus Mountain was as serene as usual. One could see and feel its harmonious atmosphere from the outside. It seemed like the Great Lightning Tune Temple didn't cause Great Master Ran Feng any trouble. This had given Jiang Chen some relief. He would feel sorry if Great Master Ran Feng and Tyrant were in trouble because of him.

The Devil World. This wasn't the first time that Jiang Chen came to this place. Every trial in this world was fruitful. Last time, he had edified a few Minor Devil Saints, which were now guarding the Martial Saint Dynasty on his behalf,. He had two objectives for coming here this time. One was to edify a powerful Third Grade Great Saint devil. The second was to use devil souls to advance to the Eighth Grade Minor Saint.

Jiang Chen's capability rose to another level after obtaining the blood talisman. This capability allowed him to advance in an intimidating way. In order to advance to the Eighth Grade Minor Saint, he would need to refine devil souls that are at least of Ninth Grade Minor Devil Saint. In fact, he could just do it by just refining all the dark spirit he collected, but he wanted to keep them for Han Yan. Anyway, he was already in Devil World, he might as well improve his cultivation.

Jiang Chen and the earth devil beast intruded into the Devil World smoothly. Entering the Devil World, He could feel the dense devil Qi whereas the earth devil beast was very excited. To the earth devil beast, this place was a paradise.

Roar

The earth devil beast roared as his devil Qi billowed to the top. Feeling the majestic devil aura, all the devils lay themselves down, shivering. They were frightened and didn't dare to lift their heads up. Any ordinary devils could not bear that kind of aura.

“Earth devil beast, conceal your aura. Follow me into the deepest level of the Devil World. Our target is a Third Grade Great Saint devil. Are you confident in handling that?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Master can be rest assured. My bloodline belongs to the king of devils. Any ordinary devil who sees me will be suppressed by the imposing aura of my bloodline. Although I am just a Second Grade Great Saint, I have already reached the peak of Second Grade. It won't be a problem for me to face a Third Grade Great Devil Saint.”

The earth devil beast said confidently.

“Very well. When we encounter one, you don't need to kill it. Of course, it will be easy for you to defeat a Third Grade Great Saint

but killing it wouldn't be as easy. You only need to suppress it and leave the rest to me.”

Jiang Chen reminded the earth devil beast.

“This servant understands.”

The earth devil beast nodded. He was truly obedient to Jiang Chen.

The both of them turned into two beams of light, shooting towards the deepest level of the Devil World. Great Saint devils could only be found in the deepest level, it would be very hard to find them in the other levels.

Roar

As Jiang Chen and the earth devil beast entered the deepest level, a roar sounded from a close distance. Then, a ferocious-looking middle-aged sturdy man rushed out, blocking their path. His face was full of black wrinkles. His body was emanating a fiery devil Qi. Its cultivation was a powerful – First Grade Great Saint.

“Hehe, a human brat has the nerve to intrude into the deepest level of the Devil World. He must be truly naïve! I haven't eaten a human flesh for a long time.”

The devil licked its mouth as if the two of them were its prey that were ready to be slaughtered. Due to earth devil beast concealing

its Qi, the adversary couldn't detect a single threat from him.

“Bastard, you dare to disrespect my master! Courting death!”

The earth devil beast was enraged. It seemed like it was about to lunged at the devil.

“I will handle him.”

Jiang Chen waved, implying the earth devil beast to stop. He was going to handle this First Grade Great Devil Saint by himself, because he had never fought a true Great Saint opponent before, even after reaching the Seventh Grade Minor Saint. Now, this was a great opportunity for him to do that.

With his current cultivation, he would be able to defeat a First Grade Great Saint but it would be too difficult for him to kill a First Grade Great Saint. But then again, this might not be the case if his opponent was a devil because he had many techniques that could suppress them.

Hong

Jiang Chen made a step and turned into his dragon-form. He wouldn't dare underestimate a First Grade Great Saint opponent. If he fought in his human-form, he wouldn't stand a chance.

Bang

An explosion of energy occurred in the void. Jiang Chen immediately struck out a punch without saying a word. It was a punch that carried the weight of a mountain and blazing with fire. It reached the devil in a blink.

“Seeking death!”

The devil was enraged. It was outrageous that a puny human dared to attack him. The devil let out a wild roar that burst out boundless of devil flames, forming a fist that headed straight towards Jiang Chen. Its face revealed a ferocious smile. In its point of view, this punch was already enough to turn his enemy into a meat paste.

Hong Long

The void was instantly torn off when these two fists collided. The devil couldn't withstand the powerful energy coming from Jiang Chen's knuckle and was pushed flying away. Its face was filled with astonishment.

“Impossible. How could a tiny Seventh Grade Minor Saint overpowered me from just a single attack? This must be a joke. Brat! What kind of flame is that? Why can it suppress me?”

The devil was shocked, it looked at Jiang Chen like it had just seen a real ghost.

“A flame that could kill you.”

Jiang Chen didn't feel like answering its question. The collision showed his combat strength so he didn't have to waste any more time testing his strength. His Heavenly Saint Sword materialised with a swoosh. The dragon-shaped long sword was surrounded with boundless of flames, flooding the entire void with a raging fire that incinerated all the devil Qi. At the same time, he casted the Five Elemental Power Sphere to encompass the devil completely.

Roar

The devil roared angrily and launched a frenzied attack towards Jiang Chen. Due to the suppression of the flames, the devil was not able to exert its full strength in the fight. The difference was great. The devil's actual combat strength was actually below Jiang Chen's, adding the effects of his flames, there was no need to mention the obvious difference.

Pu Chi

The devil's force was pulverized by the Heavenly Saint Sword. The metal moved in lightning like speed and slashed off one of its arms. The flames on the metal clung to his wound like a bone ulcer and burned.

“Bastard.”

The devil rage but there was nothing that it could do because another slash was coming. This strike was even more violent than the last. It would be impossible for the devil to defend against it given its current condition.

Pu Chi

Along with the agonizing wail, the First Grade Great Devil Saint was severed into half and died. A black devil soul fell directly into Jiang Chen's hands as though it was summoned.

Chapter 897 - The Objective Is Met

After killing the First Grade Great Saint devil, Jiang Chen returned to his human form. Looking at the devil soul in his hand, he couldn't help smiling. In his present cultivation base, refining the devil soul of a First Grade Great Saint was enough to let him advance to the eight grade.

“Truly amazing.”

The earth devil beast caught his breath. He had never seen a human who could be so powerful, killing a First Grade Great Saint while he was only a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. He wouldn't believe it if he wasn't present in the scene.

“Earth devil beast, I am going to refine this devil soul to break through to Eighth Grade Minor Saint. Stay vigilant at the surroundings as we will stay here for now. The previous commotion will attract greater devils here. Once a Third Grade Great Saint devil emerges, our objective is met,” said Jiang Chen.

“Yes, Master.”

The earth devil beast nodded. He used his sharp perception to observe around carefully and be a good guard to ensure the best environment for Jiang Chen's advancement.

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen refined the devil soul through circulating the dragon transformation art. Through using the flames True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire the devil Qi within

the soul was purified very quickly, leaving only the purest energy within.

Weng *Weng*

A massive amount of energy was slowly refined by Jiang Chen. One by one, dragon marks began to form. The speed of formation was very fast. It took only a minute to condense a thousand new dragon marks.

The earth devil beast's eyes were staring at Jiang Chen's body, astonished by his continuously rising Qi. The beast was considered a being that could trample the world but it had never seen such monstrous human, a human not only had great combat power, but could also advance in such a casual way.

The energy within the devil soul of a First Grade Great Saint was too tremendous. The number of dragon marks were increasing. Soon, a thousand dragon marks were condensed. The previous number of dragon marks was 72, 000 but now it had reached 74, 000. A large bulk of high grade True Meta Stones was refined and a wave of monstrous Qi burst out of his body like raging waves, pushing his grade directly to the eighth grade.

The energy of the devil soul wasn't exhausted yet after the breakthrough. New dragon marks were still gathering in his Qi Sea. At this moment, two very powerful Qi rushed to his direction from afar. Very quickly, they reached Jiang Chen and the earth devil beast. They were both powerful devils. One of them was a Second Grade Great Saint while the other had already reached Third Grade Great Saint. Their eyes immediately fell upon Jiang Chen and the

beast the moment they arrived.

“It’s human, kill him!” said the Third Grade Great Saint.

Suddenly, the Second Grade Great Saint devil beside him unleashed a surging murderous intent and lunged at Jiang Chen in the form of light.

The earth devil beast’s Qi trembled and was prepared to kill the Second Grade Great Saint, but at that particular moment, Jiang Chen leaped from the ground towards the incoming opponent while shouting at the earth devil beast, “Leave this to me, you handle that Third Grade Great Saint.”

The present Jiang Chen wasn’t like before. Not only had he advanced to Eighth Grade Minor Saint, he had also condensed another thousand dragon marks within this very short period of time, making a total of 75, 000 dragon marks and pushing his cultivation grade to the peak of his grade. His current power was enough to deal with ordinary Second Grade Great Saint. Adding the fact that his opponent was a devil, he wouldn’t have a single problem in taking the devil down.

Roar

After receiving the command from Jiang Chen, the earth devil beast roared and appeared in front of the Third Grade Great Saint in a blink. Its body was filled with wild devil Qi. It condensed a giant palm as large as the sky, pressing against the Third Grade Great Saint.

“You are one of us and your bloodline is greater than mine. You are an imperial kinsman of the devil race but you are helping a human, which is a total disgrace to us. I will kill you now and absorb your noble bloodline.”

The Third Grade Great Saint was infuriated. He struck out a black light pillar at the earth devil beast. The intense battle between these two experts turned the sky overhead murky. Although the earth devil beast was strong, its opponent was a Third Grade Great Saint. It was impossible to injure the opponent severely in the first round of battle.

On the other side, Jiang Chen's series of frenzied attacks had caused severe injuries on the Second Grade Great Saint within the shortest possible time. An arm was ripped off forcefully and the flames burned from his wound like the previous devil.

“Bastard! What kind of flame is this?”

The devil raged but he could do nothing to change the situation. He was already a very powerful Great Saint, but this young man was more powerful than him. The thing that made him aggrieved the most was the flames of his enemy. He had reached a level where no ordinary flames or even the stronger flames would have a suppressive effect on him, but his opponent's flames was the most powerful kind and his natural enemy, which had suppressed his power without warming.

“Fire Dragon Seal!” Jiang Chen struck.

Three fire dragons rushed out from three different directions, trapping the devil firmly. Not only the Fire Dragon Seal had high damage, but it was also able to exert suppressive effect on the devil to the extreme, which can be said that it was the devil's greatest enemy.

The devil had gone furiously mad. He used every technique he got to defend against Jiang Chen's Fire Dragon Seal, but if Jiang Chen wanted to kill him, he wouldn't be able to resist it. While he successfully defended against the Fire Dragon Seal, Jiang Chen's long sword reached him. The sword was unrivalled and exceedingly sharp. It went through the devil's skull with a splash.

After piercing through the head, Jiang Chen pick the devil soul within.

"Not bad. I don't need this Second Grade Great Saint devil soul anyway. I can give it to Han Yan together with the other dark spirits. I'm sure it will enhance his cultivation grade by leaps and bounds." Jiang Chen smiled.

He had just advanced to the Eighth Grade Minor Saint, so he couldn't use it for the time being, but Han Yan who possessed the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline could refine any of them. The devil soul of this Second Grade Great Saint alone could ensure a rapid advancement.

Roar...

Back to the earth devil beast's side. The beast roared incessantly, and transformed into its true form. Its body was like the size of a 100 meter tall hill, while its four ghostly eyes were cold and ruthless.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

The earth devil beast was completely infuriated. Its four eyes glowed like the cold lights in the underworld. It seemed to be able to penetrate through the ancient time, and carried a destructive force that could exterminate everything. That was the light of death that came from the region, it was able to freeze people's souls.

Four beams of cold lights moved incredibly fast and arrived at the Third Grade Great Saint in a blink.

“Earth devil beast.”

The Third Grade Great Saint exclaimed. He didn't dare to believe his own eyes. He hadn't been able to discern the bloodline of this devil king, but he didn't imagine this imperial kinsman was the king of thousands of devils – Earth Devil Beast. Its four eyes were called the Hell Eyes. They had unpredictable destructive damage.

Even though the devil was a Third Grade Great Saint, a grade higher than the earth devil beast, he didn't dare to underestimate the attack of the earth devil beast. He exerted all his devil force to condense a black shield. The surface of the shield was engraved with countless devil marks that looked like an ancient and

ferocious old devil.

Hu Hu

It was a very powerful devil shield. The devil lifted it to block the incoming four beams of cold lights.

Hong Long

Too bad, despite the sturdiness of the devil shield, it couldn't withstand the damage brought by the Hell Eyes. The devil shield was fully wrapped by the cold light and was pierced through. The strong impact hit the devil's body, sending him flying away.

.....

The devil's expression changed for the worst. He spurted out a few mouthful of black blood, and his Qi started to languish. The fact that he was still alive was because of his strength. If he were replaced by a Second Grade Great Saint, he would die instantly when the attack of the Hell Eyes pierced through his body.

“Earth devil beast, trap him! Don't let him escape.”

Jiang Chen hastily gave a command to the beast, fearing that the devil would escape.

As Jiang Chen's words faded, the earth devil beast pounced forth.

Its giant body suspended in the air above the devil's head like a large dark cloud, suppressing the devil firmly. Under such kind of suppression, the devil couldn't struggle himself out no matter how hard he tried.

“Earth devil beast, you actually help a human to fight our race?”

The devil snarled with grievance but all of his shouting at the edified earth devil beast was to no avail. The earth devil beast only had Jiang Chen in its eyes, and only had Jiang Chen's commands in its mind.

“Don't waste your breath. You will soon be my slave, like him.”

Jiang Chen came to the devil's side and struck out the edifying light. Due to the suppression of the earth devil beast, the devil wasn't able to block the charging edifying light. After a few symbolic struggles of the devil, he was completely edified.

“Master.”

The devil approached Jiang Chen and called him 'Master' in salute.

After seeing what happened, the earth devil beast retracted its power and returned to its human appearance, and stood behind Jiang Chen.

“Good, you two will be my followers from now on. The battles

just now were too fierce. We have to leave now.”

After finishing his words, he led the earth devil beast and the devil out of the Devil World. The trembling combat waves of the previous battles would very soon attract greater devils to them. If a Fourth Grade Great Saint emerged, they wouldn't stand a chance and it would be extremely difficult to leave the place.

The objective of coming to the Devil World had been achieved and it was time for Jiang Chen to return. With these two great experts by his side, Great Saint enemies would become his least concerns. If the Great Saint experts of the five large families tried to make a move secretly against him, they would have to let them bear their own consequences.

Before leaving Western Domain, Jiang Chen wanted to pay a visit to Greenlotus Mountain. He hadn't had the chance to express his gratitude to Great Master Ran Feng for helping him last time. And, he hadn't seen that 'highest grade' monk, Tyrant, for a long time. He actually missed him.

Chapter 898 - The Secret of Ancestor Greenlotus

Now that they're outside of the Devil World, Jiang Chen let the devil and the earth devil beast hide in the spatial ring. These two experts were his trump cards, he wouldn't use them if his life wasn't really in danger. Besides, he already had the strength to face his enemies himself.

Greenlotus Mountain was as serene as always. This fact alone showed how much the Great Lightning Tune Temple cared about their reputation. The Western Domain was known to be the holy land of Buddha Sect after all. If the Great Lightning Tune Temple ignored this fact and struck Great Master Ran Feng, they would certainly be named a shameless sect. Furthermore, the Great Lightning Tune Temple had always wanted to get the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus. Naturally, they couldn't push him too much. They had already established a good relationship with him for so many years, and knew his temper very well. If they pressure him too much, it would either cause the fish to die or the net to split*, either of the two wouldn't do them any good.

What's more, the position and prestige of Ancestor Greenlotus in Buddha Sect was just too high. If the higher ups of the Great Lightning Tune Temple went to deal with Great Master Ran Feng directly, they were afraid that it would arouse the dissatisfaction of other monks in the temple.

Jiang Chen walked directly into Greenlotus Mountain and came to the rear of the big hall. His eyes fell on the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus. His face was bursting with a smile. If someone asked

him who was the only friend he had in his past life, his answer would be Ancestor Greenlotus. Although they didn't have much contact with each other, they appreciated each other very much.

“Little friend Jiang Chen, you have come.”

A voice rang from behind. He knew that it was Great Master Ran Feng without guessing.

“I just went to the Devil World and happened to pass by here, I just came to see you and Tyrant.” Jiang Chen turned around.

When he sensed Great Master Ran Feng's cultivation, he nodded. The current Great Master Ran Feng had already advanced to the second grade of the Great Saint realm. As a disciple of Ancestor Greenlotus, he was naturally not a mediocre talent. With the help of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill, his physique improved, and allowed him to advance by leaps and bounds.

Jiang Chen's cultivation also shocked Great Master Ran Feng tremendously— Eighth Grade Minor Saint. His speed of progress would certainly make people speechless.

“Little friend is the most remarkable talent in ages. I would certainly not meet a lot of geniuses like you in this lifetime.” Great Master Ran Feng couldn't stop admiring him.

He had already noticed that Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary human a long time ago but he was still shocked by his speed of

improvement. In his point of view, the stronger Jiang Chen becomes, the happier he is.

“Great Master, there is a question that I have always wanted to ask you, but I couldn’t say it out loud before. Today, I wanted to ask if there’s any news regarding Ancestor Greenlotus.” Jiang Chen looked at Great Master Ran Feng and said.

He had always wanted to know if he could meet his old friend again. It would definitely be a delightful thing for Jiang Chen.

“About this...” Great Master Ran Feng frowned, feeling slightly awkward.

“Great Master has always been in Greenlotus Mountain all this time, you might not know what has happened outside. I have already built a strong connection with the Gu Family and the Demon Race. Moreover, my current strength is already enough to kill a Second Grade Great Saint. Earth devil beast, devil, you all come out now.” Jiang Chen called for them.

Both of them appeared in the hall simultaneously. In that instant, the entire hall was filled with a billowy devil Qi, but after Jiang Chen’s signal, the two of them concealed their devil Qi quickly. Otherwise, they would draw the attention of the Great Lightning Tune Temple soon.

“What?”

He knew the reason why Great Master Ran Feng didn't tell him, Ran Feng felt that the time wasn't ripe and his strength wasn't strong enough. As such, it was necessary for him to show his strength. Just a saying goes: It's better for you not know if your strength is still not powerful enough.

Sure enough, Great Master Ran Feng couldn't help but exclaim when he saw the earth devil beast and the devil. His eyes were filled with disbelief. Like what Jiang Chen had said, the secret about Ancestor Greenlotus was no trivial matter.

Great Master Ran Feng had a look of shock on his face when he saw Jiang Chen's strength. One should know that there is an enormous gap between the Minor Saint realm and the Great Saint realm. It would absolutely be impossible to leap like a frog the grades. It was frightening to hear that Jiang Chen could kill a Second Grade Great Saint with his Eighth Grade Minor Saint strength.

"Great Master, you might have heard from Tyrant about the edifying light. We both acquired the edifying light at the same time. This earth devil beast and devil were edified by me. Perhaps you are still wondering why I was so eager to know the news of Ancestor Greenlotus. After all, I have no relationship or whatsoever with him. So, I will tell you my true identity now." Jiang Chen's expression turned solemn.

He felt that it was necessary to tell Great Master Ran Feng his true identity. There was nothing much that he needed to hide from Great Master Ran Feng anymore. Ancestor Greenlotus would certainly recognize him with just a glance.

After hearing Jiang Chen's words, Great Master Ran Feng became nervous. He stared at Jiang Chen without blinking his eyes. He had already sensed some anomalies when Jiang Chen first came to see the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus. Plus, this young man was too heaven defying. Whether it was his actions or how he converse, it was always beyond the norm.

Jiang Chen turned around to look at the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus. He said, "Old friend, it's been more than a hundred years."

Behind him, Great Master Ran Feng's eyes widened, as if he had thought of something. For a moment, he felt like his mind froze and could not regain his senses.

Jiang Chen turned to Great Master Ran Feng once more. "You are right. I am the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. That year, I died on that cliff but my soul didn't, and I was reincarnated. I have come all the way from the Eastern Continent to once again reach the peak that I have already set foot in my past life. At that time, in the Chaotic Ocean, when I first met Tyrant, I already knew that he was a descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus just from his dharma seal, so I stepped in and rescued him."

Bang

The news was like a thunderbolt that struck Great Master Ran Feng's head. It turned out that the Greatest Saint hadn't died, he had just entered into another body and was standing in front of

Great Master Ran Feng.

This must be the truth. Jiang Chen wouldn't lie. Great Master Ran Feng had seen the Greatest Saint once. That kind of demeanour, and dominance was somehow similar to the young man in front of him. What's more, if he was really the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, Jiang Chen, everything made sense. This young man at hand virtually knew everything and could also concoct the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon pill. Who else had such an ability to concoct a pill that only existed in legends?

"I thought that Elder Greenlotus has already risen to the Immortal World after a hundred years, but now it seems like it wasn't the case. Great Master, I hope that you could tell me the secret about Elder Greenlotus. If he is in some kind of trouble, in this world, only I, Jiang Chen, could help him. There won't be a second person who can do this." Jiang Chen said.

Great Master Ran Feng didn't speak. He was trying to settle his emotions down. With his cultivation, his emotion had been as stable as Mount Tai. His emotion had never been so uncontrollable for so many years.

Great Master Ran Feng only regained his senses after a period of time. His emotions were back to the usual calmness. The way he looked at Jiang Chen now changed from appreciation to respect. The one standing before him was no longer a young junior but a predecessor.

He opened his mouth but no words came out, he had no idea what to call Jiang Chen.

“Great Master, don’t feel restrained. The previous one has already died. I am still the same junior in your eyes, the sworn brother of Tyrant. Just call me like how you did previously. Also, I hope that you can keep this as a secret. Don’t tell Tyrant about it. I don’t want it to affect our brotherhood.” Jiang Chen said.

He must not let Tyrant know his true identity. If Tyrant knew that he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, it would create an awkwardness between them. This was something that Jiang Chen didn’t wish to see.

Initially, he didn’t want to reveal his true identity but as time passed, he had revealed his identity to three people. First, he said it to Nebula Kidd because he was forced to do so under that circumstance. Second, was Big Yellow and third, to Great Master Ran Feng.

Great Master Ran Feng saluted Jiang Chen deeply and said, “If Little Friend can save my master, Ran Feng would be willing to be a horse or an ox.”

“Great Master doesn’t have to be overly polite.” Jiang Chen said, and let the earth devil beast and devil return to the spatial ring.

Great Master Ran Feng was very excited as if he had finally seen hope. He wouldn’t doubt Jiang Chen’s words. If there was a man that could save Ancestor Greenlotus in this world, it would be Jiang Chen.

“Back when my master reached the peak of the Ninth Grade Great Saint, the heavenly tribulation befell him. With my master’s ability, there was no doubt that he could ascend to the Immortal World.”

Great Master Ran Feng seemed to have fallen into his memory and returned to the day before Ancestor Greenlotus’s heavenly tribulation.

“The day before the heavenly tribulation, he told me, ‘Ran Feng, with my cultivation, surviving the heavenly tribulation and ascending to the Immortal World would not be a problem to me at all. However, I have gotten a secret treasure. This secret treasure might bring disaster to me. If I failed in my heavenly tribulation tomorrow, remember that I’m not dead, but someone wanted it to look as such. If I couldn’t return tomorrow, I must have already been imprisoned.’” Great Master Ran Feng repeated what Ancestor Greenlotus said to him.

“And then on the second day, ancestor failed his heavenly tribulation and never came back, right?” Jiang Chen guessed.

“Yes, just as my master expected. He failed the heavenly tribulation, but it must someone’s doing. It was probably because of the secret treasure that my master have. My master never came back, he had never appeared for decades. From an outsider’s point of view, his failure in the heavenly tribulation was similar to your death. All these years, no one has ever mentioned my master’s name.” Great Master Ran Feng smiled bitterly.

“Ancestor has great power of Buddha and can predict the future.

Do you know where he is imprisoned and who imprisoned him?” Jiang Chen asked.

“Little Friend, where do you think in this world could hold my master prisoner? Given my master’s strength, it would be very difficult for most people to hold him hostage.” Great Master Ran Feng gave another bitter smile.

“Saint Origin Palace.”

Jiang Chen said the three words and two cold lights glowed from his eyes.

Chapter 899 - Seeing Han Yan Again

“Yes, although master didn’t say where the place was, across the entire Saint Origin World, the only place where master could be imprisoned was at the Saint Origin Palace. All these years, the Great Lightning Tune Temple has always wanted the my master’s inheritance, but I refused their requests. I have told them my condition, and that is to find my master in Saint Origin Palace. Unfortunately, all of them believed that my master had already died in the heavenly tribulation. Even if they believe that my master didn’t die, the Great Lightning Tune Temple won’t be able to enter the Saint Origin Palace with their current strength.”

Helplessness was plastered on Great Master Ran Feng’s face. After so many years, he still couldn’t forget what his master told him the day before the heavenly tribulation. He knew that his master was definitely not dead and had been imprisoned in the Saint Origin Palace, which was built by the eight families. It would be impossible for the Great Lightning Tune Temple to go in, let alone him.

Therefore, over the years, Great Master Ran Feng had been training Tyrant. He knew that he didn’t have the talent to further his cultivation, let alone the chance to enter the Saint Origin Palace. He had placed all of his hopes on Tyrant. However, although Tyrant was very talented and had a chance to trample the world, the hope was still slim because the eight large families weren’t short of geniuses that was as gifted as Tyrant. The Saint Origin Palace was the most powerful existence in the Saint Origin World. Without absolute strength, there was no chance of getting in contact with Ancestor Greenlotus even if one could enter the palace.

After seeing Jiang Chen, Great Master Ran Feng finally saw a glimmer of hope. That was why he did his best to get along with Jiang Chen. To put it bluntly, they were all selfish acts. What he hadn't thought of was that Jiang Chen was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, a good friend of his master. It was rare to see a person that could still remember his master after so many years.

This time, Great Master Ran Feng finally saw his hope. He knew very well the capability of the world's Greatest Saint. Today, Jiang Chen looked even more terrifying than in his previous life. He was the number one expert across the Saint Origin World. Now that the king has returned, Saint Origin World would once again be overturned.

“Don't worry, Great Master. It won't be long before I enter the Saint Origin Palace. I'm sure I'll get some news about Ancestor Greenlotus.”

Jiang Chen said. Since he had already known the secret of Ancestor Greenlotus and even confirmed his whereabouts, he would certainly go to the Saint Origin Palace to find Ancestor Greenlotus. He wasn't clear about the condition inside the palace, but Peacock King said that the palace was divided into eight forces, just like the Pure Land, and now that he was close to the Demon Race and the Gu Family, he could rely on them the moment he entered the palace.

“Well, the fate of my master will depend on you now, little friend.”

Great Master Ran Feng looked very grateful.

“One matter of concern in my heart was resolved after knowing the news of my old friend. I have more important things that I need to attend to. With regards to my identity, you must remember not to tell Tyrant about it, goodbye.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Great Master Ran Feng and vanished all of a sudden. Looking at where Jiang Chen disappeared, Great Master Ran Feng was petrified for a long time. He looked at the statue of his master. “Master, I hope that you are still safe and sound.”

Jiang Chen left the Western Domain. There were two important things that he had to do. One of them was to go to Nebula Sect and give the dark spirits and devil souls to Han Yan before returning to find Peacock King. Then, together, they would annihilate the stronghold of the Dark Shadow, uprooting this obnoxious organization and threat from the land of Saint Origin World once and for all. The existence of the Dark Shadow had always stifled him like a lump in his throat. This major power wasn't similar to the five large families. They were like phantoms that walked in the shadows and could jump out and send a fatal blow to you at any time sinisterly.

The feeling of being targeted by his enemy at every second was unbearable, and the only way to stop it was to get rid of the root and let them disappear completely from this world.

In the past, Jiang Chen was still weak and couldn't fight them, he also didn't know where the true stronghold of the Dark Shadow is.

Now that he had grown strong and had edified the earth devil beast, he could accurately locate the position of their true stronghold. As such, he didn't have to wait any longer. He was ready to strike the Dark Shadow and destroy them once and for all.

Since the defeat of Nan Bei Chao, Nebula Sect had become increasingly strong. They had ruled over the four large domains and was worthy to be called as the first sect of the Mysterious Domain. Jiang Chen quietly returned to Nebula Sect. He found out that Nangong Wentian was still in seclusion, and felt that he had already broken through the Minor Saint realm. He felt happy for him. He was certain that the Phenomenal Boundless Technique which Nangong Wentian cultivated would become stronger in the future, but if he was compared to Han Yan and Yan Chenyu, the difference would be great. After all, Han Yan and Yan Chenyu had the advantage of possessing innate and unique abilities, they were born with strong physiques which was totally incomparable to ordinary people.

Jiang Chen didn't want to disturb Nangong Wentian. After a short stay, he went to the Dark Devil religion. Han Yan returned to the Dark Devil Religion when the chaos ended. To Han Yan, the cultivation environment in Dark Devil Religion was far better than in Nebula Sect.

Dark Devil Religion was an ally of Nebula Sect. They benefited greatly since the last war. The overall power of the Dark Devil Religion had been greatly enhanced. Comparing them to the other major powers of the other large domains, Dark Devil Religion and Nebula Sect would surely take the lead.

With Jiang Chen's current cultivation, it was too easy for him to enter the Dark Devil Religion. Let's not mention those people who guarded the door, even their master, Wu Yi Mo wouldn't feel a thing even if Jiang Chen walked past him.

The place where Han Yan cultivated was the devil blood pool. It was a thirty meter large pond. On top of the pool, blood-red devil waves lingered, while the pool was filled with boiling bloody water. Han Yan's grey hair moved and fluttered even if there was no wind. Half of his body was submerged in the blood pool. With the incessant activation of the potentials in his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, his cultivation improved by leaps and bounds. The current Han Yan had already reached the Third Grade Minor Saint, which was far stronger than the previous him.

Jiang Chen appeared next to the pool, observing the changes occurring to Han Yan. He couldn't help but nod. Han Yan's improvement was certainly greater than Nangong Wentian's, and along with the constant activation of the potential in his bloodline, he would only get stronger and stronger.

“Who is it?”

Han Yan felt a presence, and immediately opened his eyes and saw Jiang Chen grinning at him.

“Little Chen.”

Han Yan instantly felt ecstatic. He came out of the devil blood pool and appeared beside Jiang Chen. A reunion between brothers

was naturally an unparalleled joy to them.

“Little Chen, you’ve made such rapid progress!”

Han Yan felt speechless, and shook his head when he noticed Jiang Chen’s cultivation. Within this period, he had devoted all of his time just to advance to Third Grade Minor Saint, which was already considered good progress, but he didn’t expect that Jiang Chen was even more terrifying. It seemed like it would be impossible for him to catch up Jiang Chen’s progress.

“Ah Yan, you have been in seclusion this whole time. I suppose you don’t know what’s going on outside.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Something big must have happened again. Tell me quickly. By the way, where’s Big Yellow?”

Han Yan didn’t see Big Yellow with Jiang Chen, arousing his suspicion. One should know that this man and dog duo was always a team that rarely separated.

“Big Yellow had gotten the totem of the Demon Race. He is now the most important figure of the Demon Race.”

Jiang Chen said. He told about everything that had happened to Han Yan during his absence, including the Void Triangular Domain, the grudge between him and the five large families, Big

Yellow's situation in the Demon Race and the situation in the Gu Family.

These incidents were already understated by Jiang Chen, but it still made Han Yan dumbfounded, because each incident was world-shaking, having the ability to shake the entire Pure Land. Han Yan sighed unceasingly. He couldn't imagine that so much had happened in such a short period of time.

“Little Chen, you are too amazing! But the situation is becoming more and more dangerous. The five large families will certainly not let you go.”

Although Han Yan was shocked by Jiang Chen's words, he slowly regained his senses after that. He knew Jiang Chen all too well. Even if he had done something greater than all of those mentioned, it would still be extremely normal to him. Ever since he had known Jiang Chen, there was no place that he passed that had remained calm, and the enemies that he offended keep getting stronger, but no matter how powerful the enemies were, they were all eliminated in the end, becoming mere stepping stones in Jiang Chen's path.

“Don't worry, the struggle in the Pure Land has just begun. I have experienced countless trials on my way here. There are a lot of people who wanted to kill me, but the final outcome has always been the same. Ah Yan, you have to advance as fast as possible. In the future, we will have to face the battles and fight side by side. Big Yellow has already gotten the divine seal of the totem. He is currently a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, I'm afraid that he's going to break through to the Great Saint realm soon.”

Jiang Chen patted Han Yan's shoulder.

“For Heaven's sake, that dog is truly awesome! I am feeling the pressure now, but it won't be easy to hasten my cultivation, due to the fact that the devil blood pool is no longer useful to me.”

Han Yan shook his head in a helpless way. Although he had the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, he didn't have the best cultivation resources. Relying solely on the devil blood pool wouldn't increase his cultivation speed.

“The grade of the devil blood in the pool is too low, it wouldn't work on you anymore, but I have treasures that are suitable for your cultivation.”

Said Jiang Chen, he took out the Second Grade Great Devil Saint soul and passed it to Han Yan.

“This is the devil soul of a Second Grade Great Devil Saint. In addition to that, I also have plenty of dark spirits here. Your Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline will allow you to absorb them completely. Not only will your cultivation improve by leaps and bounds, it can also activate the potentials in your bloodline, bringing you to another height.”

Jiang Chen took out all those dark spirits. He was now an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, and these dark spirits weren't too useful for him anymore, but to Han Yan, they were extremely useful.

Chapter 900 - Lion Yan

Looking at the dark spirits that was taken out by Jiang Chen, Han Yan could feel his blood and veins beating inside his body. That was a kind of excitement. These dark spirits contained the purest dark energy inside, which would benefit Han Yan unimaginably.

The devil soul of the Second Grade Great Saint was even more powerful. It contained a large amount of pure devil Qi, which would not only bring a strong energy impact, but would also greatly stimulate his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, making his bloodline even more powerful.

“This is great! These treasures are what I needed the most. My Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline will be able to completely absorb them, it would certainly help me improve by leaps and bounds.”

Han Yan’s eyes glowed with brilliant light. The devil blood pool had become useless to him, but these valuable treasures that Jiang Chen gave him would not only benefit him, but also the entire Dark Devil Religion.

“Ah Yan, you continue your cultivation in the Dark Devil Religion. I still have one very important thing to do. I will leave for now.”

Jiang Chen patted Han Yan’s shoulder again, then disappeared like a ghost. When he left, there wasn’t a single wave that rippled in the void. It only showed Jiang Chen’s mastery of the spatial force.

Han Yan kept the dark spirits and went into seclusion again. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's progresses had given him a tremendous amount of pressure. He was very clear that although he had the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, it still couldn't be compared to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. If he didn't work hard, the gap between them would only grow bigger.

After settling the matter of Han Yan, Jiang Chen didn't waste any time and quietly returned to the Demon Race. As for those geniuses on the Sky Ranking, he completely didn't put them in his eyes. Shi Han had died, and the only one left was that little monstrous genius from the Desolate Family. He had no idea how powerful the number one genius on the Sky Ranking was, but he was sure that the genius would die if they fought, after all, he had already advanced to Eighth Grade Minor Saint, and was longer a Seventh Grade Minor Saint. If that genius showed up, there is no question that Jaing Chen could instantly kill him.

Currently, there were no movements that could be seen from the five large families, but the situation across the Pure Land had turned chaotic. Everyone was paying attention to that little monstrous genius of the Desolate Family and Jiang Chen. Almost all of them were guessing that it was likely that the little monstrous genius of the Desolate Family would appear soon. Shi Han's death told them that among the younger generations, only the genius of the Desolate Family could deal with Jiang Chen. People were waiting for this battle to come.

It was predicted that if Jiang Chen killed this little monstrous genius, the five large families would go mad. Even if they were still afraid to kill Jiang Chen because of their dignity, the geniuses of

Saint Origin Palace would appear to get rid of Jiang Chen.

Not a single concern fell into Jiang Chen's mind. The little monstrous genius of the Desolate Family hadn't appeared yet, which was good news for him. It would give him a chance to deal with the Dark Shadow. He wanted to use this time to resolve the animosity towards the Dark Shadow, so that he could put away the concern of it when the phantom assassins attacks him again.

Jiang Chen went to the Spiritual Space Mountain. When the disciples saw Jiang Chen, they immediately greeted him with a deep salute. "Prince Jiang."

Currently, Jiang Chen had become a dignitary of the Demon Race. Putting aside the incredible benefits Big Yellow had brought to the entire Demon Race, they couldn't help but admire Jiang Chen, because he was the person who could reach and enter the ninth floor of the Suspended Tower. Anyone who managed to reach that level would be respected by them. The Demon Race had always been respecting the strong ones. Also, Jiang Chen had defeated Leopard Wei, another reason why they respected him.

"En."

Jiang Chen greeted them with a nod and flew directly to the main hall of the Spiritual Space Mountain. He had a good relationship with Peacock King. If he were to deal with the Dark Shadow organization, he was going to need Peacock King's aid.

The higher ups were not in charge of the day-to-day things. Even

if the matter involved the higher-ups, most of the decisions were made by Peacock King, and Lang Xingtian basically wouldn't show his face. As such, Jiang Chen found Peacock King very easily in the main hall.

“Jiang Chen, you are back. How's the matter in Gu Family?” Peacock King asked.

“The matter in Gu Family has been satisfactorily settled. Gu Xuantian's niece and I are engaged, and now we are in line with the people of Gu Family.” Jiang Chen stated.

“Well, Gu Family is willing to befriend you. That indicates that Gu Xuantian isn't a fool. He should have seen the potential in you. I heard that you have killed Shi Han. That is incredible! Your current cultivation base has improved too. After just a few days, you have reached Eighth Grade Minor Saint. Truly amazing.”

Peacock King praised Jiang Chen for his rapid progress. You'll never know when he will make an advancement in grade.

“Peacock King, I actually come to see you today because I have things to discuss.” Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

“Say it.”

Peacock King was a person who didn't like beating around the bush. He was a forthright person.

“I suppose Peacock King has heard about the Dark Shadow before,” said Jiang Chen.

“The assassination organization in Saint Origin World. I don’t have the slightest bit of interest in this group of people. Why are you asking this?” Peacock King asked.

“I have offended this organization and destroyed one of their strongholds, I have also killed all the assassins they sent to assassinate me. Not too long ago, they had sent a Second Grade Great Saint to take me down. These phantoms are like dog’s skin plaster that couldn’t be gotten rid of. You never know when they will drill out of the void and bite you. It’s really annoying. As such, I want to annihilate this assassination organization and uproot all of them from the land of Saint Origin World.” Jiang Chen said with an unparalleled coldness.

“What? They sent a Second Grade Great Saint to kill you?”

Peacock King was slightly astonished. He had only heard about this assassination organization years ago. This was a group of assassins that assassinate others in scary ways that were impossible to guard against, but Jiang Chen was still safe and sound. It meant that the Second Grade Great Saint failed to kill Jiang Chen. This somewhat surprised him, but Jiang Chen had always created miracles. For such a monstrous genius, it had never been possible to judge him with common sense.

“But Jiang Chen, I can understand why you want to eliminate Dark Shadow, but this organization is extremely mysterious. It will be very difficult to find their stronghold, and even if we do find it,

we won't have a clue about the overall strength of the organization. How can we get rid of them?"

Peacock King frowned.

"I know everything about them. Come out, earth devil beast."
Jiang Chen called for the earth devil beast.

He* immediately appeared in the main hall. His entire body exuded ghastly devil Qi. He greeted Jiang Chen respectfully, "Master."

"Second Grade Great Saint."

Peacock King's eyes widened. As an extraordinary powerful demon beast of the Demon Race, he knew better than anyone about the horrors of the earth devil beast. A Second Grade Great Saint earth devil beast was enough to kill an ordinary Third Grade Great Saint, but this earth devil beast just called Jiang Chen his master respectfully. This had become an eye opener for him. He really couldn't imagine how Jiang Chen had done it. For a moment, his admiration for Jiang Chen surged inside him like a torrent of water. One should know that earth devil beasts were cruel and unruly beings. He might be able to kill this earth devil beast but he wouldn't be able to make the earth devil beast submit to him and call him master.

"There is no need for Peacock King to be surprised. The assailants that day was a Second Grade Great Saint elder and a Second Grade earth devil beast. I once cultivated a secret art of Buddha Sect,

which is the natural enemy of the earth devil beast. So, I have used this secret art to subdue it for my own use. Then, I have commanded the earth devil beast to kill the Second Grade Great Saint elder,” said Jiang Chen without hiding a single fact from Peacock King.

Peacock King was dumbfounded. Regardless of what method Jiang Chen had used to do it, his admiration for Jiang Chen began to grow.

“This earth devil beast has a top level position in Dark Shadow Organization. He not only knows where the stronghold of Dark Shadow is located, but also knows the overall strength of the organization. Earth devil beast, tell Peacock King about the Dark Shadow.” Jiang Chen ordered.

“Yes, Master.”

Earth devil beast said. “The stronghold of Dark Shadow is hidden from the map, but I can bring you there. The leader of Dark Shadow is a Fifth Grade Great Saint cultivator. There are two Fourth Grade Great Saint cultivators, three Third Grade Great Saint cultivators and the rest of them are either First Grade or Second Grade Great Saints. Also, there are many Minor Saint assassins.”

“Peacock King, I see that your cultivation base has improved as compared to before. You are only a step away from the fifth grade. It is not certain when you will break through the Fourth Grade and enter the Fifth Grade. Given the noble Peacock Bloodline, even if you are merely a Fourth Grade Minor Saint, it is more than enough

to kill any ordinary Fifth Grade Minor Saints. What do you say? Do you dare to accomplish this big task of annihilating the Dark Shadow with me?” Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Damn! You dare to arouse my emotions? But congratulations, it is useful. Across the whole world, there is nothing which I do not dare to do. Eliminating the Dark Shadow is such a cool and stimulating thing. How can Peacock King refuse it?” Peacock King’s Qi quivered as he accepted Jiang Chen’s invitation.

“Haha! Peacock King is truly forthright!”

Jiang Chen laughed. He knew people like Peacock King too well. Peacock King was a twisted devil of the world. Like what Peacock King said, there is nothing which he didn’t dare to do.

“But at any rate, Dark Shadow isn’t weak. Relying on you, me and this earth devil beast alone won’t be enough. When the time comes, I will certainly be stopped by the leader. There are still two Fourth Grade Great Saints and three Third Grade Great Saints. You won’t be able to handle them given your current cultivation grade. I will call Old Lion to come along with me to complete this great task together,” said Peacock King.

With divine sense, a magnificent figure suddenly appeared in the main hall. This was a golden lion which was in the same race with Golden Fur Lion King. He had the noblest bloodline in the Lion Race and was the patriarch of the Lion Race, he is called Lion Yan. His cultivation grade was on par with Peacock King’s – the peak of Fourth Grade Great Saint.

Table of Contents

[Dragon-Marked War God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 801 - Void Triangular Domain](#)

[Chapter 802 - Dark Generation](#)

[Chapter 803 - Taunting to See Who is Stronger](#)

[Chapter 804 - One Punch to Explode](#)

[Chapter 805 - The Gateway is Open](#)

[Chapter 806 - Dark Mulberry City](#)

[Chapter 807 - The Lascivious Prince](#)

[Chapter 808 - Dark Liuyun](#)

[Chapter 809 - Immune to Poison](#)

[Chapter 810 - Fragrance Dispelling Pavilion](#)

[Chapter 811 - Heartless and Inhuman](#)

[Chapter 812 - Like A Tortoise in A Jar](#)

[Chapter 813 - A Hard Torture](#)

[Chapter 814 - Not Letting Go Anyone](#)

[Chapter 815 - A Bloody Lesson](#)

[Chapter 816 - The Mine of True Meta Stone](#)

[Chapter 817 - Violent Massacre](#)

[Chapter 818 - It's Just the Beginning](#)

[Chapter 819 - The Crisis for the Princes](#)

[Chapter 820 - All the Fortune Was Wanted](#)

[Chapter 821 - Eighth Grade Minor Saint, the Third Prince](#)

[Chapter 822 - Turning the Black Dragon Mountain Blood Red](#)

[Chapter 823 - The True Form of Dark Imperial Bloodline](#)

[Chapter 824 - Not Giving a Chance](#)

[Chapter 825 - The Imperial Hostage](#)

[Chapter 826 - The Fury of Dark King](#)

[Chapter 827 - Another Nan Bei Chao](#)

[Chapter 828 - The Shameful Dog Came](#)

[Chapter 829 - Stolen By the Dog](#)

[Chapter 830 - Shove Off!](#)

[Chapter 831 - I have already eaten](#)

[Chapter 832 - Resolving the Crisis](#)

[Chapter 833 - The Ultimate Plan](#)

[Chapter 834 - The Response of Finger Bone](#)
[Chapter 835 - Desolate Ning](#)
[Chapter 836 - Conflicted](#)
[Chapter 837 - The Relic](#)
[Chapter 838 - Deliberately Provoke You](#)
[Chapter 839 - All of Us Want Some Benefits](#)
[Chapter 840 - Fourth Grade Minor Saint](#)
[Chapter 841 - Kong Yu](#)
[Chapter 842 - A Battle Against Desolate Ning](#)
[Chapter 843 - Heaven Breaking Finger](#)
[Chapter 844 - Exposing The True Identity](#)
[Chapter 845 - Draw the Sword to Kill](#)
[Chapter 846 - A Massacre](#)
[Chapter 847 - Killing God](#)
[Chapter 848 - Disdaining the Group of Experts](#)
[Chapter 849 - Everything Is Under Control](#)
[Chapter 850 - Entering King City](#)
[Chapter 851 - Fifth Grade Minor saint](#)
[Chapter 852 - All Set For A Showdown](#)
[Chapter 853 - Unexpected Surprises](#)
[Chapter 854 - Stealing Away All the Treasures](#)
[Chapter 855 - Stirring Up the Desire to Fight](#)
[Chapter 856 - Wild Slaughtering](#)
[Chapter 857 - One Sword strike to send them to the Underworld](#)
[Chapter 858 - Who couldn't die?](#)
[Chapter 859 - Surrendering Wasn't An Option](#)
[Chapter 860 - Extracting the Ore Mines](#)
[Chapter 861 - Billions of Fortune](#)
[Chapter 862 - Killing Nan Bei Chao Again](#)
[Chapter 863 - Destroying the Spatial Passageway](#)
[Chapter 864 - The Duel on Spiritual Space Mountain](#)
[Chapter 865 - Six Overlords](#)
[Chapter 866 - The Soaring Heroic Aura](#)
[Chapter 867 - A New Chapter for the Young Generation](#)
[Chapter 868 - Saint Origin Palace](#)
[Chapter 869 - The First Battle](#)
[Chapter 870 - Can't Withstand Even a Single Blow](#)
[Chapter 871 - The Opening of the Suspended Tower](#)
[Chapter 872 - Leopard Wei](#)

[Chapter 873 - Layers of Obstacles](#)
[Chapter 874 - Battling Leopard Wei](#)
[Chapter 875 - Victory](#)
[Chapter 876 - On the Seventh Floor](#)
[Chapter 877 - The Eighth Floor, Three Candidates](#)
[Chapter 878 - The Great Luck of the Demon Race](#)
[Chapter 879 - The Descent of the Totem](#)
[Chapter 880 - Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint](#)
[Chapter 881 - The Unforeseen Event of the Demon Race](#)
[Chapter 882 - Shi Han](#)
[Chapter 883 - The Climaxing Battle](#)
[Chapter 884 - Ten Thousands Spears That Can Extinguish the World](#)
[Chapter 885 - A Visit to Propose Marriage](#)
[Chapter 886 - The Super Betrothal Gift](#)
[Chapter 887 - Astounding](#)
[Chapter 888 - What Mistakes Had Gu Lan Made?](#)
[Chapter 889 - Finally Freed After Twelve years](#)
[Chapter 890 - Mother and Daughter Reunited](#)
[Chapter 891 - Lan Ning World](#)
[Chapter 892 - Gu Family Meeting](#)
[Chapter 893 - A Conclusion](#)
[Chapter 894 - Earth Devil Beast](#)
[Chapter 895 - The Miserable Elder](#)
[Chapter 896 - Killing the First Grade Great Saint](#)
[Chapter 897 - The Objective Is Met](#)
[Chapter 898 - The Secret of Ancestor Greenlotus](#)
[Chapter 899 - Seeing Han Yan Again](#)
[Chapter 900 - Lion Yan](#)